



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

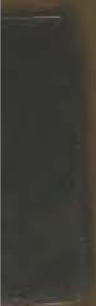
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08246508 3



ETC
P. F. ...



P. J. Hender

BTC

~~1151-A~~

AN
INTRODUCTION
TO THE
HISTORY
OF THE

Principal STATES of EUROPE.

Begun by BARON PUFFENDORF:

Continued by Mr. DE LA MARTINIÈRE.

IMPROVED

By JOSEPH SAYER Serjeant at Law.

Nescire quid antequam natus sis acciderit id est semper esse Puerum.
Cic. de Orat.

In TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

A NEW EDITION revised and corrected.

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. WILDE, A. MILLAR, B. DOD, J. HINTON, J. RIVINGTON,
L. HAWES, W. CLARKE and R. COLLINS, W. JOHNSTON,
T. LONGMAN, and B. LAW. M.DCC.LXIV.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

PHYSICS 350

LECTURE 1

1.1. Kinematics

1.2. Dynamics

1.3. Energy

1.4. Momentum

1.5. Angular momentum

1.6. Oscillations

1.7. Waves

1.8. Relativity

1.9. Quantum mechanics



C O N T E N T S

OF THE

SECOND VOLUME.

C HAP. I. Of <i>Sardinia</i> ,	Page 1
II. Of <i>Genoa</i> ,	17
III. Of the <i>Grand Duchy of Tuscany</i> ,	38
IV. Of the <i>Pope's Dominions</i> ,	48
V. Of the <i>Pope's Spiritual Monarchy</i> ,	72
VI. Of <i>Naples and Sicily</i> ,	120
VII. Of <i>Venice</i> ,	144
VIII. Of <i>Denmark</i> ,	178
IX. Of <i>Sweden</i> ,	197
X. Of <i>Prussia</i> ,	268
XI. Of <i>Poland</i> ,	288
XII. Of the <i>Russian Empire</i> ,	327
XIII. Of <i>Turky</i> ,	351

A N

A N

INTRODUCTION

T O T H E

HISTORY of the principal Kingdoms and
States of *Europe*.

C H A P. I.

Of *SARDINIA*.

IT is the received Opinion that the House of *Savoy* Origin of the is descended from *Witiking* the *Saxon* a cotem-SAVOY Fa-porary Prince with *Charlemain*: But without exam-mily.ining whether this was so or not we shall begin our Account of the *Savoy* Family with *Berauld*, who BERAULD. bought *Savoy* and the Valley of *Maurienne* of *Rodolph* King of *Burgundy*.

Humbert the Son of this Prince surnamed *White Hands* HUMBERT. was for the Services he did to the Emperor *Conrade II.* against *Eude* Count of *Champaigne*, rewarded with the Valley of *Aoust* and the *Chablese*.

Amadeus his eldest Son succeeded about the Year AMADEUS I. 1050; but dying shortly after without Issue *Otton* ano-1050. ther Son of *Humbert's* succeeded.

This Prince by marrying *Adelaide* Daughter of *Ulrick* OTTON. Marquis of *Susa* annexed this Marquifate and Part of *Piedmont* to the Dominions of his House. He died in the Year 1060.

In the Reign of *Amadeus* his Son and Successor the Em- AMADEUS II. peror *Henry VI.* was under a Necessity of passing through 1060. *Savoy*: But in Order to obtain his Consent he was forced to give *Amadeus* some Bishopricks in the *Pais de Bugie*.

VOL. II.

B

Hum-

- HUMBERT**
II. *Humbert* his Son and Successor after adding the *Tarentese* to his Dominions died about the Year 1103, and was succeeded by *Amadeus* his Son.
- AMADEUS**
III. 1103. This Prince slew the Count of *Geneva* with whom he was at War in a single Combat. Having afterwards distinguished himself in two Campaigns in the *Holy Land* he died in the Year 1149 at *Nicosia* in the Island of *Cyprus*.
- HUMBERT**
III. 1149. *Humbert* his Son surnamed the *Saint*, who succeeded next, sided with the Pope against the Emperor *Ferdinand* I. This cost him dear; for the Emperor having taken *Turin* gave it to its own Bishop who had been faithful to his Interest: And it was many Years before the Descendants of *Humbert* could get this important Place into their Hands again.
- TURIN** lost.
- THOMAS** I.
1188. At his Death in the Year 1188 *Thomas* his Son succeeded: Who being warned by the Misfortunes of his Father adhered constantly to the Emperors *Philip* and *Frederick* in their Quarrels with the Popes. By this Conduct he obtained from one of these *Quiers* and *Testona* in *Piedmont*; and he was honoured by the other with the Title of Vicar General of the *Empire* in *Piedmont* and *Lombardy*. He died in the Year 1233.
- AMADEUS**
IV. 1233. By pursuing the same Measures his Son *Amadeus* recommended himself so to the Emperor *Frederick*, that the *Chablese* and *Aoust* were erected into Duchies for him. In his Reign the principality of *Carignan* was bought of the *Piovane* Family by his Brother *Thomas*.
- BONIFACE**
1253. At the death of *Amadeus* in the Year 1253 his Son *Boniface* surnamed *Roland* succeeded: Who after a Series of Misfortunes was carried Prisoner to *Turin* by the Marquis of *Montferrat*, and died miserably there. He left no Children.
- PETER.** *Peter* the next Successor revenged the ill Treatment of *Boniface* his Nephew upon the Marquis of *Montferrat*. He married *Agnes* of *Fossigni* and thereby annexed this Lordship to the Dominions of *Savoy*: And the City of *Bern* that it might avoid the Misfortunes it was likely to suffer by the Quarrels of its Neighbours submitted to him.
- PHILLIP**
1268. Dying without Issue in the Year 1268 *Philip* Archbishop of *Lyons* his Brother succeeded. He quitted the Ecclesiastick State and married *Alice* of *Burgundy*. Leaving

ing no Children his Dominions fell in the Year 1279 to *Amadeus* Son of *Thomas* Prince of *Carignan*. This Prince ought to have succeeded before either *Peter* or *Philip*; who were both Brothers of *Amadeus IV.* and his Father's Younger Brothers.

Amadeus for his marvellous Actions surnamed the AMADEUS V.
Great by marrying *Sibila* Heirefs of *Bresse*, *Bugie* and *Coligni*, became Matter of these three Estates. He also bought 1279.
Revermont of *Robert* Duke of *Burgundy*; and had the County of *Asti* given him by the Emperor *Henry VII.* By his Assistance the Knights of *St. John of Jerusalem* were enabled to prevent the Island of *Rhodes* from falling into the Hands of the *Turks*. For this Service the Grand Master of their Order made him a present of the House at *Lyons*, which these Knights had been in Possession of ever since the Destruction of the *Knights Templars*: And the Glory he gained upon the Occasion gave Rise to the following Motto of his Successors, F. E. R. T. that is FORTITUDO EJUS RHODEM TENUIT; in other Words his Courage saved *Rhodes*.

In this Reign *Turin* was reunited to the Dominions TURIN is reunited to
of *Savoy*. *Amadeus* was so admired for his Wisdom in Arbis Domi-
the Principal Courts of *Europe* as to be usually made nions.
Arbitrator betwixt them. After a happy Reign of 45
Years he died in the Year 1323.

Edward his Son had before his Accession to the EDWARD
Throne distinguished himself at the Battle of *Mont-en-1323.*
puelle. He afterwards followed the Fortune of *Philip*
of *Valois*; and was at the Battle of *Mont-Cassel*. In Re-
ward for the Services done him by the Inhabitants thereof
he restored the City of *Bern* to its ancient State of In-
dependency. He died in the Year 1329 leaving only one
Daughter, who was married to *John* Duke of *Britany*.

Aymon his Brother and Successor, surnamed from his AYMON
great Love of Peace the *Pacifick*, having reigned 14 1328.
Years was succeeded by his Son *Amadeus*.

This Prince was called the *Green Count*, because he AMADEUS VI.
appeared at a Tournament in green Armour with his
Horse caparisoned of the same Colour. He bought the 1343.
Pais de Vaux of *Catherine* Wife of *Afon Visconti*, and
added *Coni* and some other Places to the Dominions of
his House. He forced the King of *Bulgaria* to set *John*

The Order of
ANNUNCI-
ADE institut-
ed, 1355.

AMADEUS
VII. 1383.

Palæologus Emperor of Greece at Liberty; and was successful in his Wars against the Dauphin of *Viennois* and other neighbouring Princes. The Order of *Annunciade* was instituted by him in the Year 1355. As he was going to assist *Lewis* of *Anjou* in an Expedition against *Naples* he died of the Plague near *San Stephano* in the Year 1383.

Amadeus his Son who inherited all his Father's Virtues made himself Master of the County of *Nice*. He was to the great Grief of his People killed in the 7th Year of his Reign by a Fall from his Horse, whilst he was in the pursuit of a Wild Boar.

AMADEUS
VIII. 1391.

His Son and Successor *Amadeus* bought the County of *Geneva* of *Humbert* VIII. for 45,000 Florins of Gold: And hence arose the Claim of the House of *Savoy* to the Sovereignty of *Geneva*. This Prince was in the Year 1401 created Duke of *Savoy* by the Emperor *Sigismund*. In the Year 1434 he resigned the Government to his Son, and retiring into the Priory of *Ripaille*

The Order of
St. MAURICE
instituted.

instituted the Order of *St. Maurice*. Upon the Deposition of Pope *Eugene* IV. by the Council of *Basil* he was raised to the Triple Crown and took the Name of *Felix* V. Having afterwards to prevent a Schism in the Church resigned the Pontificate to *Nicholas* V. who was chosen by another Faction, he was made by him a Cardinal, Dean of the Sacred College and Legate of Part of *Germany*. He died in the Year 1451, having all along supported the Character of a wise and good Prince.

LEWIS 1434.

Lewis, who at his Father's Resignation assumed the Government, took Care to preserve the Reputation which he had by his Bravery before acquired. By his Assistance *Francis Sforza* Son in Law to *Philip Maria Visconti* the late Duke was established in the Possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*, notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Duke of *Orleans* and *Alphonso* V. of *Arragon*, who both claimed this Dutchy. He died at *Lyons* in the Year 1465, whither he went to pay a Visit to *Lewis* XI. of *France* who had married one of his Daughters. *Lewis* the second Son of this Prince married *Charlotte* Heirefs of *Cyprus*, and thence came the Claim of the *Savoy* Family to this Kingdom.

His Son mar-
ries CHAR-
LOTTE of
CYPRUS.

AMADEUS
IX. 1465.

Amadeus the eldest Son and Successor of *Lewis* being wholly devoted to religious Matters every Thing was managed by *Isabella* of *France* his Wife. After an
inglorious

inglorious Reign of Seven Years he died and was succeeded by *Philibert* his Son.

This Prince surnamed the *Hunter* being but Six Years PHILIBERT of Age at his Father's Death, his Country suffered much 1472. by the Disputes of his Mother and *Lewis XI.* her Brother concerning the Regency.

Dying without Issue in the Year 1482 *Charles* his Bro- CHARLES I. ther succeeded. He married the Heiress of the Marquis 1482. of *Saluzzo*; and although there was no Issue of the Marriage the Dukes of *Savoy* have ever since claimed this Marquisate. He died in the Year 1489.

As *Charles-John Amadeus*, who was quite an Infant CHARLES II. at his Father's Death, survived him but seven Years the 1489. Right of succeeding devolved on *Philip* his great Uncle.

This Prince the fifth Son of *Amadeus IX.* surnamed PHILIP II. from having no Inheritance *Sans Terre*, being 58 Years 1496. of Age when the Crown fell to him reigned but one Year. He spent the former Part of his Life in *France*: And being for his Services to *Charles VIII.* in conquering *Naples* made Governor of *Dauphiny* he continued in this Post until his Accession to *Savoy*.

Philibert his Son by *Margaret* Daughter of *Charles* PHILIBERT Duke of *Bourbon* succeeded. This Prince assisted II. 1497. *Lewis XII.* of *France* when he conquered the *Milanesse*: But he afterwards notwithstanding that *Italy* was involved in divers Wars took care to preserve Peace in his own Dominions. Dying in the Year 1504 without Issue his Brother *Charles* Son of *Philip* by a second Wife succeeded him.

This Prince married *Beatrix* of *Portugal* Sister to *Isa-* CHARLES bella Wife of *Charles V.* Being engaged by this Alliance II. 1504. and by some Favours he received from *Charles* to side with him against *Francis* of *France*, the latter in Revenge laid Claim to his Dominions in the Right of his Mother *His Domi-* *Louisa* Daughter by the first Wife to *Philip II.* and made *nions invaded* himself Master of the greatest Part of them. At the by FRANCE. same Time the City of *Bern* seized the *Pais de Vaux*; as did the City of *Geneva* Part of his Country which lay convenient for it. The unhappy *Charles* finding himself thus robbed of his Dominions retired to *Vercell*; where he died in the Year 1553 of Grief.

Emanuel Philibert Son of *Charles* was brought up at EMANUEL the Court of *Charles V.* and distinguished himself in PHILIBERT the 1553.

the Service of this Prince and his Son *Philip*, and especially at the Battle of *St. Quintin* in which he had a great Command. By the Treaty of *Cambray* most of his Dominions were restored to him; but the *French* kept *Turin*, *Pignerol* and some other Places, in order to secure a Satisfaction for the Pretensions of *Louisa* Mother of *Francis* upon the *Savoy* Succession. *Henry III.* of *France* in passing afterwards through *Turin*, in his Way from *Poland* to *Paris*, was prevailed upon by *Emanuel* to give up the Towns kept by *France*. Being induced by the Pope to disturb the *Vaudois* in the Exercise of the Protestant Religion, they after suffering a great deal flew to Arms: And he was at last glad to submit to their reasonable Request of Liberty of Conscience. He died in the 27th Year of his Reign, leaving behind him the Character of a prudent, brave and pious Prince, and of being a great Patron to learned Men.

TURIN and
other Places
restored by
FRANCE.

Persecution
of the
VAUDOIS.

CHARLES
EMANUEL I.
1580.

To him succeeded *Charles Emanuel* his Son, a Prince of great Capacity and Courage but of an unbounded Ambition. He took the Opportunity of the Wars betwixt *Henry III.* and the *Huguenots* to seize the Marquisate of *Saluzzo*: And on this Occasion an insulting Medal was struck with the Effigy of himself on one Side and on the Reverse a Centaur trampling upon a Crown, and underneath the Word *Opportune*, that is *Opportunely*. During the long Continuance of the Civil Wars in *France* he took several Places in *Provence* and *Dauphiny*; but an End being put to those Wars by the Treaty of *Vervins* *Henry IV.* recovered all these and conquered the Dutchy of *Savoy*. In Return for the Affront put upon *France* by *Charles* he also caused a Medal to be struck, having on one Side the Effigy of *Henry* and on the other *Hercules* vanquishing a *Centaur*, with the Word *Opportunus* underneath, that is *more Opportunely*. A Peace being made in the Year 1601 by the Mediation of the Pope at *Lyons*, the Provinces of *Bresse*, *Bugie* and *Gex*, and some Places on the *Rh. ne* were ceded to *France* in Exchange for the Marquisate of *Saluzzo*. This Treaty was vastly advantageous to *France*; yet as the Marquisate of *Saluzzo* served to cover *Turin* from the Insults of the *French* *Charles* had no Reason to be dissatisfied therewith.

SAVOY con-
quered.

Treaty of LY-
ONS, 1601.

He attacks
GENEVA,
1603.

His restless Humour not suffering him to be quiet he attempted in the Year 1603 to take the City of *Geneva* by

Surprize. As the Attack was quite unexpected some of his Troops did scale the Walls without Opposition; but the Burghers being alarmed before they could open any Gate most of them perished in attempting to repass the Walls, and the rest were seized and put to Death immediately. *France* and *Switzerland* interposing he was forced to come to Terms; and to agree amongst other Things that no Fort should be built by him within Four Miles of *Geneva*.

The Death of *Francis III.* Duke of *Mantua* without He attacks Heirs furnished *Charles* with the Pretence for asserting the MONT-Claim of his House to *Montferrat*; but as *Spain* and di-FERRAT. vers *Italian Powers* determined to assist *Don Ferdinand* Brother to the late Duke, he was soon obliged to evacuate some Places he had seized and to give up his Right thereto formally.

In the Year 1621 *Charles* in Concert with *France* attack- He attacks the ed the *Genese*. The Pretence for this was that the *Genese* GENOËSE. had bought of the Emperor the Marquisate of *Zuccarel*, 1621. which the last Possessor had ceded to him before it came into the Emperor's Hands. Whilst *Lesdiguières* Constable of *France* made himself Master of *Gavi*, *Charles* defeated the *Genese* Troops near *Otagio* and took several Places on that Side: And if they had at this Time pushed their Success *Genoa* must have fallen into their Hands; but the Constable being bribed to retard the Operations the *Spaniards* had Time to come to the Assistance of the *Genese*. The *Spanish* Troops did not indeed carry the Town of *Verue* in *Piedmont*: But the *Savoyards* being drawn off to raise the Siege of this Place the *Genese* after recovering what they lost carried the War into *Charles's* own Dominions. By the Treaty of *Monson* made in the next Treaty of Year it was agreed that the *Genese* should pay the Duke MONSON. of *Savoy* 160,000 Crowns, and keep *Zuccarel*. 1622.

Upon the Death of *Vincent II.* Duke of *Mantua* with- He revives out Heirs *Charles* revived his Pretensions to *Montferrat*, his Preten- and refused the *French* who supported the Duke of *Nevers's* Right to this Duchy a Passage through his Do-MONT- minions. It cost him however dear; for the *French* under FERRAT. Cardinal *Richelieu* having opened themselves a Way by taking *Pignerol* laid his Country waste. An *Austrian* Army commanded by *Spinola* did indeed come to his Assistance; but his Country suffered so much by the

committed by both Sides that it broke his Heart. He died in the Year 1630. The many Misfortunes and unhappy End of this Prince shew plainly, that the greatest Talents are of no Advantage where cursed Ambition is the ruling Principle.

VICTOR
AMADEUS.
1630.
Treaty of
CHIARASCO.
1631.

Victor Amadeus his Son immediately upon his Accession set about the accommodating of Matters with his Father's Enemies. By the Treaty of *Chiarasco* concluded a Year after it was agreed, that the Duke of *Savoy* in Consideration of the Sum of 494,000 Crowns should yield up *Montferrat* to the Duke of *Mantua* and his Successors; but that some Places should remain in his Hands till the Money was paid. By another Treaty signed the same Day *Pignerol* was ceded to *France*. As this Prince took upon himself two Years after the Title of King of *Cyprus*, it gave Occasion to a Misunderstanding betwixt him and the Republick of *Venice*.

VICTOR
joins the Mar-
quis of
CREQUI.

The Marquis of *Crequi* being sent in the Year 1635 with a *French* Army to assist the Duke of *Parma* *Victor* joined him. They failed in the Siege of *Valentia*: But the Duke of *Savoy* threw the Blame upon the Marquis and sufficiently recovered his own Reputation next Year at the Battle of *Tournavento*; in which the *Spaniards* who had entred the *French* Entrenchments were by his Bravery repulsed with great Loss. Being appointed in the Year 1637 Generalissimo of the *French* Troops, he obtained a compleat Victory over the *Spaniards* under *Don Martin* of *Arragon* near *Spigno*. He died in the same Year.

Battle of
TOURNA-
VENTO.
1636.
Battle of
SPIGNO.

FRANCIS;
1637.

Savoy did not only lose in him a good and brave Prince; but it was rent in Pieces by the Quarrels, betwixt the Dutchess Dowager and his two Brothers *Maurice* and *Thomas*, for the Guardianship of *Francis Hyacinth* his Son only six Years of Age. She was supported by her Brother *Lewis XIII.* of *France*; they by the Court of *Spain*, with which it was agreed that all Places taken after Resistance should belong to *Spain*.

CHARLES
EMANUEL II.
1638.

By the Death of this Prince on the 4th of *October* 1638 the Succession devolved upon his Brother *Charles Emanuel* three Years younger than himself; but as this Event did not alter the Views of the contending Parties Hostilities were continued. The *Spaniards* had made themselves Masters of *Chivas* and *Trino*; and *Chieri*,
Moncalier,

Moncalier, Pondestum, Asti, Verue, Nice, Villa Franca and some other Towns had submitted to the two Brothers. The Town of *Turin* being in the Year 1639 surprized by TURIN sur- Prince *Thomas* the Dutchess retired with her Son into the pr sed, 1639. Citadel. Whilst the Siege of this was carrying on a Dis-agreement arose betwixt the two Brothers and the *Spanish* General; and as they insisted that this Capital the ordinary Residence of the Royal Family could never be supposed to be included in their Agreement with *Spain* the latter would not assist therein. This gave Count *Harcourt* the *French* General Time to come up; and Prince *Thomas* being blocked up in *Turin* he was after expecting in vain to be relieved by the *Spaniards* forced to surrender. The *French* having in the next Campaign taken *Coni* the two Brothers were glad to come to an Agreement with the Dutchess Dowager; and they afterwards joined with the *French* in driving the *Spaniards* out of *Savoy*.

In the Year 1649 *Charles Emanuel* being arrived CHARLES at the Age of fifteen Years he was declared Major. The declar'd. Ma- War against the *Spaniards*, who kept Possession of several Places in his Dominions, was continued without any remarkable Event till the Treaty of *Pyrenes* in the Year Treaty with 1658. Tranquillity being thereby restored he kept upon SPAIN. good Terms with the neighbouring Powers until the Year 1674: At which Time a Quarrel was spirited up by one named *La Tour* against his Country-men the *Genese*; but by the Interposition of *France* it was soon made up.

Savoy and *Piedmont* were by this Prince adorned A Passage cut with many stately Buildings; but his most considerable through Mount Work was the famous Passage which he caused to be cut VISO. through a Rock on Mount *Viso*. By this, which is an arched Passage high and broad enough for a loaded Mule to go through, the carrying of Merchandize from *Italy* to *France* which was heretofore done by a round about dangerous Way is made easy. His Death in the Year 1675 was owing to a Fright occasioned by the Fall of his only Son from a Horse.

Victor Amadeus being at his Father's Death only VICTOR nine Years of Age the Administration of Affairs came AMADEUS II. into the Hands of *Mary-Jane Baptista* of the House of 1675. *Nemours* his Mother. As soon as he came to a proper Age a Treaty of Marriage was agreed upon betwixt him and

and the *Infanta* of Portugal: But instead of going with the *Portuguese* Fleet sent for him he broke it off abruptly, and about two Years after married *Anne-Mary* youngest Daughter of *Philip* Duke of Orleans.

The Protestants persecuted.

In Imitation of *Lewis XIV.* who had revoked the *Edict* of *Nantz* and forbidden the Exercise of the Protestant Religion in his Dominions, *Victor* set on Foot a cruel Persecution of the *Vaudois* his Protestant Subjects. After a great Expence however of Blood and Treasure, he upon entering into the Grand Alliance in the Year 1690 consented by a separate Article that they should enjoy all their ancient Privileges.

He enters into the Grand Alliance.

Battle of STAFFARDE, 1690.

1691.

1692.

Battle of MARSAILLE, 1693.

Separate Treaty with FRANCE, 1696.

He sides with the Duke of ANJOU, 1701.

1703.

The Supply of Money and Troops received by *Victor* from the Allies did not prevent the *French* General *St. Ruth* from overrunning *Savoy* in the Year 1690; and Marshal *Catinat* after defeating his Army at *Staffarde* took *Carmagnole* and *Susa*. In the next Campaign the Marshal made himself Master of *Nice* and *Villafranca*; but being repulsed by Prince *Eugene* from before *Coni* with great Loss *Carmagnole* was retaken. In the Year 1692 the Duke of *Savoy* penetrated into *Dauphiny* and took *Gap* and *Anbrun*; but quitting these Conquests in *September* without visible Reason the Allies suspected him of having been tampered with by *France*. However this was, his Army was in the following Year entirely ruined by the compleat Victory which *Catinat* obtained over him near *Marsaille*. By a separate Peace made with *France* in the Year 1696 *Nice*, *Susa*, *Villafranca*, *Montmelian* and *Pignerol*, after demolishing its Fortifications, were restored to him; and it was agreed that *Lewis* Duke of *Burgundy* the Dauphin's eldest Son should marry *Mary* his eldest Daughter. He after this Treaty joined with the *French* in besieging *Valencia*; but a Neutrality being agreed upon for *Italy* the Siege was raised and all Hostilities ceased on that Side.

In the War which broke out after the Death of *Charles II.* of *Spain* he sided at first with the Duke of *Anjou*, who had married his second Daughter; and was made *Generalissimo* of the *French* and *Spanish* Troops in *Italy*. Being suspected afterwards of some underhand Dealings with the Court of *Vienna*, his Troops were in the Year 1703 disarmed by the Order of *Lewis XIV.* and his Dominions becoming the Seat of War all *Savoy* with

great Part of *Piedmont* fell in the two next Campaigns into the Hands of the *French*. In the Year 1706 *Turin* Siege of *Tu-*
was besieged and pressed so hard, that had not Prince RIN, 1706.
Eugene come by forced Marches to its Relief it must have
 surrendered to the Duke of *Orleans*; who succeeded to
 the Command in *Italy* in the room of the Duke of *Ven-*
dofme. The *French*, being attacked by Prince *Eugene* in
 their Trenches they were after a Resistance of two
 Hours forced to abandon these; and leave their Ar-
 tillery and Baggage behind them. Their precipitate Re-
 treat, together with the Loss they sustained about the
 same Time at the Battle of *Ramilies*, made the Re-
 covery of most of his Dominions easy to the Duke of
Savoy. In the next Year being assisted by Prince *Eu-*
gene he made an Irruption into *Provence* and attacked *Attempt upon*
Toulon. The Allied Fleet at the same Time blocked it TOULON,
 up by Sea; but after throwing some Bombs into the 1707.
 Town, and losing a great Number of Men, amongst
 whom was the Marquis of *Sales*, he retreated into his
 own Dominions. Nothing remarkable happened after-
 wards on the Side of *Savoy* during this War.

By the Treaty of *Utrecht* in the Year 1713 the Coun- Treaty of
 ty of *Nice* and all in *Savoy* which was in the Pos- UTRECHT,
 session of the *French* were restored to the Duke of *Savoy*; 1713.
 and his Most Christian Majesty ceded to him the Valley
 of *Pragelas*, the Forts of *Exiles* and *Fenestrelles*, and
 the Valleys of *Oux Sezane*, *Bardnache* and *Chateau-*
Dauphin. The Duke on his Side ceded the Valley of
Barcelonetta to *France*. By these Cessions the Tops of the
Alps became the Boundaries betwixt these two Powers.
 The Kingdom of *Sicily* was also ceded to *Victor* by the
 King of *Spain*: and as it had been the principal View
 of the Allies in this War to prevent *France* and *Spain*
 from being united under the same Sovereign, it was
 stipulated that on Failure of Descendants from *Philip V.*
 the House of *Savoy* should succeed to the *Spanish*
 Crown. He was moreover confirmed in the Possession
 of what the Emperor *Leopold* had by a Treaty ceded to
 him; namely that Part of *Montferrat* which formerly be-
 longed to the Dutchy of *Mantua*, the Provinces of *Valen-*
cia and *Alexandria*, all the Country betwixt the *Po* and the
Tanare, *Lomeline*, the Valley of *Sessia* and *Vigevano*.

As

He takes
Possession of
SICILY.

As *Charles* Archduke of *Austria*, who after the Death of his Brother *Joseph* became Emperor, did not either by the Treaty of *Radstadt* or that of *Baden* give up his Pretensions to the *Spanish* Succession, he insisted that the Allies had no Power to dispose of *Sicily* which belonged thereto. This Island was however evacuated by the *Austrians*, and the Duke of *Savoy* took Possession of it. The Inhabitants, at first quite averse to the being detached from the Monarchy of *Spain*, were by Degrees so well reconciled to their new King that they voluntarily made him a Present of 100,000 Crowns; but the Peace of the Island was soon disturbed by the Clergy's Demands of Immunities. Hereupon the Bishop of *Catania* one of the most factious was ordered by the Magistrates to quit the Kingdom. Having at his going away put his own Diocese under an Interdict he made the best of his Way to *Rome*; and the whole Kingdom of *Sicily* was afterwards excommunicated by the Pope. As all Ecclesiasticks were forbid by the Council of State, on pain of Death and Confiscation of Estate, to pay any Regard to this Excommunication great numbers of them left the Kingdom and went to *Rome*.

Quarrel with
the Clergy.

SICILY in-
vaded by the
SPANIARDS.

While this Quarrel lasted a *Spanish* Fleet made a Descent upon the Island, and conquered the greatest Part thereof. This Invasion of *Sicily* by the *Spaniards*, who had but a little before taken *Sardinia* from the Emperor, alarmed some Powers and gave Rise to the Treaty of *Quadruple Alliance* concluded at *London*; by which it was agreed that the Emperor should have *Sicily* and cede his Right to *Sardinia* to the Duke of *Savoy*. This last did not like the Exchange; but as the *Spaniards* were in Possession of all *Sicily* except *Messina* he consented to it.

He becomes
King of
SARDINIA,

1718.

He reforms the
Laws.

The two Islands were by the Assistance of a *British* Fleet taken from the *Spaniards*; and *Sardinia* with the Title of King has ever since belonged to the House of *Savoy*. *Victor* now set about reforming the Laws; and he was so much in Earnest that in the Year 1723 they were all reduced into a single Volume containing about 644 Leaves. By this Code, which began to be observed immediately, the Dispensation of Justice was to his great Glory made more expeditious and less expensive to his Subjects. As the Princess of *Pied-*

mont

mont died in the same Year in Child-bed of a Prince, who The Prince of was honoured with the Title of Duke of *Aouft*, it was PIEDMONT thought of great Consequence that the Prince should marries a se- marry again. *Polyxena* of *Hesse Rhinfeis* being the Per- cond line. son pitched upon for his second Wife he was married to her in the Year 1724. The Death of the Duke of *Aouft*, which happened soon after, in whom all the Hopes of this illustrious Family were centered, shewed sufficiently the Propriety of this Precaution.

The Friendship of *Victor*, esteemed the best Politician Prudent Con- of the Time, being on the account of his Strength and Si- duct of VIC- tuation of great Consequence it was courted by all the TOR. Powers of *Europe*: But he took Care to keep upon good Terms with all his Neighbours without engaging too closely with any one of them; and applied himself diligently to the introducing of *Œconomy* and a regard for Religion in his Court. These Virtues, as will always be the Case when an Example is set by the Great, by Degrees spread themselves, and both Prince and People became happy as well as rich. In *September* 1730, having assembled the Bishops and the Principal Officers of State, he declared his Resolution of abdicating the Crown in He abdicates Favour of the Prince of *Piedmont*; and that he intended the Crown, to marry the Countess Dowager of *St. Sabastian*, and 1730. live privately in *Chamberry* upon a Pension of 50,000 Livres. After taking Leave in the most affectionate Manner he quitted his Crown and Capital to *Charles Emanuel* his Son; but the Repose he promised himself was disturbed by a Misunderstanding which soon arose betwixt him and *Charles*. He died at *Montcalier* in *October* 1732 aged sixty-six Years.

The Complaints of the Court of *Turin* at the Court CHARLES of *Vienna*, which had been made for some Time before EMANUEL the Accession of this Prince, for not fulfilling its Engage- III. 1730. ments became every Day more and more serious; and the keeping back of some Records, looked upon by the King of *Sardinia* as essentially necessary to make his Title good to the Part of *Montferrat* ceded to him, rendered the Sincerity of the Emperor in this Cession suspected. It having been besides insisted upon by the Emperor's Minister at *Turin* that divers of the Territories ceded to *Victor* were Fiefs of the Dutchy of *Milan*, a Negotiation was set on Foot for adjusting these Matters, and

and great Pains were taken by the Earl of *Essex* Ambassador from *Great-Britain* to his *Sardinian* Majesty that it might be effectual: But the Court of *Vienna* held out with its usual Obstinacy.

He joins in a
War against
the Emperor.

As *Charles* looked upon this Treatment to be very injurious he upon the breaking out of the War on account of the *Polish* Election came the more easily into the Views of *France*, and a Treaty of Alliance Offensive and Defensive betwixt *France*, *Spain* and *Sardinia*, was signed in *September 1733*. In a Manifesto soon after published he declared, that he entered into this War for the Sake of reducing the exorbitant Power of the House of *Austria* and doing himself Justice. The *French* General *Villars* being joined in the Year 1734 by his *Sardinian* Majesty they soon made themselves Master of the *Milanese*; and marching into the Territories of *Modena* they seized some Magazines prepared by its Duke, who fled on their Approach to *Bologna*, for the *Austrians*.

The MILA-
NESE conquer
ed, 1734.

After this Success the King returned to his Capital where some Business of Importance demanded his Presence; which being dispatched he rejoined the Army: But he was again called Home by the Queen's Illness, and could not get back to the Army till the 30th of *June* the Day after the Battle of *Parma*. Count *Merci* being killed in this Battle, wherein the Loss was great on both Sides, Prince *Lewis* of *Wirttemberg* took the Command of the *Imperial* Army until the Arrival of Count *Koningsegg*. This last having somewhat retrieved the Affairs of the *Austrians* he upon the 15th of *September* at break of Day beat up Marshal *Broglio's* Quarters, and was very near taking him Prisoner. His Baggage and some Prisoners fell into the Enemy's Hands.

Battle of
PARMA.

On the 19th a general Action ensued near *Guastalla*; in which the King of *Sardinia* who commanded gave signal Proofs of Bravery and Prudence. The *Imperialists* resisted with the greatest Obstinacy for some time; but they were in the End forced to give Way.

Battle of
GUASTALLA.

The Death of the Queen in *January 1735* obliged the King to leave the Army again: But after indulging his Grief a decent Time he returned thereto. Count *Koningsegg* having since the bloody Battle of *Guastalla* lost all Hopes of recovering any Thing for the Emperor, he was now wholly intent upon saving the

1735.
The IMPERI-
ALISTS retire
before the AL-
LIES.

Mantuan:

Mantuan: But as the Duke of *Montemar* had after conquering the two *Sicilies* joined the *French* and *Sardinians*, the *Imperialists* were forced to retire before the *Allies* to fast that scarce any Thing was left in the *Mantuan* but the *Capital*; and this being blocked up by the *Spaniards* could not have held out long.

Several Plans of Peace, and amongst the rest one concerted by the Courts of *Vienna* and *London* and presented of *VIENNA*. by the *States General*, having been rejected a Negotiation was secretly entered into by *France* at *Vienna*; and the Preliminaries of *Vienna* being signed in *October* *France* took upon herself to answer for the Accession of her *Allies* thereto. By these the King of *Sardinia* was to have the Choice of two of the three Provinces of *Tortona*, *Novara* and *Vigevano*. As he preferred the two former his Imperial Majesty by an Act dated the Sixth of *July* 1736 gave up all his Right to those Provinces: And by an Act dated the next Day he ceded the Territory of *Languedoc*, to specify which particular Care had been taken in the Preliminaries. On the 16th of *August* *Charles* by an Act signed at *Turin* acceded to the Preliminaries.

Not long after a Proposal of Marriage was made by *He marries Charles* to the Princess *Elizabeth Theresa* Sister to *again*, 1737. the new Grand Duke of *Tuscany*: And the Prince of *Carignan* espoused her as his Proxy in *March* 1737. On the 6th of the next Month the King met her at *Chamberry*; and they made their publick Entry into *Turin* upon the 22d. She died in *July* 1741.

The Dominions of his *Sardinian* Majesty comprehend *The* *Domi-* the Island of *Sardinia*, the *Dutchy* of *Savoy*, the *Princi-* nions and *Com-* munity of *Piedmont*, *Oneglia* and its Dependencies, the *mod.ties* of his *County* of *Nice* and the *Dutchy* of *Montferrat*. *Savoy* *SARDINIAN* is mountainous; but the Vallies thereof, which are ex- *Majesty*. ceedingly fruitful, abound with Wine, all Sorts of Grain, Hemp and Flax. *Chamberry* is its Capital; and the Place where its Parliament meets. No Countries are more fruitful than *Piedmont* and *Montferrat* in Wine, Rice, Corn and Silk: And the *Po* which waters these most delightful Countries might be made very serviceable to Trade, if the Inhabitants were more industrious and less addicted to Pleasure. *Turin* the Capital of *Piedmont*, which is the ordinary Residence of the King, is well fortified and defended by one of the best Castles in

in *Europe*. Although the King of *Sardinia* is neither so powerful nor so rich as some of the neighbouring States: Yet as the *Alps*, the Passes of which are in his Hands, are the Boundaries thereof his Dominions are well secured against Invasions.

His Interest
with Regard
to the Houses
of BOUR-
BON and
AUSTRIA.

The Territories of this Prince, which are almost surrounded by those of the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*, are in great Danger of being insulted in the Case of a Rupture between these two Houses; for which Reason, as it is scarce possible for him to be Neuter in such a Case, it seems his wisest Way to join if it can safely be done with the weaker, that the Balance of Power may be preserved betwixt them.

SWISSER-
LAND.

The *Swiss* Cantons will not be fond of quarrelling with the King of *Sardinia*, nor is it for his Interest to differ with them; because they may be vrey serviceable Allies to him on many Occasions.

GENEVA.

As *Geneva* is no Match for the King of *Sardinia* he is in no Danger from thence. On the other Hand it would be a fruitless Attempt in him to attack *Geneva*, since neither *France* nor *Switzerland* would willingly see this *Republick* conquered by him.

GENOA.

His Situation with regard to the *Republick* of *Genoa* makes it for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

The POPE.

He has nothing to fear from the Pope; but as a superstitious Regard for the latter prevails in *Italy* it would be imprudent in the King of *Sardinia* to break with him.

VENICE.

The assuming of the Title of King of *Cyprus* by the House of *Savoy* has given great Disgust to the *Republick* of *Venice*. It is however of great Consequence both to *Venice* and to the Liberties of *Italy*, that his *Sardinian* Majesty be not deprived of any Part of his Dominions either by the House of *Bourbon* or that of *Austria*.

EMPIRE.

Being a Member of the Germanick Body the King of *Sardinia* is under the same Obligations to the Head of this Body as the other Members are.

The MARI-
TIME POW-
ERS.

It is vastly for his Interest to be in Amity with the *Maritime Powers*; for their Fleets and especially that of *Great Britain* could greatly annoy him. Besides as he is indebted to them for *Sardinia*, which will be always remembered to have been a Part of the *Spanish* Monarchy, so their Assistance may be sometime or other absolutely necessary to his keeping thereof.

CHAP.

C H A P. II.

O f G E N O A.

IN the Time of the second *Punic* War the City of *Ancient State* *Genoa* was destroyed by *Magon* Brother of the cele-^{of GENOA.}brated *Hannibal*. It was rebuilt soon after by *Spurius Lucretius*, and continued from this Time under Subjection to the *Romans*. On the Declension of the western Empire it came into the Hands of the *Goths*; who were afterwards drove from it by *Narſes*, and it made Part of the Kingdom of *Lombardy*. This last change coſt the *Genoeſe* dear; for *Rotbaris* King of the *Lombards* after ſacking it destroyed the City of *Genoa*; but it was again rebuilt by *Charlemain*, and being annexed to the Empire of the *Franks* was governed by a Count.

Audemar the first Count, who was a Relation of *Char-* *It is governed* *lemain's*, being an expert Warrior he defeated the *Saracens* by *COUNTS*. in a naval Engagement, and took from them *Corſica*.

When the *Saracens* invaded *Italy* about the Year 931 *It is taken by* they took *Genoa* after a vigorous Reſiſtance; and *the SARA-* having put the Men to the Sword moſt of the Women *CENS.* and Children were carried into *Africa*.

Genoa by Degrees recovered itſelf; and the *Genoeſe* *It becomes a* by applying themſelves to Navigation grew ſo power-*Republick,* ful as to kick againſt their Counts. About the Year 1096 *1096.* they threw off their Authority entirely, and were afterwards governed by a Council composed of the principal People. Under this form of Government the naval Force of the *Genoeſe* encreaſed ſo much, that in the beginning of the eleventh Century they ſent a powerful Fleet to the Aſſiſtance of *Baldwin* King of *Jeruſalem*; which had a conſiderable Share in recovering *Cæſarea* and *Tripoli* from the Infidels. At the taking of the former a *Genoeſe* named *William Embriaco*, who firſt ſcaled the Walls, had for his Share of the Plunder the famous Emerald Diſh at this Day to be ſeen in *Genoa*; which is reported to be the very ſame that the Paſchal Lamb was at the laſt Supper ſerved up in.

War with the PISANS, 1125. In the Year 1125 a War was kindled betwixt the *Genoese* and *Pisans*, because these last laid Claim to Part of *Corfica*: But after a Series of Losses, the *Pisans*, their Capital being besieged both by Sea and Land, were reduced to the Necessity of submitting to an ignominious Treaty; by which amongst other Things they agreed that no House in *Pisa* should be built above one Story high. In the Year 1144 Pope *Lucius II.* discharged the *Genoese* of the Tribute annually paid to the See of *Rome* for *Corfica*.

The GENOESE submit to the Emperor. The Emperor *Frederick I.* after conquering the *Milanesse* obliged both the *Genoese* and *Pisans* to take an Oath of Allegiance to him; and demolished the Fortifications which the former were building round their Town.

War with the PISANS, 1175. The *Pisans* as soon as they had recovered themselves broke the Treaty with the *Genoese*: And endeavoured about the Year 1175 to drive them from *Corfica*. The War was hereupon recommenced; but the Emperor interposing he ordered that it should be shared betwixt them as it had for a long Time been. Instead of Consuls annually chosen to preside over the Council, which was the Method observed on forming themselves into a Republick, the *Genoese* did now place at the head of the Council an Officer called a *Podestate*; yet to say the Truth the form of Government was often changed, for sometimes *Consuls* at other Times a *Podestate* presided in the Council.

Another War with the PISANS, 1195. In the Year 1195 the *Pisans* renewed their Claim to the whole of *Corfica*, and a bloody War of seven Years Continuance ensued: In which both States suffered so much that they were glad to clap up a Truce. During this War the Marquis of *Gavi* sold his Right to this Marquisate to the Republick for 400,000 Livres.

The GENOESE side with the Pope. As it was impossible for the *Genoese* to be neuter in the Quarrel betwixt the Emperor *Frederick II.* and Pope *Gregory IX.* they sided with the latter. The War which ensued was in the Beginning fatal to them; for the Emperor made himself Master of *Savona*, and *Henry King* of *Sardinia* his natural Son defeated their Fleet with great Loss: But by their Steadiness they got the better of these Misfortunes, and contributed much to the Ruin of the Emperor's Affairs in *Italy*.

After the Death of *Frederick* some neighbouring States The PISAN Fleet is ruined, took great Pains to put an End to the Differences which 1256. had so long subsisted betwixt the *Genoese* and *Pisans*. The principal Matter in Dispute was which State should have *Lerica* and *Trebiano*. This being left to the *Florentines* to decide, they adjudged both of them to the former; nevertheless, for the latter would not acquiesce, the War was renewed with great Vigour. Hereupon the *Florentines* and the *Lucquese* assisted the *Genoese*; and the *Pisan* Fleet being entirely ruined in the Year 1256 *Lerica* fell into their Hands.

In the next Year the *Pod state* was deposed: And all BOCCANE- Authority, heretofore in the Council, was lodged GRA is made in the Hands of *William Boccanegra* with the Title of *Captain*.

As the *Venetians*, *Genoese* and *Pisans*, had been principally concerned in the taking of *Ptolemais* from the In- War with VENICE. fidels it was divided amongst them; and to prevent Jealousies the Church of *St. Saba*, much the most commodious in the Town, was to be enjoyed in common. The *Genoese* not content with this insinuated themselves into Count *Montfort* the Governor's Favour; and with the Assistance of some Soldiers kept the others out of the Church. News of this being received at *Venice* a Fleet was sent out under the Command of *Laurentio Tiepolo*; who having first defeated their Fleet made the best of his Way for *Ptolemais* and sacked the *Genoese* Quarter. A Truce was by the Pope's Mediation clapped up; but it did not last long, for the *Genoese* about the Year 1255 assisted *Michael Paleologas* in driving *Baldwin* from *Constantinople*. As the *Venetians* sided with the latter Hostilities were recommenced; but the *Genoese* being defeated in two Engagements at Sea the Truce was renewed. In the mean Time the Captain *Boccanegra* had BOCCANE- been deposed; and the Government was again got into is deposed. the Hands of a Council.

In the Year 1280 another War broke out with the War with the PISANS, *Venetians*; with whom the *Pisans* had allied them- 1280. selves. The *Genoese* however found Means to make up Matters with the former, and turned their whole Strength against the latter: Their two Fleets met in the Year 1278 and a bloody Action ensued; in which the *Genoese* sunk

The PISANS receive a total Overthrow. sunk seven Vessels and took twenty-eight. In this Battle 5000 Pisans were killed or lost, and about 11,000 of them being made Prisoners it was said in Raillery, *That there were more Pisans at Genoa than at Pisa itself.* This total Overthrow was followed with the Loss of the Island of *Elba* and *Lepbora*: And the Pisans, who could not afterwards look the *Genoese* in the Face, for the sake of Peace quitted all Claim to *Corfica*; paid a large Sum for defraying the Expence of this War; and agreed not to send an armed Vessel to Sea for the space of fifteen Years.

War with VENICE.

Hostilities with *Venice* having been some Time before the Conclusion of the Treaty with *Pisa* renewed, the *Venician* Fleet was defeated with the loss of fourscore and five Vessels and seven thousand Men. Their Admiral fell into the Hands of the *Genoese*: But he robbed them of the Pleasure of leading him in Triumph by dashing his Brains out against his Prison Wall. By the Mediation of *Padua* the two Republicks were reconciled.

UGOTIN made Governor.

The Contests, which had upon the first Division of *Italy* into *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* distracted the Republick, being again renewed the Family of *Spinola* a Favourer of the latter was banished: But the Emperor *Henry VII.* soon after made himself Master of *Genoa* and appointed *Ugotin* Governor thereof.

The Sovereignty is conferred on the King of NAPLES, 1313.

The *Guelphs*, who afterwards got the Upper-hand, transferred the Sovereignty of *Genoa* in the Year 1313 to *Robert King of Naples.* It continued to be dependent upon *Naples* till the Year 1329, when the Party of the *Gibelines* being prevalent *Simon Boccanegra* was chosen Doge of *Genoa*: But by excluding the Nobility from the Government and oppressing the *Guelphs* he soon became so odious to the People, that they deposed him and took the Government into their own Hands.

The GENCESE submit to the Duke of MILAN.

After this the Government was sometimes Aristocratical at other Times Democratical; but the People who suffered a great deal from this unsettled state of Things at last submitted to the Duke of *Milan.*

War with VENICE, 1351. 1352.

Another War breaking out betwixt *Genoa* and *Venice* the Fleet of the former was in the Year 1351 defeated off *Negropont.* The *Genoese* lost their Admiral and 4000 Men; but his Successor *Doria* took ample Revenge upon the

the combined Fleet of *Venice* and *Arragon* in the following Year. In the Year 1353 the Chance of War turned again in Favour of the *Venetians*, who their Enemy being worsted took thirty Gallies and near 5000 Men Prisoners: But this Success was dearly paid for, the *Venetian* Fleet being in the next Year entirely destroyed. Five thousand Men were killed in the Action; and *Pisani* who commanded with as many more were made Prisoners. Upon the whole this War was so ruinous that both States being tired of it readily consented to a Peace. About the same Time *Calo-John* Emperor of *Greece* in Reward for their Services gave the *Genoese* the Acquisition of Island of *Lesbos*. LESBOS.

1353.

1354.

In the Year 1360 the *Genoese* being weary of their They Subjection to *Milan* expelled the Governor set over ESE recover them and chose themselves a Doge. In order however their Independency, to divert the Resentment naturally to be expected they agreed to pay the Duke of *Milan* an annual Tribute of 4000 Ducats, and to keep up 400 Men for his Service.

A Dispute which arose betwixt the Ambassadors of *Genoa* and *Venice*, concerning Precedence at the Coronation of a King of *Cyprus*, being determined in favour of the *Venetian*, the *Genoese* resolved to do himself Justice by force of Arms: But the *Venetian* Minister having discovered the Design informed the Court of *Cyprus* thereof, and the *Genoese* Minister with all his Attendants were put to Death. The *Genoese* no sooner heard this than a Fleet was fitted out; which after taking *Nicosia* and *Famagosta* obliged the King of *Cyprus* to comply with their own Terms. These were that he should put himself under the Protection of the *Genoese*; reimburse them their Expences upon the Occasion; and pay them an annual Tribute.

War with
CYPRUS.

Calo-John Emperor of *Greece* having given *Tenedos* to the *Venetians*, the *Genoese* their natural rivals, who were chagrined at their Acquisition of so fine an Inland, endeavoured to take it from them. The War which ensued cost both the *Genoese* and *Venetians* so very dear, that it might have been justly said of them as it was heretofore of the rival States of *Carthage* and *Rome*, that the Conquerors themselves did but just escape Ruin. The Fleet of *Venice* having been destroyed and several Islands having been taken this Republick was

War with
VENICE.

Treaty with
VENICE,
1379.

brought into the utmost Danger: But being made desperate by the haughty Carriage of *Doria* the *Genoese* Admiral, who would listen to no Terms, the *Venetians* exerted themselves in such a Manner that in the End the *Genoese* were almost as great Sufferers as themselves. By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1379 the Conquests were on both Sides given up; and the *Venetians* were left in Possession of *Tenedra*.

The GENO-
ESE submit to
FRANCE.

After this the Republick was so miserably divided by the Factions of the *Adorni* and *Fregosja* Families, each of which being powerful wanted the sole Management of Affairs, that the Body of the People in the Year 1396 chose rather to submit to *Charles VI.* of *France* than bear the Inconveniencies of their Intrigues any longer. The Terms were, that the Doge to be chosen by the People should be approved of by *Charles* and take an Oath of Allegiance to him; that a Governor of *Genoa* should be appointed by *Charles*; and that the Republick should pay him annually 4000 Florins. In Return *Charles* was to assist the *Genoese* upon all Occasions.

They revolt
and submit to
MONTFER-
RAT, 1408.

As the prudent Conduct of the Marquis of *Boucicaut*, who was appointed Governor, did not although he acquired for them *Leghorn* make the *Genoese* easy, they in the Year 1408 whilst he was at War with the Duke of *Milan* massacred all the *French*: And put themselves under the Marquis of *Montferrat's* Protection. In Revenge *Porto Venero*, *Lerica* and *Sarzanello*, which the *French* were in Possession of, were ceded by the King of *France* to the *Florentines*. The *Genoese* being still dissatisfied, the Marquis of *Montferrat* about four Years after for the sum of 26,000 Ducats quitted all Pretensions to Dominion over them; and prevailed on the *Florentines* to restore the above-named Places.

They purchase
their Independ-
ency.

Upon the Revival of the *Guelph* and *Gibeline* Factions the publick Treasury was so exhausted by intestine Jars, that *Corfica* being attacked by *Alphonso* of *Aragon* the *Genoese* were forced to sell *Leghorn*. This Prince had made himself Master of *Calvi* and was before *St. Boniface*; but being repulsed from thence with Loss he returned home.

They submit to
MILAN, 1442.

Finding that their Independency served only to make them a Prey to some Families, the *Genoese* in the Year 1442 submitted to the Duke of *Milan* on the same Terms they

they had before done to *France*: But this new Master, who well knew their Inconstancy, determined to make the best use he could for himself of their Submission. He would not suffer them to fortify *Borda*, *Pieva* or some other Places; and upon a Quarrel of his own plunged the *Genoese* into a War with *Venice*. Being provoked at these Things and more especially at the Duke's Conduct in a War with the King of *Arragon*, who being made Prisoner by their Fleet was carried to *Milan* and not a Shilling of his Ransom came into their Coffers, the *Genoese* in the Year 1456 threw of all Allegiance to him.

They had however scarce regained their Independency *They submit* when the Contests betwixt the *Fregosa* and *Adorni* Fa- *again to* milies again threw Things into Confusion: And finding *FRANCE.* their Independency and Tranquillity incompatible they within two Years submitted again to *France*. They afterwards put themselves under the Dominion of *John Duke of Anjou*: But they revolted from *Rene* his Son and cut the Throats of 2500 *French*. *Lewis XI.* of *France* transferred his Pretensions to *Genoa* and *Savona* to *Francis Sforca* Duke of *Milan*, upon Condition however that they should be both held as Fiefs of the *French* Crown.

Sforca soon made himself Master of *Genoa* and the *They recover* People were tolerably easy under his Government: *their Liberty,* But his Son *Galeace* being unsuccessful against *Mahomet II.* who took all the Places belonging to the *Genoese* in the *Black Sea*, they in the Year 1475 revolted from *Milan*. 1475.

They soon after came to a Rupture with the *Floren-* *War with the* *tines* and took from them *Pietra-santa*, *Sarzana* and *Sarza-* *FLOREN-* *nello*: But an Accommodation being brought about the *TINES.* former was restored, upon Condition that the *Florentines* should renounce all Claim to the two latter. *Sarzana*, which was soon after seized by the *Florentines*, came again in the Year 1496 by the Treachery of its Governor into the Hands of the *Genoese*.

In the Year 1498 the Republick again submitted to *Genoa subd.cd* *Milan*; but *Lewis Sforca* being in the next Year de- *FRANCE,* prived of the Dutchy of *Milan* by *Lewis XII.* *Genoa* 1498. came by this Means again under the Dominion of *France*. Eight Years after there was an Insurrection amongst the Populace, who after cutting the *French* Garrison to Pieces chose

chose *Paul Novi* a Silk-Dyer for their Doge. *Lewis* marched against the *Genoese* with a powerful Army; and having defeated the Troops gathered together to oppose him they soon submitted. The new Doge together with his principal Accomplices were beheaded: And their ancient Priviledges being abolished *Lewis* the better to keep the *Genoese* under Subjection reserved to himself the Nomination of a Governour; the Disposal of all Fines and Confiscations for Treason or other Crimes; and the Presentation to all Benefices. He ordered also that the Coin should bear his Arms in conjunction with those of *Genoa*; and that the *Genoese* Gallies should carry *French* Colours

FRANCIS
FREGOSA is
chosen Doge,
1514.

Notwithstanding all this they in the Year 1514 drove out the *French* Garrison: And *Fregosa* who was chosen Doge found Ways to reconcile himself to *Francis I.* *Fregosa* was hereupon was confirmed in his new Dignity, and declared Administrator of the Dominions of *Genoa* for the *French* Crown to which he swore Allegiance; and he also gave up a strong Place as a Security for his Obedience.

GENOA taken
by the SPA-
NIARDS.

In the Year 1521 the *Spanish* General *Prospero Colonna* sat down before *Genoa*, which being unable to hold out proposed a Capitulation: But before the Articles of this were settled the *Spaniards* took the Advantage of the Negligence of the Inhabitants to seize and pillage the City; and *Fregosa* with some others were made Prisoners. *Genoa* was retaken by *Andrea Doria* a *Genoese* in the *French* Service; and would it is probable have continued faithful to the *French* Crown, had it not been for the ill Conduct of *Francis I.* He endeavoured to enlarge the Commerce of *Savona* and established Magazines for Salt there; which as it must have been prejudicial to *Genoa* disgusted *Doria* and all good Patriots. He besides broke his Promise with *Doria* in obliging him to restore the Prisoners taken in an Engagement off *Naples*. As the King contrary to the Advice of his true Friends was obstinate as to these Points *Doria* went over with his Gallies to the *Imperialists*; and in the Year 1527 had the Command in an Attack upon *Genoa*.

Its Independen-
cy is restored,
1527.

Doria had no more than 500 regular Troops on board his Fleet; yet as the *French* Admiral fled before him he soon

soon became Master of the Port. The *French Marshal Trivulco* Governour of the City held out for some Time in the Castle; but Provisions failing he was forced to surrender. Although the Sovereignty was now offered to *Doria* he declined it; choosing as every honest Man ought rather to be the DELIVERER than the Master of his Country. By a new Regulation the Nobility were reduced to twenty-eight Families; and the Distinction of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* which had caused so many Disorders was entirely laid aside. As *Savona* soon after submitted to them the *Genoese* demolished the Fortifications of this Town and destroyed the Port. They afterwards made themselves Masters of *Ovada*, *Novi* and *Gavi*; and have ever since preserved their Independency.

About the Year 1547 a dangerous Conspiracy was set on foot by *John Lewis* Count of *Levagno*, who could not bear to see the great Power of the House of *Doria*: And his Measures were conducted so Secretly that he was Master of the Gallies before the *Dorias* suspected any thing. One of the *Dorias* named *Janetin* hearing a Noise, which he imagined to be only a Quarrel amongst some Sailors, came out of his House and was killed, and *John Lewis* was upon the Brink of triumphing over them; but passing in the Dark from one Gally to another he fell into the Sea and the Weight of his Arms sunk him immediately. Thus the *Dorias* were delivered from an implacable Rival; and the State got rid of a turbulent Citizen, whom nothing less than the Sovereign Power would ever have satisfied.

The Emperor *Charles V.* took Occasion from hence of advising *Doria* to build a Citadel for his Security; but this brave Man answered, that his Life was not of Consequence enough to warrant the doing of any Thing for its Preservation which might endanger the Liberty of his Country. *Charles* afterwards in order to engage the *Genoese* in his Interest borrowed of them a large Sum of Money, and as a Security therefore mortgaged to them some Estates and Revenues in *Naples*; which the Money having never been repaid are to this Day enjoyed by the *Genoese* under the Mortgage. As the *Genoese* sided with the Emperor in his War with *Henry II.* the latter caused a Descent to be made upon *Corsica*.

Corfica. The Attempts made to drive the *French* from thence did not succeed; all however which the *Genoese* lost of this Island was restored by the Treaty of *Chateau Cambresis* in the Year 1559.

The GENOESE As *Final* which belonged to the *Carretto* Family lay
seize FINAL, very convenient for them the *Genoese* about the Year
1563. 1563 seized it. Complaint being hereupon made by this

Family to the Emperor he ordered them to restore it. This was refused at first: Notwithstanding however all the Arts used they were in the End forced to do it. Whilst this was upon the Tapis new Troubles arose in *Corfica*; but *San Pietro Bastelica* a *Genoese* the Contriver of these, who had been for some Time in the Service of *France*, being defeated they were soon appeased.

Divisions a-
mongst the
Nobility,
1573.

Since *Doria's* Regulation concerning the Nobility twentyfour Families had been added thereto: Which being held in great Contempt by the others, who engrossed all the considerable Offices, it came in the Year 1573 to a downright Quarrel. By the Mediation however of the *Pope*, the Emperor and *Spain*, this was made up; and it was agreed, that all Marks of Distinction being laid aside the new Nobility should be equally with the old capable of all Offices.

War with Sa-
voy, 1621.

In the Year 1621 the Tranquillity which had been long enjoyed by the Republick was disturbed on the following Account. The Marquis of *Zuccarel* having been deprived of his Marquisate by the Imperial Chamber for Rebellion, it was sold to the *Genoese*; but their Right was protested against by the Duke of *Savoy*, who pretended that this Marquisate was granted to him before the Deprivation of its late Master: And by a Treaty entered into with *France* it was agreed to conquer and divide the Dominions of the *Genoese*. All as far as *Savona* was by this Agreement to belong to *France*; and the Marquisate of *Zuccarel* with the rest of the *Genoese* Dominions were to be annexed to *Savoy*. Their joint Forces soon became Masters of *Ottagio*, *Albenga*, *Nevi*, *Vinimiglia*, *Gavi* and other Places; and the Republick must in all Probability have been quite ruined, had not Ways been found to gain over the Constable *Lesdiguiers* who commanded the *French* Troops. By his delaying the Operations of the Campaign the Governour of *Milan* had

had Time to come to the Assistance of the *Genoese*; so that they not only recovered all they had lost, but after taking *Oneglia* and some other Places from him the Duke of *Savoy* was glad to consent to a Truce.

A *Genoese* named *Vacher* of low Birth, yet so rich that VACHER; Plot. the Nobility could not vye with him in Magnificence, became on this Account the Butt of their Envy; and they determined to affront him so as to keep him for the future out of their Company. In an Assembly at *St. Cyr* many rude Things were said to him; and his Wife was reflected upon in a most scandalous Manner. *Vacher* complained to the Magistrates: Which not being attended to he grew desperate and a Plot was laid for destroying all the Nobility. Measures were for this purpose concerted with the Duke of *Savoy*: but the Plot when quite ripe for Execution was discovered; and *Vacher* with three of his Accomplices being seized they were, notwithstanding the Intercession of *Spain* and the Duke of *Savoy* who took the whole upon himself, all beheaded. The latter threatened to serve four *Genoese* Chiefs his Prisoners in the same Manner: but his Wrath was assuaged; and by a Peace concluded in the Year 1622 at *Monson* it was agreed, that all Prisoners and Treaty of MONSON, 1622. Places taken should be mutually given up; and that the *Genoese* who were to pay the Duke 160,000 Crowns should keep *Zuccarel*.

Hostilities were recommenced in the Year 1672 by *War with* the Duke of *Savoy* against *Genoa* at the Instigation of *la SAVOY, 1672.* *Tour* a *Genoese* Exile. As this Attack was quite unexpected he easily became Master of *Pieva* and some other Places; but these were soon recovered, and his Army under the Marquis of *Catalan* was worsted near *Vecchio*. Battle of VECCHIO. After some other inconsiderable Actions a Treaty was concluded under the Mediation of *France*; by which the Conquests made on both Sides were to be restored.

The Republick having in the Year 1684 entered into Bombardment of GENOË, 1684. an Alliance with *Spain*, and built four Gallies for the Service of this Crown, *Lewis XIV.* then in the Meridian of his Power expostulated with them about it. Receiving from them a scornful Answer the Marquis of *Segnelai* came with a Fleet before *Genoa*: And after good Part of it was by Bombarding laid in Ashes, the *French* presuming

presuming upon the Strength of a Party in the Town landed: But this Party being unable to support them they were repulsed and lost the Chevalier *Leri* one of their best Sea Officers. The *Genoese* being however unable to cope with *France* they submitted to *Lewis's* own Terms. These were that the Count of *Lavagno* should have Satisfaction for what had been taken from his ancestor *John Lewis*, and as it would take some Time to settle the Account a hundred thousand Crowns were to be immediately paid to him; and that the Doge with four of the principal Senators should go and ask Pardon of *Lewis* at *Paris*.

GENOESE
Ships seized.

Notwithstanding the strict Neutrality observed by the Republick in the War on Account of the *Spanish* Succession, some Vessels of the *Genoese* were seized in coming out of *Cadix* by *English* Ships and carried into *Portmahon*. It being suspected that their Lading which was very rich belonged to *French* Merchants these were declared good Prizes; but upon Representations to the Court of *London* they were restored in the Year 1711, and Satisfaction was made for so much of their Cargo as had been disposed of.

Acquisition of
FINAL, 1713.

After the Treaty of *Utrecht* the Republick was put into the Possession of *Final*, which she had bought of the Emperor; and the Duke of *Savoy* having withdrawn his Troops three hundred *Corsicans* entered thereinto.

Insurrection
in CORSIKA,
1729.

In the Year 1729 the *Corsicans* flew to Arms, in order to free themselves from the insupportable Burthen of Taxes and other Grievances which they had long groaned under, and having taken *Aleria* by Storm, the Garrison of which they put to the Sword, they marched towards *Bastia*. The Bishop of *Aleria* had there a Conference with *Pompiliari* the Chief of the Malecontents; and upon his promising to write to *Genoa* concerning their Demands a Truce for three Weeks was agreed upon. The Governor of *Bastia* would fain have drawn *Pompiliari* into the Town, to adjust as he pretended some Matters; but the latter suspecting some Mischief sent his Lieutenant, who being immediately put to Death all Hopes of an Accommodation were at an End.

VENEROSO
sent thither.

The Senate hereupon sent *Veneroso*, whose mild Government had formerly recommended him to the *Corsicans*,

cani, as the most proper Person to put a Stop to this Insurrection: Who in an Interview with *Pompiliari* exhorted him to give over his rash Enterprize. Being treated by the latter with Contempt he set a Time for the *Corficans* to lay down their Arms, and promised that their Grievances should be redressed; but he declared that after the Expiration of the prefixed Time no Mercy should be shewn to any found in Arms. As no Regard was paid thereto he acquainted the Senate that nothing but rigorous Methods would do; and soon after returned to *Genoa* accompanied by *Pinelli* the present Governour whose Time was expired.

It was hoped that the Departure of *Pinelli* would have FRANCIS satisfied the *Corfican* a little; but as the Taxes were not GROPELO is lessened every thing grew worse and worse under his Successor *Francis Gropelo*. As the Conduct of the Chiefs of the Malecontents, who maintained good Discipline among their Followers, seemed quite disinterested, and pretended to be animated by *publick Spirit* only, was infinitely preferable to the rapacious and oppressive Behaviour of the *Genese* Magistrates, their Party encreased so that the *Genese* Party not daring to keep the Field shut themselves up in *Bastia*, *Ajazzo* and *Calvi*. The Malecontents divided themselves into three Bodies, one of which consisted of at least 8000 Men; and they were well supplied with Ammunition by foreign Vessels. The Difficulties which had delayed the Investiture of *Don Carlos* being got over, the Senate of *Genoa* begged of the Emperor to assist them with 4000 Men of the Army he had assembled in the *Milaneze* to oppose the Introduction of this Prince. Hereupon the Malecontents, who dreaded more the Emperor's Displeasure than this Number of Men, endeavoured to convince him of the Justness of their Demands: Which were a Redress of Grievances and Liberty to erect an Academy and make Salt upon the Island; but he would hear nothing thereof. As many Ships under *French* Colours continued to carry Ammunition to the Malecontents some of these were visited by the Gallies of the Republick: But this was complained of by the *French* Consul.

The Siege of *Bastia* was given over upon the Arrival of *Some Imperial* the Emperor's Troops; yet the Malecontents often sent *Troops sent* upon Parties of these Troops, and after striking their *thither*.

Stroke

Stroke retired behind the Mountains. The *Germans* being by this Sort of War greatly diminished a reinforcement of 2000 Men was sent under Prince *Lewis* of *Wirttemberg*. The Malecontents, who had chosen *Don Lewis de Giasseri* for their Governour, once more offered to lay down their Arms upon Condition that they were established in their ancient Priviledges: General *Wachtendonck*, to whom Prince *Lewis* succeeded in commanding the Imperial Troops, had all along acted with great Moderation, being sensible that the Complaints were in some Measure well grounded; but the *Genoese* were so puffed up with the Arrival of the new Succours, that nothing less than an absolute Submission to their Pleasure would satisfy. Hostilities being hereupon commenced seriously the *Germans* gained some Advantages: But these cost them dear; and not long after a Difference arising betwixt the *Genoese* Officers and Prince *Lewis* Overtures of Peace were made. Hostages being now given on both Sides that these should be a general Amnesty, the Plenipotentiaries met and a Treaty was concluded; of which the Emperor took upon himself the Guaranty. One of the principal Things agreed upon was the Establishment of an Imperial Chamber of Appeal at *Bastia* under the Direction of the Emperor. The Treaty was scarce signed before the Marquis *Raffaelli*, Secretary to the *Corfican* Chiefs, not thinking it safe to trust to the Amnesty disappeared.

Treaty with
the Malecon-
tents.

Four CORSI-
CAN Chiefs
seized, 1732.

This gave the *Genoese* a Pretence for saying, that the Papers he carried with him would have been sufficient to prove a Correspondence between some People of Consequence in *Genoa* and his Masters; and by Order of the Senate *Lewis Giasseri* and *Jerome Ciaccaldi* the two Plenipotentiaries of the Malecontents, together with *Simon Astelli* and *Simon Raffaelli* Brother to the Marquis, were arrested and carried to *Genoa*. The *German* Officers protested against this Step, and declared that it would not only be disagreeable to their Master but would certainly create new Troubles. In a letter to General *Wachtendonck* dated July 26, 1732 the Malecontents told him, that if the four Chiefs were not set at liberty within a Month they knew how to revenge themselves upon a Republick: Who by this Infraction of

of the Treaty plainly shewed herself unworthy to be Mistress of *Corfica*.

The Senate endeavoured to justify their Conduct; but as the Emperor whose Honour was concerned insisted upon it the four Chiefs were set at Liberty in April 1733. and many new Regulations concerning *Corfica* were made. Some of these were, that the *Corficans* in common with the other Subjects of the Republick should be admitted to all Ecclesiastical and Civil Preferments; that the Post of Warden in the Ports of *Bastia* and *Ajazzo* should be filled up with *Corficans* only; that the *Corficans* should have an Advocate-General at *Genoa* to take Care of their Interest in the Senate; and that the Nobility of *Corfica* should for the Time to come be upon an equal Footing with the Nobility of the Republick in general. The Emperor moreover promised, that whilst the *Corficans* paid due Obedience to their Masters they should be better used than formerly; and that if contrary to all Expectation any Thing should be done, either by the Republick or its Governours, in Violation of this Agreement he would see Justice done them. An Act importing thus much being published all over the Island it was evacuated by the *Imperialists* in June.

Matters are accommodated with the **CORSICANS,** 1733.

In the beginning of the next Year a new Insurrection broke out, which was occasioned by the imprudent Severity of the *Genoese* Commissary; and the Malecontents made such Progress that the Senate proposed an Accommodation before the Year was expired. Instead of listening to this the Malecontents offered the Sovereignty of the Island to *Spain* and to some other Powers. As no Power would accept thereof they determined to form themselves into a *Republick*.

A new Insurrection in **CORSICA,** 1734.

Pinelli under whose Government the Troubles first began was now sent into *Corfica*; but his Son being taken Prisoner he consented to an Armistice; which being looked upon as sacrificing the Interest of the *Genoese* to the obtaining of his Son's Liberty he was recalled, and the Chevalier *Riverole* was appointed to succeed him. The Malecontents now offered to lay down their Arms on the following Conditions, that the Republick should have nothing to do in the Island but receive the Taxes and determine in military and criminal Affairs; that all civil

PINELLI sent thither.

Matters

Matters should be decided in a Senate to be established at *Bastia* composed of Natives only; and that the Number of Troops to be kept in *Corsica* by the Republick together with the Places they were to be quartered in should be ascertained.

RIVAROLE
sent thither
1736.

These being refused by the Senate new Levies were made, and the new Commissary *Rivarole* arrived at *Bastia* in *February* 1736. During the Rejoicings of the Inhabitants, which lasted three Days on the Account of his Arrival, *Giafferi* endeavoured to surprize this Town; but he failed therein. The Bishop of *Aleria* who had published an Excommunication against all that opposed the Republick was forced to fly for Safety to *Genoa*. His Palace was in Revenge burnt to the Ground by *Giafferi*: And *Aleria* with some other Places fell into his Hands. As the Malecontents were well supplied, it gave Occasion to a Suspicion of their being privately encouraged by divers Powers, and particularly by *Spain*; but these Supplies were really negotiated by their Agents at *Leghorn* and other Ports, nor were they without Friends even in *Genoa* itself. *Orticone* a Monk, whom they principally confided in at *Leghorn*, by Accident became acquainted with the Baron *de Newhoff* of a German Family, who after running all over *Europe* was come there. Being of an enterprizing and ambitious Temper, and not only a Man of Sense but one who had seen a good deal of Action, the Monk who understood Mankind well thought him a fit Person to preside over the Malecontents; whose Chiefs frequently disagreed. Hereupon the Baron went to *Tunis*; and after obtaining, by Representations to the Inhabitants of this Place that an Alliance with the *Corsicans* would lay the Foundation of an advantageous Trade, ten Pieces of Cannon, Arms for 4000 Men, and a large Sum of Money, he was conveyed by a *British* Man of War to *Aleria*.

THEODORE
becomes King
of CORSICA,
1736.

Upon his Arrival there he took upon himself the Title of Lord *Theodore*; planted two Pieces of Cannon before the Palace he lodged in; was attended by a Guard of 400 Men; and gave it out that he expected very powerful Succours. The Malecontents flocked in to him; for he was looked upon as a Person sent by Heaven to be their Deliverer. On the fifteenth of *April* 1736

He was after swearing to a Capitulation of eighteen Articles proclaimed King at the Head of the Army; and a Crown of Laurel being set upon his Head the Malecontents swore Allegiance to him. In a Manifesto published by the Republick the Poverty of *Theodore* and every Action of his Life that could have a Tendency to render him contemptible; were mentioned: But one was published by him in answer, in which the *Genoese* were treated with great Freedom, and all Persons were ordered to repair to his Standard on Pain of Death and Confiscation of their Goods. The Inhabitants of *Bastia*, which *Theodore* had blocked up, were pressed in the strongest Terms to throw off the Yoke of the *Genoese*; and he ordered their Commissary *Rivarole* to leave the Island within fourteen Days. Several of his principal Courtiers were created Counts and Marquisses, and an Order of Knighthood was instituted which he called *the Order of Deliverance*. He permitted the Inhabitants to make Salt, which the *Genoese* never would permit them to do; and by indulging Liberty of Conscience he hoped to bring some *Greek* and *Jewish* Merchants to settle there. In short only *Bastia*, *San Fiorenzo*, *Calvi*, *San Bonifacio* and two other Fortresses remained to the Republick on the whole Island, and these were so closely blocked up that they were forced to have Provisions, Wood and Water, from *Genoa*: but still the Succours he talked of did not arrive. In *November* *Theodore* assembled the Chiefs; and having declared his Intention of going in Person to hasten their coming appointed with their Approbation a Regency during his Absence. On the 14th of the same Month he set out in the Habit of an Abbot for *Leghorn* and soon after disappeared. *The Genoese* now began to talk big in their Manifestos; but these were answered by the Malecontents who persisted in their Attachment to their new King, and they moreover declared that his Absence did not prevent their gaining Ground upon their Enemies. In the next Year a Price was set on *Theodore's* Head, who went as it appeared afterwards from *Leghorn* to *Turin*, from thence to *Paris*, and from thence into *Holland*. He was discovered there in the Disguise of a *Jew* and taken into Custody: But he found Means to obtain his

He disappears.

Liberty and laid the Foundation of a Company to trade in his Kingdom.

A Body of
FRENCH
Troops sent
into CORSICA,
1738.

The French Court being applied to by the Republick Count *Bossieux* was sent in the Year 1738 into *Corsica* with 3000 Men. Upon his Arrival at *Bastia* he in a Conference with the *Corsican* Chiefs told them his Master was determined to restore Tranquillity to the *Island*, and desired to have a List of their Grievances: Which being given in a Treaty was soon concluded by the French General and the *Corsican* Plenipotentiaries *Giafferi* and *Orticone*. Just before the signing of this, which was negotiated with the utmost Secrefy, the Baron de *Drost* Nephew of *Theodore* arrived in *Corsica*; but at the Request of Count *Bossieux* he withdrew immediately.

THEODORE
comes again
into COR-
SICA.

In September *Theodore* himself landed with Arms and Ammunition; but as the Malecontents were prevented, by the Hostages they had sent into *France*, and by the Threats of the French General that if they stirred in his Favour it would draw upon them the Resentment of his Court, from joining him his Measures were all broke. He went afterwards to *Naples*; but the Government did not think proper to shelter him there.

Terms offered
by FRANCE.

Count *Bossieux* having obtained from the Malecontents a Declaration that they submitted their Lives and Fortunes to the Disposition of his most Christian Majesty, and that *Theodore* was not in the *Island*, he put into their Hands an Act signed by Prince *Lichtenstein* on the Part of the Emperor, and by Mr. *Amelot* on that of the French King. The Substance of it was that there should be a general Amnesty; that all the Malecontents should lay down their Arms within a Time mentioned on pain of Death; that the Imposts and Taxes which had not been paid during the Rebellion should never be demanded by the Republick; that the Commissary-General in *Corsica* should not as had been the Practice send any Man to the Gallies on a bare Information, but that every Man should have a fair Trial before any Punishment was inflicted upon him; that the supreme Court of the *Island*, whose three Judges were to be neither *Genoese* nor *Corsicans*, should determine finally in all Causes where the Value in Dispute did not exceed five hundred Livres; that several Colleges should be erected in the

the Island for the Education of Youth; that the Natives should have the Preference of being promoted to vacant Bishopricks and other Benefices in the Island; that for five successive Years four *Corfican* Families should be annually ennobled and enjoy all the Privileges of the Nobility; and that the Senate should not for the time to come have the Power to pardon a Murderer. Fifteen Days being granted for them to consider of these Terms the Province of *Balagna* submitted; but when he attempted to disarm the Inhabitants of the *Pieves* some Resistance was made. They were hereupon declared Rebels and threatned with Fire and Sword; and Hostilities were again commenced on both Sides. In the beginning of the Year 1739 Count *Bessieux* died at *Bastia*.

His Successor Marshal *Mallebois* reduced the Male-Marshal contents all over the *Island* to the Necessity of submitting MALLEBOIS to what had been settled by the *French Court*: But such entirely reduces is their Aversion to the *Genoese*, that it is scarce possible the Male- they will submit to their Dominion any longer than they contents. are kept in Awe by a Body of foreign Troops. This being well known to the *Republick* she seems disposed, if it could be done advantageously, to get rid of an Island which cannot be kept without a vast Expence; and it is confidently said that some Measures have been already taken for this Purpose; but these are not yet made publick.

The Dominions of the Republick of *Genoa* upon the Of the Repub- Continent reach a great way along the Coast, but they lick's Domi- are very narrow. Those which are generally moun- nions. tainous produce very little Corn: But they abound with Silk, Oil and Fruit. *Corfica* besides being fruitful in Corn and Wine has great Plenty of Oxen, Sheep, Goats, Game and Fish of all sorts. This Island has some Iron Mines; it is well situated for making Salt, and notwithstanding its many large Woods is free from Wolves; but there are in it Foxes of a much larger and more voracious kind than common.

All the Vices of all the *Italians* are so remarkably pos- Manners of sessed by the *Genoese* as to give Rise to the following the GENOESE Observation: That *Genoa* has Mountains without Wood, a and CORSI- Sea without Fish, Men without Integrity, and Women without CANS.

Mastery. They are a subtle People and understand Trade well; but they are fickle in their Tempers and prone to Sedition. The *Corficans* are in general very ignorant and indolent. Hence it is that notwithstanding their Island is naturally fruitful Robberies are so frequent amongst them. They are accused of being implacable when once provoked; and being much given to Superstition they still retain some *Pagan* Customs.

Government of the Republick. The Government of the Republick is quite Aristocratical; for the Power of the Doge which is very trifling lasts only two Years, at the End of which Time he quits the Palace of the Republick to his Successor. The Supreme Power is lodged in the *Great Council* which is composed of the Nobility, and consists in the whole of about four hundred Members; and to prevent Intrigues which may be prejudicial to the Liberties of the Republick no Person can be elected Doge a second time, until his Dogeship has been expired twelve Years.

Its Revenue and Trade.

The Revenue of the Republick is not very considerable, and the chief Part thereof is appropriated to the Knights of the Order of *St. George*; yet as the Nobility and Merchants are immensely rich a large Sum can be borrowed upon any publick Emergency at a low Interest. The Smallness of her Territories is sufficiently made amends for by the extensive Trade of the Republick; and her Bank is esteemed so safe and advantageous that all the rich Families in the neighbouring States crowd their Money into it. Besides the Advantage which hereby accrues to the Republick this is a great Security to her; for as many Families in most of the *Italian* States would be ruined by the Failure of her Bank they are of Course interested in the Preservation of the Republick.

Interest thereof with Regard to the House of
AUSTRIA.

As the House of *Austria* is in Possession of the *Milanese*, and *Tuscany* by the Marriage of its Duke to the Heiress of this House may be considered as annexed to the Dominions thereof, it greatly concerns the Republick to be on good Terms with the House of *Austria* since she may be greatly annoyed from either of these States.

SPAIN.

It is for her Interest to prevent any further Extension of the Power of *Spain* in *Italy*; for as the Balance of Power in this Country would be thereby lost the Republick could not long be safe.

The

The King of *Sardinia* a near and powerful Neigh-^{SARDINIA.}bour has long sought for an Opportunity to assert the Pretensions of his House to the Marquisate of *Zuccarel*, and to some other Parts of the Territories of the Republick: For which Reason the *Genoese* ought constantly to be upon their Guard against him.

As *France* is in Possession of the two Ports of *Mar-*^{FRANCE.}*saillen* and *Toulon*, which are so convenient for attacking the *Genoese*, they ought if possible to avoid a Quarrel with her; yet they should be very cautious of temporising too long with this Court, lest the Ballance of Power betwixt the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon* should be quite destroyed in *Italy*.

The Reasons for the Republick's being upon good ^{The POPE.}Terms with the Pope are stronger than those for some other *Italian* States to be so; because she is by her Form of Government more exposed to the Intrigues of the Court of *Rome*.

The ancient Animosity and Jealousy betwixt this Re-^{VENICE.}publick and her Sister of *Venice*, who still insists upon the Superiority, still continue; it is however for their mutual Interest to support each other and to preserve the Liberties of *Italy*.

The Possessions obtained first by way of Mortgage^{NAPLES.} from *Charles V.* which some of the principal *Genoese* Families have in *Naples*, will always make the Republick careful how it breaks with the King of the *Two Sicilies*.

Although the two Maritime Powers are at a Distance; ^{The MARI-}yet as the Trade of the Republick would be liable to great^{TIME} Obstructions and her Coast to be insulted in case of a^{POWERS.} Rupture with either of them, it is of great Importance for her to cultivate a good Understanding with them both.

As the Northern Powers carry on but little Trade in ^{The NORTH-}the *Mediterranean* and are at a great Distance, it is not^{ERN POWERS.} likely that any Quarrel should arise betwixt either of these and the *Genoese*.

C H A P. III.

Of the Grand Dutchy of TUSCANY.

*Ancient State
of FLO-
RENCE,*

FLORENCE anciently subject to the *German* Empire shared the unhappy Fate of all the *Italian* States in being rent in Pieces by the Factions of *G. elphs* and *Gibelines*; but passing over this together with some Wars it was concerned in, we shall at once come to shew how this City and some other Territories, which compose what is now called the Grand Dutchy of *Tuscany*, became subject to the House of *Medicis*.

**COSMO DE
MEDICIS Lord
of FLORENCE**
1419.

About the Year 1419 *Cosmo de Medicis* Lord of *Flordrence*, whose Family had been long powerful, by his Generosity won the Hearts of the People. It being however suspected that his Popularity would endanger the Liberties of the City a strong Party was formed against him; and as soon as the Term of his Governing expired he was by the Intrigues of *Renaud Albizi* and some other Families thrown into Prison.

*He is banished
but soon recal-
led.*

Their Intention was to put him to death; but as he found Ways to bring *Bernaud Guadagni* his Successor as Lord of *Florence* over to his Interest, they contented themselves with banishing him. Within a Year the Citizens growing weary of the Management of his Enemies recalled *Cosmo*; who being received with all possible Demonstrations of Joy was called Father of the People and Deliverer of his Country. The Families of *Albizi*, *Penezzi*, *Strozzi*, and some others who had been most violent against him were hereupon banished: And he to his Death in the Year 1464 enjoyed the supreme Power without Disturbance. He was however so tender of using his Power as never to engage in any Thing of Importance without consulting the other Magistrates. He adorned the City with many stately Building at his own Expence; and was very charitable to all that were in Necessity. By these Acts of Liberality and his steady Adherence

Adherence to the publick Good he so endeared himself to his Fellow-Citizens, that the Republick caused a handsome Inscription in which he was called FATHER OF HIS COUNTRY to be engraved upon his Tomb.

Although *Peter* his Son was quite infirm and inherited PETER, 1464. none of his Father's Virtues, the People in regard to *Cosmo's* Memory continued him in the Direction of Affairs: And the Families of *Acciaivoli* and *Soderini* were banished for their Opposition to him. He died in the Year 1742 leaving two Sons *Laurentio* his Successor and *Julian*.

A Conspiracy headed by the *Pozzi* and *Salviati* Families was soon formed against these Princes, and Pope *Sextus* LAURENTIO, 1472. IV. secretly encouraged it. This Pontiff, besides being disgusted with *Laurentio* for assisting *Nicholas Vitelli* whom he had a Mind to oppress, wanted to put one of his own Nephews into Possession of *Fiorence*; which he knew could never be done without ruining the House of *Medicis*.

The two Brothers being set upon whilst they were at Mass of a Sunday *Julian* was killed upon the Spot, and JULIAN is assassinated. the other being much wounded with great Difficulty made his Escape. Many of the Conspirators were put to Death; and the Archbishop of *Pisa* who at the Pope's *Instigation* had been very active was hanged in his Pontifical Habit.

The Pope who was mortified at the baulking of his The POPE and NAPLES Design, and enraged at the Insult done to the Church by hanging the Archbishop in his Habit, immediately unite against LAURENTIO. excommunicated the *Florentines*; and prevailed upon *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* to join in a War against them. In a Manifesto published it was declared that these Powers had no Quarrel with the Republick, and that they desired nothing more than to have *Laurentio* banished; which being unanimously refused Hostilities were commenced. After a Series of ill Success *Laurentio* having lost all Hopes of recovering his Affairs went in Person to *Naples* to deprecate the King's Anger; and to the Surprise of every Body obtained an honourable Peace with the Restitution of all the *Neapolitans* had conquered. The Pope coming soon after to Terms the *Florentines* recovered *Serezana* from the *Genoese*, who had also entered into the Alliance against them, and by a Peace shortly after made *Pittra Santa* was restored to them.

LAURENTIO
*etc. w. ages
 Arts and Sci-
 ences.*

Laurentio spent the rest of his Days in Peace and took great Pains to maintain the Tranquillity of *Italy*; but at the same Time he did not neglect to put his Frontier Towns into a Posture of Defence. Being a great Lover of Arts and Sciences he collected a large Library of Books, and sent *John Lascaris* twice to *Constantinople* on purpose to pick up *Greek* Manuscripts. He was poisoned by the Direction of his Son as it was supposed in the Year 1492, to the great Regret of his Subjects and of all learned Men.

PETER II,
 1492.

Peter his Successor, instead of being as his Predecessors had been content with the Authority without a Title, for the Sake of procuring the Name of Sovereign of *Florence* entered into an Alliance with the King of *Naples* against *Francis Sforca* Duke of *Milan*; betwixt which two Princes his Father had prudently observed a strict Neutrality. In Return *Sforca* prevailed upon *Charles VIII.* of *France* to march against *Naples*. *Peter* endeavoured to oppose his Passage: But *Peter* was in the Year 1503 forced to renounce his new Alliance, and besides paying *Charles* 200,000 Ducats consented to put *Leghorn* and some other Places into his Hands as a Security for his good Behaviour whilst the War with *Naples* lasted. This very mean Submission made him so contemptible that he was next Day refused Admittance into the Council; and being looked upon as an Enemy to his Country he not thinking himself safe fled with his Brothers from *Florence*, and the Estates of the Family were confiscated. Thus what his Father had several Times told his Intimates, that *Peter* would by his ill Conduct destroy the Foundation laid by his Ancestors, came to pass. He was afterwards drowned in the River *Gariglian* in *Naples*.

He flies from
 FLORENCE.

CHARLES
 VIII. demands
 the Sovereignty
 1503.

The *Florentines* had Reason to curse his Memory: For *Charles* not content with the Places he was in Possession of caused his Army to march towards *Florence*, and insisted upon the absolute Sovereignty of the State. After deliberating some Time on his Demands, which increased every Day, one of the Republick's Deputies named *Peter Caponi* gave *Charles* to understand, that as his Majesty's Conditions were such as it was impossible for the Republick to comply with, he might beat his Drum

as soon as he pleased and they would ring their Alarm-Bell.

The King was thunder-struck with this honest Boldness, and upon reflecting a little consented to more reasonable Terms. These were however not observed; for instead of all the Places in Charles's Hands being restored as it was agreed they should, *Sarzana* and *Sarzanella* were sold by their Governours to the *Genoese* and *Pietra Santa* submitted to the *Lucquese*. *Pisa* also having bought its Liberty formed itself into an independent State; and it cost the *Florentines* a long War to bring it under their Subjection again.

After several Attempts to reestablish the Family of *Medicis* had failed, the Cardinal de *Medicis* in the Year 1511 with the Assistance of a Spanish Army obliged the *Florentines* to banish *Soderini* the most inveterate Enemy to his Family; who had obtained the Lordship of the Republick for Life which never used to be enjoyed above two Months by the same Person. The Estates of his Family were hereupon restored to the Cardinal, and Satisfaction was made to him for all that his Family had suffered by the Confiscation. He besides paid his Soldiers out of the publick Treasury; and the People were forced to put the Regency into the Hands of fifty Persons nominated by himself. This was going a great Way; yet it took up some Time longer for this Family to regain their Authority entirely.

Pope *Clement VII.* who was of this Family being at Variance with the Emperor *Charles V.* *Peter Salviasi* the Instigation of the latter stirred up in the Year 1527 an Insurrection against the House of *Medicis*: And *Hypolitus* with his Brother *Alexander*, who were the Heads of it, being declared Enemies to their Country the whole House was proscribed. One of the Council having asked if the Pope ought to be comprehended in the Decree proscribing his Family? It was immediately replied by another that there was the highest Reason for it. Upon the coming up of the *Venetian* and *French* Generals to the Aid of *Hypolitus* the *Florentines* offered to annul the Decree of Proscription; but upon receiving Advice that the Pope was shut up in the Castle of *St. Angelo* they grew more violent than ever. The Statues of Pope *Leon* and Pope *Clement*

Clement were defaced; the Arms of *Medicis* every where pulled down; the Inscription on the Tomb of *Cosmo* calling him Father of his Country was erased; and the two Brothers were forced to fly. Pope *Clement* having however afterwards pacified the Emperor, the latter was prevailed upon to send an Army under the Prince of *Orange* to reduce *Florence* to Obedience to his Family.

ALEXANDER DE MEDICIS As the Emperor had upon all Occasions found the *Florentines* ready to unite with the *French* against him, he now thought it the best Way to give them a Master of his own choosing; who from being obliged to the House of *Austria* for his Authority would as he hoped come into its Views. The Inhabitants of *Florence* held out a great while; but seeing no Hopes of Relief and Provisions beginning to fail they also submitted to *Charles*; and *Alexander de Medicis* who had married *Margaret* his natural Daughter was in the Year 1530 made Duke of *Florence*.

1530.

This new Duke having by his Cruelty and unbridled Lust, to which Women of the greatest Distinction and even Nuns became Sacrifices, rendered himself quite odious, his Kinsman *Laurentio de Medicis* and *Philip Strozzi* determined to rid the World of him. The better to accomplish their Design they insinuated themselves into his Confidence, by assisting him in his Amours and procuring for him the finest of Women. Having one Day made him believe that a certain Lady, whom he had long wished for, had consented to give him a Meeting the Night following at *Laurentio's* House, the Duke transported with the News went at the Time appointed; but instead of receiving the Lady as he expected every Moment into his Arms, he was assassinated as he lay in Bed.

He is assassinated.

LAURENTIO and STROZZI However glad the People might be of their Deliverance from the Tyrant they cried out against the Treachery of the Assassins who had all along been Panders to his Lust, and *Laurentio* instead of succeeding as he intended was forced to flee: But Justice overtook him; for he was shortly after put to Death by *Cosmo* Nephew to the late Duke. As they were carrying *Strozzi* who was immediately seized to a Dungeon he begged to take Leave of his Family: Which being permitted he, after requesting of his Friends that although he

the two Assassins are punished.

he could not have the Happiness of living in a Land of Liberty they would see his Body interred at Venice a free Country, plunged a Dagger into his Breast, repeating at the same Time this Verse from *Virgil*,

Exoriare aliquis nostris ex ossibus ultor.

Cosmo, who was at his Uncle's Death in the Year COSMO, 1538. 1538 invested with the Ducal Dignity, for the sake of securing the Emperor's Friendship would have married the Dutchess Dowager *Margaret*. He failed in this; but the Principality of *Piombino* and the Island of *Elbe* were, under the Pretence that he was more able to defend the former against the *French* and the latter against the *Turks*, taken from the House of *Appiani* who held them as Fiefs of the Empire and given to him by *Charles*. Siding afterwards with *Philip II.* of *Spain* in the War He acquires the which broke out betwixt him and *France* concern- Lordships of ing the Lordship of *Sienna*, *Philip* in reward for his SIENNE and Services, and as a Satisfaction for the large Sum of institutes an Money furnished by the *Florentines* to himself and his Order of Father, ceded to him all this Lordship, except what is now Knighthood. called the *State del Presidii*, to be held as a Fief of the *Spanish* Crown In Commemoration of the Battle of *Marciano*, which was fought upon the second of *August* a Day consecrated to *St. Stephen* Pope and Martyr, *Cosmo* instituted the Order of *St. Stephen*: Whose Knights were amongst other Privileges indulged by Pope *Pius IV.* in the Liberty of marrying.

After all this Success, by which he was become one He loses both of the most illustrious Princes of his Time, he had in his Sons in one the Year 1561 the Misfortune to lose both his Sons in Day. one Day. A Quarrel arising as they were hunting, *Garcias* the elder stabbed his Brother *John* and he died instantly. *Cosmo* being informed thereof in his Passion plunged the same Poignard he had made use of into the Breast of *Garcias*; but it gave him a great deal of Uneasiness, and his Wife never outgrew the Affliction brought upon her by this untimely End of both her Sons.

A Dispute for Precedence arising betwixt the Dukes FLORENCE of *Ferrara* and *Florence*, the latter in order to put an erected into a End to it was erected by Pope *Pius V.* in the Year Grand Duchy, 1570 into a Grand Duchy. The Emperor *Maximilian* 1570. being hereupon appealed to *Cosmo* was cited as a Vassal of

of the Empire to appear before him. He did appear by his Plenipotentiaries; but he at the same time protested against every thing that might be done to the Prejudice of the Liberties of *Florence*. This Affair being spurr'd out to a great Length the Death of *Cosmo* in the Year 1574 prevented his seeing the End of it.

FRANCIS,
1574.

Francis his eldest Son was confirm'd by the Emperor in the Title of Grand Duke of *Tuscany*. His Regency was remarkable for nothing else but buying the Principality of *Capistran* in *Naples*, which has since been annexed to *Tuscany*, for his Son *Anthony*. He died in the Year 1587 by eating of a poisoned Pye: Which *Blanche Capel* his Wife had prepared for the Cardinal *Ferdinand* his Brother.

FERDINAND,
1587.
His Conduct
brave and
prudent.

Ferdinand, who upon his Brother's Death renounced the Purple in order to take upon himself the Title of Grand Duke, by his prudent Conduct gained the Esteem of all *Europe*. In the beginning of his Regency he ridded the Country of the Banditti it abounded with; and demolished the strong Holds they had in many Places built for themselves. He not only scoured the *Italian* Seas of the *Turkish* Corsairs but also worsted the *Turks* at *Hippona* and *Previsa*; and he was within a little of taking from them *Famagosta* the Capital of *Cyprus*. It having been formerly agreed that several strong Places in *Tuscany* should be garrisoned by *Spaniards*, he it was who defied the *Spaniards* and threw off their Yoke entirely. During the civil Wars in *France* he secretly supplied *Henry IV.* even while he professed the Protestant Religion with Money; and although he afterwards put Garrisons into the Islands of *If* and *Pomegue*, this was only done to prevent their falling into the Hands of the *Spaniards*: For he after being reimbursed his Expences restored them to *Henry*. He died greatly regretted in the Year 1609 and was succeeded by *Cosmo II.* his Son.

COSMO II.
1609.

He assists the
Duke of MAN-
TUA and the
Emperor.

The Weakness of this Prince's Constitution was sufficiently made amends for by the Strength of his Genius and by his universal Knowledge. He in the Year 1613 assisted *Ferdinand* Duke of *Mantua* with an Army of 23,000 Men against the Duke of *Savoy*, who attempted to rob him of *Montferrat*. The Succours he sent to the Emperor *Ferdinand II.* during the Troubles in *Bohemia*,

boemia, by passing under false Colours through the midst of the *Bohemian Army* which was before *Vienna* got into this City; and had a great Share in keeping it out of the Rebels Hands, for the Inhabitants thereof were ripe for a Revolt.

In the Year 1620 *Cosmo* was succeeded by *Ferdi-* FERDINAND
nando his Son. This Prince by marrying *Victoria* II. 1620.
 Granddaughter of *Francis Maria* the last Duke of *Ur-*
bino became entitled to the Estates of this Family; whose
 Moveables only were worth an immense Sum. He was
 persuaded by some to seize this Dutchy; but as it was a
 Fief of the State of the Church he thought it better to let
 it revert peaceably to the See of *Rome*. He had a great
 Share in the War by which Pope *Urban VIII.* was
 obliged to restore the Dutchy of *Castro* to *Edward*
 Duke of *Parma*; and assisted the *Venetians* against the
Turks in the *Candian War*. After a long and happy
 Reign he died in the Year 1688, and had for a Successor
Cosmo his eldest Son.

Cosmo III. who had just finished the Tour of *Europe* COSMO III.
 when his Father died, married *Margaret Louisa* Daugh- 1668.
 ter of the Duke of *Orleans*: But an unhappy Differ-
 ence arising she returned into *France* and continued
 there to her Death in the Year 1721. The Issue of this
 Match were two Sons *Ferdinand* and *John Gaston*, and
 a Daughter named *Mary-Ann Louisa*. As two of these
 were dead without Issue, and *John* although married
 thirteen Years had no Children, *Francis Maria* Brother
 to the Grand Duke to prevent the Extinction of his Fa-
 mily quitted the Cardinalship, and in the Year 1709
 married *Eleanor* the Duke of *Guastalla's* Daughter; but
 he died shortly after of a Dropsy. *Cosmo* during
 whose Reign of 54 Years nothing remarkable happened
 died in the Year 1723.

John Gaston, his Son and Successor, was in the JOHN, 1723.
 Year 1697 married to *Anna-Maria-Francis* Daughter of
Julius Francis Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg* and Relict
 of *Philip William* Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*: But
 there being no Issue of this Match the Right of suc-
 ceeding to *Tuscany* devolved upon the House of *Parma*.
 As *Anthony Farnese* Duke of *Parma* had likewise no
 Issue, *Don Carlos* of *Spain* was in Right of his Mo-
 ther,

that *Elizabeth Farnese* acknowledged Heir to *Parma* and *Placentia*, and upon his Death took Possession of these Dutchies. Great Objections were indeed made thereto by the Court of *Vienna*, and his Investiture was as long as possible delayed.

DON CARLOS
is declared
hereditary
Grand Prince.

John Gaston being in an ill State of Health the same Prince was, the better to secure to him the eventual Succession thereto, declared hereditary Grand Prince of *Tuscany*; but the Face of Affairs in *Italy* being quite changed by the War which broke out upon Account of the *Polish Election*, the Right of succeeding to *Tuscany* was by the Preliminaries of *Vienna* in the Year 1735 transferred to Duke of *Lorraine* in Lieu of his own Dutchy ceded to *Stanislaus*. The House of *Lorraine* was far from liking this Exchange; but as its Head was about marrying into the *Austrian Family*, to which all in *Italy* except *Mantua* being lost a Peace was quite necessary, it was consented to.

FRANCIS
STEPHEN of
LORRAIN suc-
ceeds to TUS-
CANY.

1737.
Dominions of
the Grand
Duke.

After thus seeing his Dominions transferred into a strange Family *John Gaston* died on the 9th of *July* 1737 aged 67, and was succeeded by *Francis Stephen* of *Lorraine*.

It has been always insisted by the *Florentines* that the Cities of *Florence* and *Pisa* are quite independent of the Empire; but in the Remonstrances of the Imperial Ministers upon several Occasions, and particularly upon *Don Carlos's* being declared hereditary Grand Prince, it was asserted that the Sovereignty of the Empire over all *Tuscany* had been acknowledged. The Lordship of *Sienna* is held as a Fief of *Spain*; and the Grand Duke holds *Radicefano* and *Borgo san Sepolero* as Fiefs of the State of the Church: The Pope however says that these last were only mortgaged to the *Florentines* by Pope *Eugene* for 12,000 *Florins*, and that they must upon Payment of this Sum be restored to the State of the Church. Good Part of the Island of *Elbe* belongs also to *Tuscany*.

Soil, Inhabi-
tants and
Trade of TUS-
CANY.

The Inhabitants of *Tuscany*, who like the other *Italians* are very artful, and prone to Jealousy, speak the *Italian Language* in its greatest Purity. Their principal Commodities are fine woollen Cloth, brocaded Silks, Gold Tissues and Oil. The Soil of *Tuscany* is in the
general

general fertile: But for want of People a good Part thereof lies uncultivated. *Pisa* was heretofore a rich and populous Town; but as *Leghorn* is a better Port and a free one *Pisa* has lost all Trade, and is of Course now almost ruined.

As the Revenue of the Grand Duke, besides the Pro-*Revenue of* fits arising from a large Sum constantly employed by him *the GRAND* in Trade, amounts to above 300,000 Crowns, and his *DUKE.* Expence in Time of Peace is not half this Sum, scarce any *Italian* Prince has it in his Power to save more Money.

He keeps in Time of Peace as well as War 30,000 *His Forces.* Men on foot; and has in his Magazines at *Pisa* and in the Island of *Elbe* every thing necessary for fitting out a large Fleet: So that if the natural Strength of his Dominions almost surrounded with high Mountains be considered, he will appear to be one of the most considerable Potentates in *Italy.*

The Interest of *Tuscany* with regard to other Powers *Interest of* does in the general differ very little from that of *Venice*, *TUSCANY* *Genoa* and other *Italian* States; but as the present Grand *with respect to* Duke has married the Heiress of the *Austrian* Succession, *the neighbour-* its Interest must at this Time be considered as inseparable *ing Powers.* from that of the House of *Austria.*

 C H A P. IV.

Of the P O P E's Dominions.

LEAVING the Spiritual Authority of the *Pope* to be treated of in another Chapter, we shall in this give some Account of the States which acknowledged him for their Sovereign, and shew how the Holy See became possessed of these.

The first Bishops of ROME suffered much from the Heathens.

As *Rome* was the Metropolis of the Empire, it is easy to be conceived that its Bishops were much exposed to the Cruelties which the Christian Church suffered during the three first Centuries. Of thirty-two Bishops who had filled this See *St. Eusebius* its Possessor in the Year 312, when the Edict of *Constantine* for stopping the Persecution of the Christians was published, and *St. Zephirin* were the only two that did not fall Sacrifices to the Rage of Heathenism. This Emperor, who had been a most bitter Enemy to the Church, after his Conversion thought he could never do enough for it. He from that Time constantly followed the Advice of the Bishops of *Rome*: And employed his Authority on all Occasions to procure them Respect.

Divisions of the Empire, 337.

At his Death in the Year 337 the Empire was divided. *Constantine* the eldest of his Sons had *Spain* and all *Transalpine Gaul*; *Constantius* the second had the eastern Part of *Asia* and *Egypt*; and the other Son *Constant* had *Italy*, *Africa*, *Sicily* and Part of *Illyricum*: Nor were his two Nephews forgot, to *Dalmacius* he gave *Thrace*, *Macedonia* and *Greece*, with the Title of *Cæsar*; and *Hannibaliens* had for his Share *Cappadocia*, *Pontus* and *Armenia*. The two last being shortly after put to Death by the Army, who declared that only the Sons of *Constantine* should reign over them, their Dominions were divided between *Constantius* and *Constant*.

A

A Difference arising concerning Boundaries betwixt *Constantine* and *Constant* the latter dissembled so well, that having made great Levies under the Pretence of assisting *Constantius* against the *Persians* *Constantine* was surprized in the Year 340 near *Aquileia* and slain.

The Share of *Constantine* was now annexed by *Constant* to his own; but *Magnencius* not long after deprived him of the whole and caused him to be put to Death. *Julius* Brother of *Constantine*, had besides *Dalmacius* and *Hannibalien* who were both slain by the Soldiers two other Sons *Gallus* and *Julian*. The first of these being so ill that his Life was despaired of, and the other being only eight Years of Age, they were looked upon as not at all to be feared and their Lives were spared by *Magnencius*. A Bishop in *Cappadocia* having afterwards taken great Care of their Education *Constantius* appointed *Gallus* to govern in the East, whilst he went in the Year 350 to revenge his Brother's Death upon *Magnencius*.

Gallus then about twenty-five Years of Age at the Desire of *Constantius* took his Name and being honoured by him with the Title of *Cesar* kept his Court at *Antioch*. The *Jews* in *Palestine* rebelled against him; but he reduced them to Reason and was successful in his Wars with the *Persians*. This good Fortune made him cruel and insolent, and being besides suspected of a Design to usurp the Imperial Dignity *Constantius* caused him to be arrested, and he was condemned to lose his Head about the Year 354.

Julian his Brother and Successor displeas'd some People by going into *Greece*: But having justified his Conduct to *Constantius* he was permitted to finish his Studies at *Athens*. Having for some Time grown cool to Christianity he by living there was confirm'd in his liking to *Paganism*; yet he dissembled so well that nobody suspected it.

Constantius obtained a signal Victory over *Magnencius* in September 351, and a second Battle being lost by the latter laid violent Hands upon himself, and thereby an End was put to his own Usurpation which had lasted four Years. An Irruption being made by the barbarous Nations into *Gaul* about the Year 355 *Julian* was sent against them; during which Expedition he openly renounced Christianity.

JULIAN be-
comes Emperor,
361. Upon the Death of *Constantius* in the Year 361 he was declared Emperor: But the Shortness of his Reign happily for the *Christians* prevented the putting in Execution his Design of re-establishing Paganism.

JOVIAN. *Jovian* the next Emperor reigning but seven Months *Valentinian* was in the Year 364 raised to the Imperial Dignity.

**VALENTINI-
AN, 364.** He made *Milan* as *Constantius* had before done his Residence; and *Valens* his Brother to whom he gave the eastern Part of the Empire kept his Court at *Constantinople*. The Example of *Constantine the Great* in being liberal to the Church was followed by his Successors; but as the Seat of neither the eastern nor western Empire was at *Rome* the Grandeur thereof declined. The Authority of the See of *Rome* was indeed acknowledged in spiritual Matters; but this City like others in *Italy* was governed by a Person accountable to the Exarch of *Ravenna*, to whom the Government of that Part of *Italy* which belonged to the eastern Empire was committed. By the Encroachments of the northern Nations the Power of the eastern Emperors in *Italy* was by Degrees brought quite low: Nor could they being attacked by the *Saracens* on another Side spare sufficient Forces to reestablish it.

**LEO ISAU-
RUS, 717.**

Such was the Situation of Things when *Leon Isaurus* surnamed the *Image-breaker* succeeded to the eastern Empire. This Man who was of the lowest Birth being told when young by two *Jews* that he should some Day be Emperor, he bound himself with a solemn Oath to grant them whatsoever they desired when this came to pass. Having distinguished himself by his Bravery in the Army he was gradually raised to the highest Posts therein: And upon the Death of *Theodosius* in the Year 717 became Emperor.

He causes the
Images to be
p^ru'd down in
CONSTAN-
TINOPLE.

It being requested of him by the two *Jews*, he as soon as he thought himself well settled upon the Throne began to pull down the Images in the *Christian Churches* in *Constantinople*; and ordered *Paul* his Exarch to see the same thing done in *Italy* and especially at *Rome*. As his Power there bore no Proportion to the lordly Stile of the Edict commanding this, *Gregory II.* who then filled the holy Chair would not suffer it to be published in *Rome*.

This

This Pope dying soon after he was succeeded by *Gregory III*. To one of these Popes, Historians are not agreed which, *Leon* wrote a severe Letter threatening to treat him as a Rebel if the Edict was not complied with: But the Pontiff in his Answer wrote with great Spirit seemed surprized, that he who had for so many Years believed with the Church should all at once alter his Opinion; and took great Pains to shew the Usefulness of setting up Images. A Council being hereupon demanded by *Leon* who insisted that it was an idolatrous Custom, the Pope told him in a Letter there was no need of any; for that as the Church had enjoyed the profoundest Tranquillity until he disturbed it, if he would but give over his Outrages at *Constantinople* every thing would soon be quiet again. He in the same Letter reproached him with the Progress made by the *Lombards* in *Italy*: And said it would become him much better to oppose these, who were already advanced almost as far as *Rome*, than to scandalize the greatest Part of the Christian World by his imprudent Zeal against Images. Whilst the Exarch of *Ravenna* was endeavouring to put the Emperor's Edict in Execution, an Insurrection broke out which gave *Luitprand* King of *Lombardy* an Opportunity of easily becoming Master of *Ravenna*. The Behaviour of *Gregory* upon this Occasion was very serviceable to the Emperor; for by his engaging the *Venetians* to assist the Exarch *Ravenna* was retaken from the *Lombards*, and some other Places were kept out of their Hands: But all would not atone for his having opposed the Edict.

As his Predecessors had by their exemplary Piety and *Assassins hired* great Charity procured vast Respect to the See of *Rome* to kill *Gregory* all over *Italy*, and the utmost Aversion was conceived to *Leon*, he found it impracticable to do any thing openly against *Gregory*; whose Personal Virtues had endeared him to the People. Three Men were hereupon hired to kill him and *Marino* Governor of *Rome* had Orders to protect them; but their Design being discovered two of them were seized and put to Death. Orders being afterwards given to the Exarch for deposing *Gregory* he took great Pains to procure the Assistance of *Luitprand*: But this Prince notwithstanding his Loss of

Ravenna, which was principally owing to the Stand made by the Pope, knew very well it could not be for his true Interest to restore the Emperor's Power in *Italy*; and instead of assisting the Exarch he supported the Pope.

The Exarch
murdered at
RAVENNA.

The Exarch being hereby disappointed in his Attempt upon *Rome* he soon lost all his Authority and was murdered at *Ravenna*. The Governor of *Naples* shared the same Fate for being in the Emperor's Interest; and Things were carried so far as to propose the Election of a new Emperor. The *Greeks* blamed the Pope for all this; but to say the Truth, although he did not think it right for the People to obey the Edict, he was far from encouraging this general Revolt and exhorted them to continue their Allegiance to their rightful Sovereign. The Revenues drawn from *Italy* by the eastern Emperors being for the most Part employed in paying the Troops kept up there, the People who now looked upon *Leon* to be an heretical Prince refused to pay those Taxes any longer, which they found to be employed by him in oppressing themselves. As the Soldiers, who were thereby deprived of their Pay and reduced to the greatest Misery, conceived the utmost Detestation of the new Opinions as being the Cause thereof, a great many of them deserted: And the rest engaged to serve against the Emperor. It being highly probable that *Leon* would make one grand Effort to recover his Affairs in *Italy*, and the *Lombards* being now grown very powerful in *Italy*, an Association headed by the Pope was entered into by several Cities for their mutual Defence.

An Association
headed by the
Pope.

ROME besieged
by the LOM-
BARDS is re-
lieved by
CHARLES
MARTEL.

The Dukes of *Benevento* and *Spoletto* endeavouring to throw off their Dependance upon *Luitprand* the King of *Lombardy* he marched against them. The former was drowned in going over to *Greece*; the other saved himself by flying to *Rome*. On the Pope's refusing to give him up *Luitprand*, who in his Way had plundered all the Estates of the Church, came and encamp'd near this City. In this Distress *Gregory* wrote a pressing Letter to *Charles Martel*, in whom although he was not King all the Power of *France* centered; and by Virtue of the Authority lodged in him by the associated Towns offered him the Dignity of Consul. As *Charles Martel*

Of the POPE's Dominions.

Martel was allied to *Luitprand*, and had received great Assistance from him in his Wars with the *Mors*, he would not engage against him: But he interested himself so far by his good Offices that *Rome* was spared. In the Year 741 the *Pope*, the Emperor *Leon*, and *Charles Martel* all three died.

Pepin the Son of *Charles Martel* took the Advantage of the Weakness of *Childerick* the last King of *France* comes into the of the *Merovingian* Line to get himself proclaimed King. Although the Way to this was sufficiently well paved by his Predecessors, in whom for several Reigns the Management of every thing in *France* had been, he did not think it proper to depose *Childerick* without consulting the *Pope*; for whose Authority the People began to have a great Regard. Ambassadors being hereupon sent to *Zachary* Successor of *Gregory III.* the following Question was proposed: Which is more worthy to reign he who without the Title faithfully discharges the Duty of a King; or he who having that Title is quite incapable of governing? The *Pope*, who knew that *Pepin* could and that *Childerick* was by no Means capable of assisting him against the *Lombards*, not only gave such an Answer as he concluded would best serve his own Interest; but to give the greater Sanction to the Thing he sent a Legate to assist in the crowning of *Pepin*. As *Boniface* an *Englishman* by Birth the Person sent on this Errand took it very much upon him, some superstitious Authors have not scrupled to assert that the second Race of *French* Kings might thank the *Pope* for their Crown. The Assistance of *France* was hereby secured to *Zachary*; but as it could not come time enough to relieve *Rome*, which was a second time attacked, he in an Interview with *Luitprand* made the best Peace he could. In this Treaty the Empire of *Greece* was concluded; for although the *Pope* who liked being at the Head of the Association was resolved to support his Authority; yet he was willing to be if possible upon good Terms with the Emperor, that he might as the latter had still something left in *Italy* have his Assistance against the *Lombards*.

Upon the Death of *Luitprand* in the Year 744 *Hilbrand* his Nephew succeeded; but he was deposed within a few Months and *Rachis* Duke of *Friuli* was raised

raised to the Throne of *Lombardy*. This Prince in order to confirm the *Lombards* in their good Opinion of his Courage. made himself Master of and ravaged some of the associated Cities. *Zachary* found Means however not only to soften him but to convert him; and in order to atone for the Injuries done by him to the Church he embraced the monastick State.

RAVENNA
taken by
ASTOLPH.

Astolph who in the Year 750 succeeded his Brother *Rachis* renewed the Treaty with the Empire and the Association for forty Years; but finding afterwards that the Exarch was in no Condition to defend it he fell suddenly upon and took *Ravenna*. As this Attack was without any Declaration of War and consequently unprovided against by the Emperor, all the Towns which still remained to the Exarchate opened their Gates to the Conqueror.

STEPHEN,
752.

STEPHEN raised in the Year 752 to the holy Chair being alarmed at these rapid Conquests, he for the Security of *Rome* drew thither the Garrisons from some other Towns which acknowledged his Authority. *Astolph* displeas'd at this Precaution immediately demanded of the Inhabitants of this City to acknowledge him for Sovereign, and pay the same Tribute that had been paid when it was subject to the Exarch of *Ravenna*.

ROME besieg-
ed by the LOM-
BARDS.

In order to fright them into a Compliance he marched towards *Rome*, and put all the Country round it to Fire and Sword without sparing even the Estates of the Pope himself: Which had for some Time, with a View perhaps to secure them from Violences of this sort, been call'd *St. Peter's Patrimony*. The *Romans* expected Succours from *Constantinople*; but instead of these there only came an Ambassador to complain of the Infraçion of Treaties and to demand the Restoration of the Exarchate. As these Representations were not as they should have been to make the effectual backed with a powerful Army, no Regard was paid thereto by *Astolph*. For the sake of amusing the Emperor Ambassadors were indeed sent by him to *Constantinople*; but he hoped in the mean time to reduce *Rome* which was closely blocked up on all Sides by Famine. Publick Prayers were now put up and Processions were made by the Pope's Order: And being seated in the Pontifical Chair he in a pathetick Discourse represented to the People the Weakness and Distance

Distance of the *Grecian* Empire; the Ambition and Cruelty of the *Lombards*; and the terrible Consequences of the City's falling into their Hands. When he saw the Assembly sufficiently wrought upon he stopped short, as he was describing the dreadful Calamities of its being taken by Storm; and all at once cried out it was the Will of Heaven that they should apply for Aid to *Pepin*, whose illustrious Father had by his good Offices only heretofore saved the City.

The Proposal being applauded and approved of a Dea-^{The Assistance} con was immediately sent with a Letter to *Pepin*: In ^{of PEPIN is} which *Stephen* conjured him by every thing sacred to come ^{implored.} and deliver *Italy* from the Tyranny of the *Lombards*; and in another Letter addressed to the Grandees of the Nation he begged of them to join with the King in assisting him.

On *Pepin's* dispatching the Bishop of *Metz* and the ^{The Siege of} Duke of *Auctuaire* to desire of *Astolph* that Hostilities ^{Rome raised.} might cease, and that a Conference might be held for terminating all the Matters in Difference, the *Lombard* unwilling to draw so powerful an Enemy upon his Back raised the Siege and consented to enter into a Negotiation at *Pavia*; but he insisted that nothing should be mentioned of restoring any thing to the eastern Empire. Pressing Instances were however made for this Purpose by the Imperial Envoy; and the Pope told him with great Boldness that he ought to restore to every one their Due. As *Pepin's* Ambassadors could not settle Matters they contented themselves with demanding a Passport for the Pope to go into *France*. *Astolph* dreading the ill Consequences of this Journey endeavoured to divert *Stephen* from it; but as a Passport was although much against the Will of *Astolph* granted *Stephen* made the best of his Way for *France*.

Stephen arrived at the *French* Court on the 6th of *January* 754; and was received with the greatest Marks ^{STEPHEN goes} into *FRANCE*, of Respect. In a publick Audience had on the next ^{754.} Day he with all his Clergy fell upon their Knees, and refused to rise until the King and the principal Persons present had assured them of their Protections. As the Pope had great Need of *Pepin's* Assistance, *Pepin* had in return something to ask of him. Notwithstanding his

being crowned and that the Crown used to be hereditary; yet as the Succession had been broke into by the deposing of *Childerick*, and no Declaration was made at his Coronation concerning his Sons, he feared some other Person might be preferred to them. As the People had the greatest Veneration for the Pope *Pepin* imagined they would be easily prevailed upon by him to settle the Succession on his Family; and he judged right; for at the Recommendation of *Stephen Charles* and *Carloman* his two Sons were declared Heirs to the Crown. In return *Pepin* promised to endeavour the Recovery of the *Exercate* from the *Lombards*, and to give it to the *Pope*.

CARLOMAN
Brother of PE-
PIN espouses the
Designs of
STEPHEN.

These Things were scarce settled when *Carloman* Brother of *Pepin's* elder Brother, who had entered into the monastic State, to the Surprize of every body arrived at the *French* Court. When the *Lombards* made themselves Masters of the Monastery of *Mount-Cassin*, to which he belonged, *Astolph* prevailed on him to go into *France* and use his Interest in opposing the Schemes of *Stephen*. He represented to his Brother and the Ministry the certainly great Expence and the Uncertainty of Success in carrying on a War at such a Distance; and being ignorant of what had passed betwixt his Brother and the *Pope* said, that as the Emperor of *Greece* was the chief Sufferer it concerned him to put a Stop to the Progress of the *Lombards*. His Advice being in some measure listened to it was agreed to send Ambassadors to *Astolph*, and try what could be done by fair Means. The *Lombard* gave these a Meeting at *Pavia*: And for the sake of Peace consented to desist from his Claim to *Rome* as Part of the *Exercate*, and promised to demand no more Tribute from the *Romans*. These Terms not being satisfactory *Carloman* was by the Advice of the *Pope* shut up in a Monastery. As this Prince died shortly after it was thought he did not come fairly by his Death.

He dies in a
Monastery.

PEPIN and his
Sons declared
Patrons of the
Church.

To remove all Scruples of *Pepin* as to the Succession to the *French* Crown he and his Sons were with great Ceremony consecrated by *Stephen*; a thundering Excommunication was pronounced against such as should at any time propose the setting aside of any of his Descendants; and for the sake of amusing and bringing the Na-

tion

tion into the Pope's Views *Pepin* and his Sons were declared Patrons of the Church. Ambassadors were twice more sent to *Astolph*: But he persisted in his Resolution to keep the *Exercate*; and although he did not imagine the *French* would really attack him some Troops were sent to secure the Passes of the *Alps*.

Pepin in the Year 755 put himself at the Head of an Army; and having forced the Passes met with no Opposition till he came to *Pavia*, where *Astolph* had shut himself up with the best of his Troops. This Place the Metropolis of *Lombardy* being well fortified and obstinately defended the Siege was long and bloody; but as *Astolph* knew he must in the End submit, he consented to put the *Exercate* into the Hands of *Pepin* and to restore all he had taken from the Association. Forty of his principal Lords being given as Hostages for his Performance of these Terms *Pepin* thought it best to repass the *Alps* before the Snows fell; and the Pope went to *Rome*.

As *Astolph* knew the *French* could not come again during the Winter into *Italy*, he instead of making the Restitution agreed upon assembled his Forces; and having invested *Rome* summoned the Inhabitants to deliver the Pope into his Hands. He imagined they durst not have refused it: But he found himself mistaken; for they adhered firmly to *Stephen* and defended the Town till Succours could arrive from *Pepin*; who upon receiving the News by the Pope's Letter thought himself in Honour bound to revenge this Infraction of the Treaty of *Pavia*.

As soon as the Season would permit *Pepin* passed the *Alps*; and having defeated the Army of *Astolph* forced him to give over the Siege and fly with the utmost Precipitation to *Pavia*: But he was soon obliged to surrender at Discretion. It being now made publick that the Pope was to have the *Exercate*, some Ambassadors from *Constantinople* to *Pepin* represented it as a most unjust thing to bestow upon the Pope, who was himself a Subject to the Emperor, what the *Lombards* had taken from his Sovereign whilst he was engaged in a most necessary War against the *Saracens* Enemies to Christianity. *Pepin* in answer said that his Design in coming into *Italy* was to free the Church from the Oppressions of the *Lombards*; and as it had pleased GOD to prosper his Arms he thought

thought himself bound to fulfil the Vow made by him of dedicating all his Conquests to St. Peter.

**DIDIER King of LOMBAR-
DY enters into
an Alliance
with the Em-
peror.** Least *Astolph* should a second time break his Word *Pepin* insisted upon the immediate Execution of the Treaty of *Pavia*, and upon having the Expences of the War defrayed. *Astolph* was forced to comply and the Keys of twenty-two Places being delivered to *Pepin's* Commissary they were offered up by him at St. Peter's Tomb. Some time after whilst *Pepin* was engaged with the Saxons *Didier* Successor of *Astolph* seized some of the restored Places, and entered into an Alliance with the Court of *Constantinople* against the Pope.

PAUL, 757. *Paul* raised on the Death of *Stephen* in the Year 757 to the Popedom was greatly alarmed thereat: But upon the Arrival of the News that *Pepin* had finished the Conquest of *Saxony* and was returned home *Didier* proposed the making up of Matters. In order thereto he declared himself ready to give up all the Places he had taken, and some which should have been restored pursuant to the Treaty of *Pavia*, provided the Hostages in *Pepin's* Custody were sent home. The Pope who believed him sincere wrote a Letter in their Favour to *Pepin*: But instead of giving the Pope's Officers Possession of the promised Towns he pillaged the Suburbs of *Rome*, and endeavoured to busy *Pepin* by stirring up his Son-in-law *Tassilon* Duke of *Bavaria* to revolt.

CONSTANTINE, 768. *Toton* Duke of *Nepi* having on the Death of *Paul* in the Year 768 caused his Brother *Constantine* a Layman to be installed Pope. *Christophlus* and his Son *Sergius* two Citizens of *Rome* prevailed upon *Didier* to interpose. By the Help of the *Lombards* the Duke was killed: And *Constantine* being made Prisoner had his Eyes put out. A Priest named *Philip* was hereupon installed Pope and took Possession of the *Palace*; but upon the Approach of *Christophlus* at the Head of the Troops lent him by *Didier* he consented to quit his new Dignity.

STEPHEN III. *Stephen III.* being afterwards unanimously elected, the Antipope *Constantine* was condemned in a general Council; and all the Bishops, Priests and Deacons he had made were degraded.

**CHRISTOPHLUS and
his Son are
disgraced.** A Difference arising betwixt *Charles* and *Carloman* Sons of *Pepin Didier* joined with the latter, and fomented

mented it as much as possible: But a Treaty of Marriage being agreed upon betwixt *Charles* and *Hermengilde* his Daughter all Parties were reconciled. As *Didier* imagined himself to be now upon good Terms with *France* he under the Pretence of paying a Visit to *St. Peter's* Tomb appeared before *Rome* at the Head of an Army; and demanded an Interview with the Pope, *Christophlus*, who for his great Services in extinguishing the Faction of *Constantine* stood high in the Confidence of *Stephen*, opposed this and represented the Necessity reviving the ancient Alliance with *France*: But as the Advice of *Paul Asurt* his Chamberlain another Favourite was quite contrary, and which weighed more with *Stephen* he was in no Condition to repel the Force of *Didier* he consented thereto. A strict Union being now entered into with the *Lombard* the Party of *Paul* cried out loudly for Vengeance upon *Christophlus*; who by his Attachment to *France* had for some Time retarded it and exposed the People to the Ravages of *Didier's* Army. *Stephen* in regard to his former Services contented himself with ordering *Christophlus* and his Son into a Monastery: But the Chamberlain to make his Triumph the surer caused both their Eyes to be put out and all their Relations and Friends to be banished. The Pope cajoled by *Didier's* fair Promises in a Letter to the *French* King seemed quite pleased with his new Ally: And said he doubted not but that his dear Son the most excellent King of *Lombardy* whom God preserve would do him ample Justice. He spoke also in the strongest Terms of his Chamberlain's Faithfulness, being ignorant that he had all the Time been tampered with by *Didier*; and attributed to the singular Providence of God his being delivered from the Perils he had been thrown into by following the wicked Council of *Christophlus* and his Son so long. The *Lombard*, who took it for granted that his principal Design the embroiling of the Courts of *France* and *Rome* was now fully answered, soon threw off the Mask; and the Pope when it was too late saw his Folly in trusting to him.

Adrian Successor in the Year 772 to *Stephen* recalled the ADRIAN,
 Friends of *Christophlus*; and prudently set about the re- 772.
 storing

The Chamberlain ASIART put to Death.

storing of Harmony with *France*, which was by the Death of *Carloman* all come into the Hands of *Charles* on Account of his Bravery called *Charlemain*. Hereupon the Chamberlain finding his Intrigues with *Didier* to be discovered fled; but he was seized at *Ravenna*, and forced to atone with his Death for the Sufferings of *Christophlus* and his Son.

Intrigues of DIDIER.

Didier being soon after irritated at *Charlemain's* divorcing his Daughter, he endeavoured to stir up an Insurrection in *France* in Favour of *Carloman's* Children: And openly abetted *Hunald* Duke of *Aquitain*, in his Revolt against him. In order to keep fair with the Pope at the same Time offered to restore all the Exercate, provided he would crown one of *Carloman's* Sons; but Pope *Adrian* grown wise by the Mistakes of his Predecessor would hear nothing thereof. His thus refusing to crown *Charlemain's* Nephew was a good Pretence for imploring his Assistance against *Didier* their common Enemy: Who as the Pope represented to *Charlemain* still contrary to the most solemn and repeated Engagements kept back Part of what his Father had out of his great Piety given to the Church.

CHARLEMAIN
comes to the Assistance of the Pope.

Charlemain early in the next Spring put himself at the Head of a powerful Army: And having entered *Lombardy* laid Siege at the same Time both to *Pavia* and *Verona*. The latter being taken he left the Command of the other Siege to *Bernard* his Uncle; and went to keep his *Easter* at *Rome*. Having afterwards confirmed to the Holy See the Donation of *Pepin*, and bound himself by the most sacred Oaths at the *Altar* and *St. Peter's* Tomb to put *Adrian* into the full Possession thereof, he returned to the Army. It will not be amiss to observe here that, although the Authority of the eastern Emperor in *Italy* had been substantially lost ever since the Quarrel betwixt *Leon Isaurus* and Pope *Gregory II.* concerning Images, some Shadow of it was still kept up; and amongst other things in dating publick Acts the Year of the Emperor's Reign was mentioned. Hence the Donation of *Pepin* being while *Constantine Copronymus* was Emperor of the East some Records say that the Exercate of *Ravenna* was given to the Church in the Reign of *Constantine*. For

want

want of attending to this Custom and distinguishing be twixt the Date and the Donor, some Historians have fallen into the Mistake of asserting that it was given by *Constantine* the Great. In the Act of *Charlemain* confirming his Father's Gift the Right of the eastern Emperor was looked upon to be superseded by the long Possession the *Lombards* had been in of the *Exercate*: And no Mention was made of him therein.

Soon after the Return of *Charlemain* to his Army, *PAVIA* ^{sur-} which had all the Time kept *Pavia* closely blocked up, ^{renders.} the Inhabitants whom Famine had made desperate fell upon and slew the Duke of *Aquitaine*: Because they looked upon him to be the Cause of the War and consequently of their Sufferings. Hereupon *Didier* fearing their Rage would next fall upon himself threw open the Gates and submitted to the Conqueror's Mercy.

Didier being sent Prisoner into *France* *Charlemain* caused *The Pope is* himself to be crowned King of *Lombardy*; and put the ^{put into Pos-} Pope into Possession of all the *Exercate*, the *Pentapole*, ^{session of the} the *Dutchy of Rome* and some other States. ^{Exercate.} Historians are not agreed that the absolute Sovereignty of these Dominions was given either by *Charlemain* or his Father to the Pope; for some think that the Revenue only was given for the Support of the Church, the Sovereignty and Protectorship being reserved to the Crown of *France*. As the original Grants are lost no Certainty can be come at as to this Matter; but this is certain, that some succeeding Popes did send the Holy Keys and the Standard of *Rome* with rich Presents to *Charlemain*, and amongst other Acts of Homage took at their Consecration an Oath of Fidelity to him as had before been the Custom with Regard to the eastern Emperors.

In the Year 796 *Adrian* died and was succeeded ^{LEON III.} by *Leon III.* ^{796.} But a Conspiracy was soon set on Foot against him by *Pascal* Dean of the Sacred College a Nephew of the late Pope his Rival for the papal Dignity, and *Campulus* his Treasurer another Relation of *Adrian's*. By their Intrigues in Concert with *Maurice* Bishop of *Nepi* a strong Party was raised against *Leon*, and *Grimoald* Duke of *Benevento* at the Instigation of his Wife a Daughter of *Didier* promised to assist

He is seized.

assist them. Riding in a publick Proceſſion *Leon* was seized, and after suffering many Insults from *Pascal* and *Campulus* was shut up in a Monastery. By the Assistance however of *Albin* his Chamberlain he made his Escape: And having obtained a Passport from *Pepin* whom *Charlemain* his Father had made King of *Lombardy* he went into *France*. A Libel being sent after him containing the Heads of the Accusation against him he returned to *Rome*; and *Hildebolde* Archbishop of *Cologne*, another Archbishop, with four Bishops and three Counts, were appointed by *Charlemain* to examine into the Affair.

He is tried and acquitted.

He was received at *Rome* with great Acclamations: But this did not deter *Pascal* and *Campulus* from persisting in their Charge of his being guilty of the most enormous Crimes. After a Trial which lasted a Week *Leon* was declared innocent, and his Accusers were sent under a strong Guard to answer before *Charlemain* for their Attempts upon his Person: As their Party however still continued to be strong in *Rome* and *Grinoald* began to disturb the Repose of *Italy*, it was resolved by *Charlemain* to go thither in Person.

CHARLE-
MAIN goes to
ROME, 800.

The Duke of *Benevento* being first brought to Reason *Charlemain* made a publick Entry into *Rome* in November 800. One principal Reason of his coming being to finish the Affair of *Leon*, of whose Innocence many still doubted, he resolved to hear it again himself in an Assembly of the *Archbishops*, *Bishops*, *Abbots* and of all the temporal Lords. The Pope was in this again acquitted of the Charge; but *Charlemain* thought it proper for him to purge himself by swearing solemnly to his Innocence.

He is proclaimed Emperor.

During these Transactions the Death of *Constantine*, notwithstanding the Endeavours of his Empress *Irene* to conceal it, was known at *Rome*. As the Pope and *Romans* pretended to a Right of nominating an Emperor no Conjunction seemed so proper to exert it in as this: When by the sudden Death of *Constantine* all the Power fell into the Hands of a Woman by her Crimes unworthy and by her Sex incapable of reigning. In a general Assembly of the Clergy and People it was determined that *Charlemain*, who had distinguished himself so much in the Service of the Church and by his Zeal

for propagating the Christian Faith, was most worthy of the Imperial Dignity: And being on the *Christmas Day* following crowned Emperor by the Pope, he was amidst the Acclamations of the People declared Emperor of the *Romans*.

As the Pope had done so much for him *Charlemain* PASCAL and could do no less than set on Foot an Enquiry concerning *CAMPULUS* the Insults offered to his Person, in the Course of which *are banished*. it appeared that many of the principal Citizens were privy to it: But *Pascal* and *Campulus* were the only two condemned for it. Their Lives being at the Solicitation as it was pretended of *Leon* himself spared, they were by the Emperor's Order sent into *France*, and continued Prisoners there during the Remainder of their Lives.

The Descendants of *Charlemain* enjoyed the Imperial Dignity near a hundred Years. Afterwards *Lambert* Duke of *Spolotto*, *Berenger* Duke of *Friuli*, *Lewis* King of *Provence*, *Raoul* King of *Burgundy* and *Hugues* Count of *Provence* were successively crowned Emperors. The last of these left a Son named *Lothaire*; but as the Design of the *Romans* in conferring the Imperial Dignity upon *Charlemain* was to have a powerful Protector they refused to crown *Lothaire*: And having suffered a great deal by the Oppressions of some late Emperors they formed themselves into a Republick and chose Consuls. *Berenger* Marquis of *Ivry* having on the Death of *Lothaire* caused himself to be proclaimed King of *Lombardy* and Emperor, *Alix* Widow of *Lothaire* implored the Assistance of *Otho* the Great Emperor of *Germany*. *Otho* raised the Siege of *Pavia* where *Alix* was shut up: And marrying her took upon himself the Title of King of *Lombardy* about the Year 951.

Italy being afterwards thrown into the utmost Confusion by the Contentions of different Princes for Superiority, the Pope who could not bear to see any one greater than himself appealed to *Otho*: Who came in Person and having subdued all *Italy* caused himself to be crowned in the Year 962 Emperor at *Rome*. Pope *John XII.* who then filled the Holy Chair, hoped to find such a Protector in him as *Leon* had in *Charlemain*: But he

he was greatly mistaken; for although he restored to the Holy See all that *Charlemain* had confirmed to it, the Restoration was upon such Conditions as made the Pope little better than his Vassal. One thing reserved to himself and Successors was, that no Pope should for the Time to come be installed without the Consent of the Emperor for the Time being. The Clergy did not like this; but he would abate nothing thereof; and because *John* did not please him he deposed him and by Force of Arms caused another to be installed.

Great Confusion at ROME.

The Storm which had been long gathering now fell heavy upon the Holy See. It must be confessed that, notwithstanding the Design of these Princes might be very good, the large Revenue and Power annexed to the Pontificate by *Pepin* and *Charlemain* were a great Temptation to ambitious and covetous Minds. When therefore the Descendants of *Charlemain* were no longer able to maintain their Superiority in *Italy* *Rome* became the Prey of that Prince who was uppermost. In these calamitous Times he who could recommend himself thereto by any Services however infamous, or pay a round Price for it, was sure of being raised to any Benefice or to the papal Chair itself. As Things were thus circumstanced it is not to be wondered that some Popes were notoriously profane, and that others were guilty of the grossest Immoralities: So that it was high Time for some such powerful Prince as *Otho* to interpose. He did what he could and things were in some Measure set right; but the Reformation made by him lasted not long.

BENEDICT IX. 1044.

Benedict IX. whose Rapine and Cruelty were intolerable, was driven from *Rome* at *Christmas* in the Year 1044: But notwithstanding *Sylvester III.* was thereupon raised to the papal Chair, *Benedict* found Ways being of a powerful Family to get Possession of it again about three Months after. Pursuing his former wicked Courses the People, who were determined at any Rate to get rid of him, gave him a large Sum of Money to resign; and *Gregory VI.* succeeded.

GREGORY VI.

Being a well disposed Man this Pope endeavoured to rectify the Disorder he found every Thing in. The Revenue of the Holy See had been so exhausted or alienated that scarce enough was left to subsist him. The large Sums

which Pilgrims used to offer were greatly diminished; because all the Roads of *Italy* being infested with Robbers few would venture upon a Pilgrimage to *Rome*: And if some by going in large Companies did get safe thither their Offerings seldom came into the Pope's Coffers; for the Desperadoes with which even *Rome* itself was full did not stick at taking these by Force from the holy Altars and Tombs. *Gregory* exhorted the People by representing their Heinousness to desist from these wicked Practices, and promised to provide for all such as were really necessitous. He moreover admonished all those who had appropriated to themselves any Part of *St. Peter's* Patrimony to restore the same, or to shew their Right to keep it. Finding that his Exhortations, his Admonitions and even his Excommunications, were slighted he proceeded to more violent Methods. As the *Romans* had been long used to live by Plunder he was hereupon represented as cruel and blood-thirsty: And as both *Benedict IX.* and *Sylvester III.* still retained the Title of Pope, each of these endeavoured to raise himself a Party amongst the People to whom *Gregory* was become odious.

In a Council held at *Sutri* by the Emperor *Henry III.* Three Popes set who thought proper to come into *Italy* for the sake of aside by the putting a Stop to this Schism, it appeared that *Benedict* Council of and *Sylvester* had actually been guilty of *Simony*: And SUTRI. as the giving of Money to *Benedict* for resigning in Favour of *Gregory* was also looked upon as a simoniacal Contract they were all three set aside; and *Suidger* Bishop of *Bamberg* known by the Name of *Clement II.* was at *Christmas* in the Year 1406 installed.

A Dispute arising at his Death in the next Year be- CLEMENT II. twixt the Emperor and the Clergy of *Rome* *Benedict IX.* 1046. once more took Possession of the holy Chair; but he was soon forced to resign, and *Poppon* Bishop of *Brixen* whom the Emperor had chosen in *Germany* was in *July* 1048 installed.

This Pontiff who took upon himself the Name of DAMASUS II. *Damasus II.* enjoyed his Dignity only twenty-three Days. 1048.

In a Diet held at *Worms* in the Autumn following LEO IX. *Bruno* Bishop of *Toul* was unanimously elected: But 1049. some Difficulties being raised by the *Roman* Clergy, who were not at all consulted, the holy See continued

some Time vacant. They were however forced to submit; and taking upon himself the Name of *Leo IX.* He endeavoured to root out SIMONY. he was installed at *Rome* in *February* 1049. The Character of this Pope which was truly apostolick drew great Numbers of Pilgrims to *Rome*: All whose Offerings, notwithstanding he found the papal Treasury quite empty, he applied to pious and charitable Uses. He declared all such Orders as appeared to have been obtained by Simony void; and held two Councils on Purpose to root out this cursed Evil which had brought so many Misfortunes upon the Church.

VICTOR II.
1054.

At the Death of *Leo* in the Year 1054 the *Roman* Clergy sent *Hildebrand* a Sub-deacon to choose some Person in *Germany* who was worthy to fill the holy Chair. As they found *Henry III.* would abate nothing of the Power reserved to the Emperors and always nominated a *German*, this was done for the sake of preserving the Appearance of a Right in them to choose a Pope which they never had formally given up: And as Churchmen make all Things give way to their Lust of Power, they did not scruple to give amongst other Reasons for their Conduct upon this Occasion one which reflected great Dishonour upon themselves; namely that there was not one amongst all the *Italian* Clergy fit to be a Pope. In an Assembly at *Mentz* the Election fell upon *Gebherdt* Bishop of *Eichtstedt* a near Relation of the Emperor's; and he was installed at *Rome* by the Name of *Victor II.*

STEPHEN IX.
1057.

Taking the Advantage of the Infancy of the Emperor *Henry IV.* the *Roman* Clergy ventured upon the Death of *Victor* in the Year 1057 to choose a Pope: And *Frederick* Abbot of *Mcunt Cassin* known afterwards by the Name of *Stephen IX.* was the Person fixed upon. This Pope being of the House of *Lorrain*, at that Time very powerful, was suspected of a Design to get the Imperial Dignity into his Family; and *Hildebrand*, whom we spoke of before, his Legate in *Germany* an artful Man had as it was supposed a secret Commission for managing this Affair: But the Shortness of his Life would not admit this or another Design he had of reconciling the *Greek* and *Latin* Churches to be carried into Execution.

Notwith-

Of the POPE'S DOMINIONS.

67

Notwithstanding an Order left by *Stephen*, that if he NICHOLAS died during the Absence of his Favourite Legate no Pope should be chosen till his Return to *Rome*, 1050. *John* Bishop of *Vulturni* who took the Name of *Benedict* was soon after his Death in the Year 1058 elected *Hilibrand* being on his Way to *Rome* when the News of this Election reached him he stopped at *Favenna*: And having whilst there obtained full Power for the Purpose from *Ceremonius* *Dionysius* and others, he caused *Gerard* Bishop of *Favenna* called afterwards *Nicholas II.* to be elected. The Approbation of the Imperial Court being obtained in his Favour he was conducted to *Rome* by *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorraine* in *January* 1059: And *Benedict*, who soon submitted, not only lost his new Dignity but was deprived of his Bishoprick and degraded. In the Time of *Nicholas* the *Normans*, who had established themselves in *Naples*, were upon consenting to pay an annual Tribute and swear Fealty to the Holy See confirmed in their Possessions there.

Upon the Death of this Pope in the Year 1061 the ALEXANDER *Roman* Clergy disagreed about choosing a Succesor for him; but at Length the Party of *Hilibrand* now Arch- II. 1061. deacon prevailed, and *Anselm* Bishop of *Lucca* was the Person fixed upon. He was installed under the Name of *Alexander II.* But as his Election had not been approved of by the Emperor *Henry IV.* it was in a Diet held by him at *Basil* declared void. *Cadulus* Bishop of *Parma* being at the same Time elected Pope, the Emperor in order to put him into Possession of the holy Chair marched in *April* 1062 at the Head of a powerful Army towards *Rome*: But after a Battle, in which many of the *Romans* were slain, *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorraine* and *Robert Guiscard* Duke of *Pouille* declared in Favour of *Alexander*. It being hereupon agreed to refer the Matter to a general Council forthwith to be held at *Mantua*, and the Election of *Cadulus* was unanimously condemned: He however to the Time of his Death insisted upon being the true Pope, and that the Title of Anti-Pope belonged to his Competitor. Although most of the Clergy who had opposed *Alexander* submitted to the Decision of the Council of *Mantua*, it was several Years after the Death of *Cadulus* before *Henry* Arch-

Archbishop of *Ravenna* and some others would acknowledge him.

GREGORY
VII. 1073.

He extends the
papal Power.

At the Death of *Alexander* in the Year 1073 the Election fell upon *Hildebrand*, who had so long engrossed the chief Management of the *Roman Church*. Some Bishops well acquainted with his intemperate Zeal and daring Temper represented to *Henry* the Necessity of setting it aside; but the civil Diffensions in *Germany* put this out of his Power. His Predecessors had for above 200 Years been meddling in the Affairs of Princes; but this Pope who took the Name of *Gregory VII.* was as some say the first who went so far as to depose them. Having first openly avowed that he had as Pope an inherent and absolute Power over all Sovereigns, he took it upon him to cite the Emperor to appear and answer for his Conduct at *Rome*. After several Citations all justly despised he proceeded to Excommunicate *Henry*; discharged his Subjects from their Allegiance; and declaring the Crown to be forfeited ordered them to choose a new Emperor. Some *German* were so weak as to obey him and *Rodolph* Duke of *Suabia* was elected Emperor; but *Henry* paid *Gregory* in his own Coin; for he deposed him and caused the Archbishop of *Ravenna* to be installed in the Year 1084 by the Name of *Clement III.* In a second Bull *Gregory* denounced the severest Vengeance against *Henry* both in this World and that to come, and appealed to God and *St. Peter* for the Justice of his Cause. He also by circular Letters exhorted the Rebels in *Germany* to be faithful to *Rodolph*, whom he assured of Success: And for some time kept up his Party in *Italy* by asserting that as his Cause was that of Heaven it must succeed. The Event shewed *Gregory* to be a lying Prophet; for notwithstanding the Assistance he had from *Naples* and *Tuscany* his Troops were defeated in *Lombardy*, and *Rodolph* was slain in a bloody Battle near *Naumburg*. In the Year 1084 the Emperor laid siege to the Castle *St. Angelo*, in which *Gregory* had shut himself up; but hearing that *Robert Guiscard* had at the earnest Solicitation of the Pope left his Son to carry on the War against *Alexis* Emperor of the East and was landed in *Naples*, he thought proper to retire. *Robert* finding upon his Arrival at *Rome* great Part of the Town in the Emperor's Interest he pillaged

pillaged it; and not only set the Pope at Liberty but reduced many Towns which had revolted from him to Obedience. *Gregory* after staying a little in *Rome* went to *Salernum*; and continued there with *Robert* his Protector until his Death in the Year 1085.

In this War *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorrain* sided with the Emperor; but *Matilda* his Wife Countess of *Tuscany* gave *Gregory* all the Assistance in her Power. After the Death of her Husband having no Children she annexed the Dominions of her Family to the See of *Rome*. These were enjoyed by different Popes above twenty Years; all which Time the War with the Emperor continued, whereby *Italy* as well as *Germany* was exposed to infinite Calamities, but at length *Frederick Barberossa* made himself Master of all that belonged to the holy See. Pope *Adrian IV.* cried out against this as a most impious Usurpation; but the Emperor paid no Regard to his Complaints: And when by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of *Venice* he consented to restore all that was included in *Charlemain's* Grant, he would hear nothing of parting with the Estates that belonged to *Matilda*.

Otho, whose Advancement to the Imperial Dignity was in a great Measure owing to the Intrigues of Pope *Innocent III.* promised to put him into the Possession of all the Estates which belonged to *Matilda*: But instead thereof he endeavoured to rob the holy See of its other Dominions. After calling upon him in vain to make good his Promise *Innocent* put *Frederick* King of *Sicily* Son of *Frederick Barberossa* upon asserting his Right to the Empire. As he knew the Countenance of *Innocent* would be of great Service to him this young Prince engaged to do every thing he desired: But being settled upon the Imperial Throne he followed the Example of *Otho* in taking from instead of restoring to the Church. In Revenge for this his Reign was all along disturbed with Insurrections, which the Popes *Honorius-III.* and *Gregory IX.* stirred up against him. *Frederick* died in the Year 1250; and *Conrade* his Son and Successor whom he had associated with him in the Government died four Years after. Some German Princes had at the Instigation of the Pope crowned *William* Count of *Holland*.

land as Emperor during the Life of *Frederick*. Upon his being slain in the Year 1256 *Richard Duke of Cornwall* and *Alphonso King of Castile* were by different Parties elected Emperors: But neither of these made his Election good, and *Germany* was for some time a Scene of the utmost Confusion.

The Emperor
RODOLPH is
reconiled to
the Ho'y See.

Rodolpb Count Hapsburg being at length elected Emperor he judged it proper to put an end to the Quarrel with the holy See; from which his Predecessors and the whole Empire had suffered so much. He fulfilled all the Promises of his Predecessors, and by several publick Acts disclaimed for himself and Successors in the most solemn Manner all Jurisdiction over the Territories belonging to the State of the Church. His Son *Albert* did the same; and the Example set by these two was followed by several succeeding Emperors.

Some States re-
united to the
Holy See.

Italy having been during these Troubles divided into the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines*, divers of the latter who adhered firmly to the Emperors made themselves Masters of divers Towns, and erected them into independent States: But as the Families who ruled over these petty States became extinct the Dutchies of *Urbino Ferrara* and some others were reunited to the State of the Church.

Having thus shewn how the Pope came into Possession of the Dominions he now rules over as Sovereign, we shall conclude this Chapter with describing them and mentioning the Interest of the holy See with Regard to other Powers.

Of the Domi-
nions of the
Ho'y See.

The Dominions of the holy See, which are comprised under the Name of the State of the Church, consist of the *Campagna of Rome*; *St. Peter's Patrimony*; the Dutchies of *Castro*, *Spoletto* and *Urbino*; the Marquisate of *Aucona*; the *Sabinese*; the *Romagnia* which comprehends the *Bolognese* and the Dutchy of *Ferrara*; the *Perrugin* and the *Orvietan*. The Dutchy of *Benevento* in *Naples*, and the County of *Avignon* in *France* do also belong to the Pope.

Interest of the
POPE with
regard to the
other Powers
of ITALY.

It in the general greatly concerns the Pope, who as his Forces are inconsiderable can gain nothing and may lose much by a War there, to preserve the Peace of *Italy*. If this cannot be done he should be very cautious of

being partial to one Power, lest he should thereby expose his Dominions to the Resentment of the other. With regard to *Naples*, *Venice* and *Tuscany*, his nearest Neighbours it would be absurd in him, whose Forces bear no Proportion to either of theirs, to break with any one of them. On the contrary as a superstitious Regard both for the Person and Dominions of the Pope prevails in all Catholick Countries, it is not probable that he should without some great Provocation be attacked by either of them.

It would be of dangerous Consequence to the holy *The TURKS*. See for the *Turks* to get footing in *Italy*: But as the Christian Powers in the general would in all Probability be for the hindering of this it is not much to be feared.

As the Emperors if they could make themselves absolute in *Germany* would it is likely renew their ancient Pretensions upon *Italy*, it is of great Importance to the See of *Rome* that the Constitution of the *German* Empire be preserved.

His Interest with Regard to *France* and *Spain* is that *FRANCE* and the Balance of Power be maintained betwixt them, and *SPAIN*. especially that neither of these becomes too powerful in *Italy*: For if either of them should become Master there his Power would undoubtedly be reduced to a mere Shadow.

C H A P. V.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

THE Pope besides being possessed of considerable Dominions in *Italy* pretends as Successor of *St. Peter* to be the supreme Head of *Christendom*, and is so acknowledged at least in spiritual Matters by all the Powers of *Europe* of the *Romish* Communion. As this spiritual Power produces strange Effects in many Courts, it is of Consequence to all who would form a right Judgment of Politicks to understand well its Origin, and by what Means it did arrive at so great a Pitch and is still preserved. An Enquiry into this Matter will at the same Time open to us a clear View of the Controversies which at this Time distract the Christian World; and enable us to judge how far it is probable that these will ever be ended.

State of Religion amongst the HEATHENS.

Before the Birth of JESUS CHRIST all the World except the *Jews* were under the grossest Ignorance as to divine Things. Some amongst the *Heathens* did indeed reason well concerning the nature of the human Soul and the Probability of a future State; but as what was commonly taught about these Things was mixed with much Fable and Absurdity, it could serve only to keep the Vulgar in Awe: And although the Practice of Virtue was inculcated; yet as the wisest amongst the *Heathens* had their Doubts as to the Certainty of a future State the Sanction of Rewards and Punishments was wanted. The Love of Virtue for its own Sake was and will always be sufficient to influence considerate Minds: But as much the greater Part of the *Heathens* could not see the Beauty thereof, they contented themselves with the Observation of insignificant or barbarous Ceremonies.

Amongst the JEWS.

The *Jews* were favoured with the Knowledge of the one true GOD, and had peculiar Revelations of his Will;

Will; but since the Divine Being did not see it fit to send Apostles endued with suitable Gifts to propagate the Jewish Religion this was confined to a Handful of People.

Leaving it to Divines to shew the Preference of Christianity to Judaism, we shall just mention some ^{Reasons for the} ^{Universality of} Reasons why without ascribing it entirely to Provi-CHRISTIANITY-
dence one should spread rather than the other. THEANITY.

Jews imagining themselves the only Favourites of Heaven despised all Mankind; whereas Christianity teaches universal Benevolence and that GOD is no Respector of this or that Nation. The many burthensome and expensive Ceremonies of Judaism gave the neighbouring Nations a Disgust thereto, nor could they bear the Thought of going to Jerusalem, at which Place only GOD was publickly to be worshiped, because they well knew the Incivility of the Jews to Strangers. Neither of these Objections lies against the spreading of Christianity; for although the publick Exercise of Religion cannot be without some Ceremonies none are insisted upon in the Gospel as absolutely necessary to Salvation: And so far from teaching that any particular Place of Worship is more acceptable to GOD it is therein promised, *That wherever two or three are gathered together in his Name he will grant their Requests.* The Doctrines of Christianity have no Tendency to disturb the Peace of Society but on the Contrary do promote this; nor do they contradict any Civil Laws except these are repugnant to the eternal and immutable ones of right Reason. As the Christian Religion does moreover teach a Man whether his Station be publick or private to act upon a conscientious Principle, it goes farther than any System of Religion or Philosophy ever did; for it lays him under an Obligation to Faithfulness in many Cases, which are not cognizable and consequently cannot be punishable by human Laws. For these and many other Reasons that might be given, it is of the utmost Consequence to every Sovereign who understands the Genius of Christianity and consults his own temporal Interest, although Motives of a higher Nature were out of the Question, to introduce and support it in his Dominions.

If

No Necessity
for any supreme
Head in relig-
ious Matters
except the Civil
Magistrate.

If this be true that all States would find it for their Interest to have Christianity established in them, it is next to be considered, whether it be necessary that the Supreme Power in religious Matters should in every State be in the Hands of the whole Body of the Clergy or of some of them independently of the Sovereign: Or that all States should in these Matters submit to one Supreme Head. Such a Necessity, if it does not exist, must arise from the Religion of Nature or from the particular Genius of a revealed Religion. It cannot arise from the Religion of Nature: Because it would be introducing a second independent Power in every State. As the Consequence of such a double Power must be perpetual Feuds betwixt Civil Magistrates and Church Governors, which would never end but in the Ruin of the one or the other, it cannot be founded in Reason, and of Course can be no Part of the Religion of Nature: For if Civil Government be reasonable, it is absurd to suppose that any other Power absolutely incompatible therewith is also reasonable. As to the Christian Religion in particular, since it does in every other Instance exalt the Doctrines of natural Religion, it would be strange that it should be in this essential Point contradictory thereto; and it is incumbent upon those, who contend for the Necessity of depriving the Civil Magistrate of the supreme Power in religious Matters, to shew a positive Command for this in the *New Testament*. Having premised thus much, we shall proceed to shew by what Means and Degrees a spiritual Monarchy has been established in the western Church.

CHRISTI-
ANITY em-
braced at first
by the lower
Sort of People.

The Apostles, who in pursuance of their Master's Order began immediately after his Ascension to preach the Gospel, being themselves of mean Estate found easiest Access to the lower Sort of People, and their first Converts must consequently have been amongst these. Although this may at first View seem a Reflexion upon Christianity, it does upon considering prove the internal Excellence thereof; which could without the Assistance of either powerful or learned Men make its Way in the World. It at the same Time delivers it from all Suspicion of having been a State Trick, and by comparing the disadvantageous Appearance of Christianity in the Hands of a few poor illiterate Fishermen with its vast and

and sudden Encrease, notwithstanding the great Opposition made thereto, we cannot but see the Hand of Providence accompanying it.

Christianity, which was first published in the Roman Empire, having made a considerable Progress amongst the common People the *Pharisees* amongst the *Jews* and the Priests amongst the *Heathens* soon discovered their Enmity thereto; because it struck at their Ambition and Interest: And as none amongst the Christians were capable or could have an Opportunity of representing their Doctrines fairly to those in Power, it is no wonder that the Emperors should be prejudiced by their Enemies against them. Some *Romans* of Eminence had no Aversion to Christianity, yet they thought it wrong to change the Religion under which the Empire had so long flourished. Others of a superstitious Turn imagined that the Declension of the Empire then visible was owing to the Resentment of the Gods; because their Altars were deserted by the Numbers who embraced Christianity. By the major Part the Christians were looked upon as Atheists, and being moreover suspected of a Design to overturn the established Religion a most cruel Persecution was set on Foot against them: And as they thought it their Duty to suffer any Punishment rather than renounce Christianity, their Adversaries who mistook this Constancy for Obstinacy tortured them as much as possible. *No Consequence*

In this Distress the Christians formed themselves into Societies for defending themselves; and instituted a Form of Church Government. Although the first of these was contrary to civil Policy and the latter was interfering in a Province which properly belonged to the civil Magistrate, both were at that Time since all Things must give way in some extreme Cases excusable; nor indeed could the Christians without sacrificing Conscience to temporary Quiet have acted otherways. As the civil Magistrate failed in his Duty, for had he examined fairly into the Truths of Christianity he would undoubtedly have embraced and made the necessary Regulations for the Exercise thereof, the Christians were under a Necessity of doing a Thing in the general unjustifiable: Yet it cannot be from thence fairly inferred, as it has by many been, that the civil Magistrate has no Right

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy:

Right to interpose in Ecclesiastical Affairs. It may be said that the civil Magistrate wants the necessary Qualifications for so doing; but what hinders him from delegating his Power to or acting by the Advice of such as are good Judges in this as well as in other Things? A Sovereign does not perhaps so well know how to pen an Act of Parliament as a Lawyer; but will any one say that he has not therefore a Power to make Laws? In short the Influence of Churchmen is always very great; and although many or perhaps the major Part of them would make no ill use of this; there will always be amongst them some of a busy, factious Spirit, and these will if possible engross all the Authority of their Body. It is therefore absolutely necessary for the Peace and Security of every State that they be kept under; nor can there be a single Instance produced from History, where a Power independent of the civil Magistrate has been long exercised by Churchmen without producing infinite Mischiefs.

*Reasons for
the Continu-
ance and En-
crease of this
Power.*

As it was some Time before any Emperor embraced Christianity, Bishops and other Ecclesiasticks had taken Care to encrease the Power which the Circumstances of the Times had made it necessary to lodge in them; and instead of taking this away *Constantine* and some of his Successors found it necessary for their own Security to keep fair with the Clergy, because these were held in great Veneration by the People now generally become Christians. To this it may be added, that as the first Christian Emperors had some Heathen Officers of State it was not fit to trust the Decision of Church Affairs to a Council whereof they were Members. For these Reasons the Manner of nominating to Bishopricks and other Benefices was not altered; and not only Matters of Faith but all Things which concerned the Government of the Church were left to the Decision of an Assembly composed of Churchmen only. This Neglect or Want of Power in the first Christian Emperors, to exercise that Right which is inherent in every Christian Prince of convening and presiding in General Councils, gave the Clergy an Opportunity of excluding them entirely from meddling in Church Affairs. As no Bishops had suffered so much in the three first Centuries from the Heathens as those of *Rome*, none in return were so much consulted or received so many Favours from the Emperors after their

their Conversion. Having by Degrees raised themselves above other Bishops, to which their being looked upon as Successors to *St. Peter* contributed not a little, they at last by the Connivance or Inattention of Emperors arrogated to themselves the Right of presiding in General Councils; and of determining concerning all Matters of Faith and Discipline: And they likewise assumed the supreme Jurisdiction in all spiritual Matters at least throughout Christendom.

The first Christians pursuant to *St. Paul's* prudent Advice, instead of carrying their Causes into a Heathen Court and thereby scandalizing their Religion which taught them to despise Riches, referred all Disputes to the Decision of Bishops. As this Custom was not abrogated a formal Jurisdiction, notwithstanding it became unnecessary when the secular Judges became Christians and interfered with the Pastoral Office, was still kept up by Bishops; and amongst other Powers this at length centered in the Bishop of *Rome*. If any Scruple arose concerning Proximity of Blood in such as intended to marry, or if any Difference happened betwixt married Persons, it was usual for the primitive Christians to submit in these Things to the Determination of their Priests; and when Nuptials were celebrated it was customary to have their Prayers and Benediction. Hence the Pope took the Pretence of bringing all Questions concerning Marriages and Divorces into his Courts; and to make the Usurpation go down the better with the People Marriage was reckoned amongst the Sacraments. Further the first Christians endeavoured to recommend their Religion to the Pagans by extraordinary Sanctity and Purity of Life, and made it a Matter of Conscience to abstain from some Vices not punishable by their Laws. Whenever the Life of a Christian was become notoriously scandalous he was enjoined Penitence or mulcted; and if he continued incorrigible the Church excommunicated him, after which no Person would keep him company. As they professed a new Religion this Punishment was then quite necessary, and it might still be of great Use under the Direction of the civil Magistrate: Provided it be confined to Immoralities, and Care be taken that it is not abused by the Clergy to the Gratification of their Resentment, Ambition or Avarice. The Power of Ex-

The Pope's Power was as if built upon Abuses of the Practices of the primitive Christians.

com-

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

communication at first lodged in the Body of the Christian Clergy came also in the Hands of the Bishop of *Rome*. How it has been perverted, even to the excommunicating and deposing of crowned Heads; to the absolving of Subjects from their Allegiance; and to the stirring of them up to fly in the Faces of their lawful Sovereigns; no one that is in the least acquainted with History can be ignorant. In the Eastern Church it was quite otherwise, the Clergy being there kept under a proper Subjection to the Emperors: Nor had the Bishop of *Constantinople* any Jurisdiction out of his own Diocese. Having thus traced the Origin of this unreasonable and quite new sort' of Monarchy, we shall next give some Account by what Arts and Accidents it has been carried to so great a Height and is still supported.

*It was much
increased by
the Ignorance
of the Times.*

The Ignorance which overspread the Western World upon the Declension of the western Empire contributed, for Ignorance does always serve the Cause of Superstition, to the Encrease of the Pope's spiritual Monarchy. These were a good deal owing to the Irruption of the Northern Nations; nor could it be expected that the Sciences, who are the Daughters of Peace, should flourish whilst this Part of the World groaned for two Ages under all the Misfortunes of War and Anarchy. It has too been affirmed and not without Reason that the Clergy were accessory to this Prevalence of Ignorance. As the Philosophers had whilst the Emperors were *Pagans* wrote and did still continue to write against Christianity; the Clergy instead of answering the Objections of these conceived an Aversion to Philosophy. The Study thereof was discouraged; and under an ill-grounded Apprehension that the Christian Church might be endangered by infecting young Minds with their Errors the reading of Pagan Authors in the Schools was prohibited. A Story was likewise trumped up that *St. Jerome* dreamed of being whipped by the Devil for reading the Works of *Cicero* too often: and about the Year 400 it was formally resolved in the Council of *Carthage*, that even a Bishop should not read any Book wrote by a Heathen. As the other Parts of Learning were moreover in these unhappy Times neglected by all except such as were intended for the Priesthood, it is not to be wondered at that it should end in almost universal Ignorance. Another and the principal Cause

Cause of the Increase of the Pope's Power was the false System of Policy at that Time prevailing: For if the Foundation, Nature and Excellency, of civil Government had been well understood, it must have been seen that the dividing of the supreme Power is always ruinous to any State. Out of too great a Fondness for Liberty it had been inadvertently asserted by some *Greek and Roman* Authors that the supreme Power could never be enough restrained. This Notion, to which the tyrannical Proceedings of some *Roman* Emperors had given rise, was industriously propagated by the Pope's Emissaries; and by a strange Sort of Reasoning it was inferred, without considering the pernicious Consequences of such Inference, that the exalting of the Pope's Authority would by lessening that of crowned Heads be serviceable to Subjects. There cannot be a stronger Proof of such Doctrine's having been then taught, than that even in this enlightened Age the Principles of true Policy are entirely suppressed or greatly disguised, for the sake of hiding their Inconsistency with the Pope's Authority, in all Catholick Schools.

It is likely that *Rome* was fixed upon for the Pope's *How ROME* Residence; because it was the Metropolis of the *Roman* became the Seat Empire and the Place where *Christianity* first spread itself there. The Pretence of its being because *St. Peter* was Bishop there will appear frivolous to such as know, that when *Constantinople* or *New Rome* became the Seat of Empire and had eclipsed *Old Rome* the Bishops thereof claimed Precedency of the Bishops of *Rome*.

The Clergy instead of laying aside their Hierarchy, *No just Ground* which as Persecution ceased upon *Constantine's* embracing for the Power *Christianity* became unnecessary, took the Advantage of *claimed by the* the Repose the Church enjoyed under him, who was *Pope* changed from a most violent Enemy to a great Bigot to *Christianity*; and under the Pretence of preserving wholesome Order in the Church new modelled it. Bishops, who exercised a Power over the inferior Clergy in their respective Dioceses, were for the most Part subordinate to the Bishop of the Capital in every Province. The latter were at first called Metropolitans; but about the End of the eight Century they took the Name of Archbishops. Four of these were on the account of their Residence in the four principal Cities of the *Roman* Empire, namely

Of the POPE'S Spiritual Monarchy.

namely *Rome, Constantinople, Antioch* and *Alexandria*, distinguished by the Name of *Patriarchs*; and the Archbishop of *Jerusalem* was afterwards by Reason of the ancient Holiness of this City added to their Number. The Emperor *Phocas* being displeas'd with the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, because as it is said he had reprov'd him for the Murder of the Emperor *Mauritius*, did indeed give the Pre-eminence to the See of *Rome*, and there-upon *Boniface III.* took the Title of *Oecumenical Bishop*; but this Pre-eminence could imply no more than bare Precedence, and the other Patriarchs were far from submitting to his Jurisdiction. Long before this, for the Bishops of *Rome* had been for a great while aiming at universal Power, one of them founding his Right on a strained Sense of a Canon made by the Council of *Nice* did pretend to lay Injunctions upon the *African* Bishops; but the latter refused to obey these and sent him back a very smart Answer. Upon the whole there does not appear to be the least Mark of divine Appointment in the Power claimed by the Pope; nor is there any stronger Reason for the Bishop of *Rome* to stand first in the List of Patriarchs than for him of *Antioch* to stand third. Admitting that any Emperor had ever so clearly granted an independent spiritual Jurisdiction in the Empire to the See of *Rome*, as this was a sort of Treaty made by a particular State, perhaps for the Sake of having the Pope's Advice in Church Matters, it might whenever it became prejudicial to this State be annul'd; and there is no Pretence that it should be binding upon any other. Admitting also that some Christian Princes have been deceived by Misrepresentations thereof, or have been influenced by blind Zeal, to suffer such a Jurisdiction to be exercis'd in their Dominions, they have an undoubted Right to shake it off again as soon as ever it is found to be inconsistent with the publick Good.

Arts and Accidents by which the Pope's Power has been extended.

The Extension of the Bishop of *Rome's* Power through the Western World was by Degrees; no Arts having been untried nor Accidents unimproved that could be serviceable thereto: But as it is unnecessary and would be tedious to mention all these we shall confine ourselves to some of the principal ones. Changing the Imperial Residence may be reckon'd one favourable Accident for the Extension thereof. Had this continued at *Rome* its Bishops would

would probably have been kept under, for the Bishops of *Constantinople* who were without doubt equally ambitious could never throw off their Dependence upon the Eastern Emperors. Another Accident was the Declension of the Western Empire: For as the Bishops of *Rome* had had the chief Hand in converting the barbarous Nations who overran this Empire to the Christian Faith, these Nations thought themselves obliged to pay a more than ordinary Regard to the See of *Rome*. About the Beginning of the fifth Century it was common for all new Bishops to visit the Tombs of *St. Peter* and *Paul* at *Rome*. This at first a voluntary Compliance with the Superstition of the Times was afterwards looked upon as necessary, and paved the Way for its being insisted upon by the Bishop of *Rome*, that all other Bishops ought to receive Confirmation from him. As Christianity spread itself the Bishops of new erected Sees frequently consulted the Head *Roman* Church; and as this was the most ancient Christian Church his Explications of Canons and Customs were generally approved of. The Bishops of *Rome* perceiving this soon took upon them to send Decrees unasked all over the *Christian* World; and pretended to a Right of making and enforcing Obedience to Ecclesiastical Laws. Under the same Pretence they set themselves up for Judges of the Quarrels and Crimes of other Bishops; and they frequently deposed such whose Ordination was in their Opinion uncanonical, except they could pay for a Dispensation. If a Person had lost his Cause in the Court of his own Sovereign he would frequently appeal to the Pope, and was sure of meeting with Favour in his Court; because his Authority was not only thereby acknowledged but Money was brought into his Coffers. Historians say, that when *Arles* was made an Archbishoprick by the Emperor *Honorius* the Pope, for fear the Emperor should erect a Patriarchate in *France*, made its Archbishop Vicar General of this Kingdom; and that he foolishly preferred this subordinate Authority over the seventeen Provinces of which *France* was then composed to the being an independent Master of seven.

In the eighth Century, the Behaviour of the Monks and other Clergy being grown notoriously infamous, an English Friar named *Winifred* called afterwards *Boniface* out

BONIFACE
contributes
much to the In-
crease thereof.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

of his great Zeal set about the reforming of their Manners. This Man, who was entirely devoted to the Interest of *Rome*, having been instrumental in establishing Christianity in several Parts, he was made Vicar General of these Parts by *Gregory III.* and in order to procure him all possible Authority he was recommended in a particular Manner by the same Pope to *Charles Martel* Mayor of the Palace in *France*. In several Councils held by *Boniface* in *Germany* and *France* he prevailed upon the Clergy not only to declare their Assent to the Catholick Faith, but to acknowledge themselves subject to the Bishop of *Rome* as Successor of *St. Peter*. Some *German* and *French* Bishops being also persuaded by him to go and receive the Episcopal Pall from *Gregory*, he by Degrees insisted upon the Necessity of all Bishops having this Ornament; and they were forbid to exercise any Function of a Bishop until they had received it. Popes did afterwards take upon them to allow Bishops to change their Sees; and established the Custom for Bishops on their Confirmation to pay Sums of Money to the See of *Rome* under the Denomination of First fruits. It being found that the Sentences of Provincial Synods were frequently and without giving any Reason for it annulled by Popes, the Custom of holding them was by Degrees dropt; and at last Pope *Gregory VII.* compelled all Bishops to take an Oath of Allegiance to the See of *Rome*. A Decree was also published by him, which forbid all sorts of Persons to give Judgment in any Case where any Party had appealed to *Rome*: And Nuncios or Legates were sent all over the Western Part of the *Christian* World, to exercise in the Pope's Name that Authority which formerly belonged to Bishops, Metropolitans and Provincial Synods.

Arts by which the Revenue of the Church and the Number of Churchmen were increased.

The alluring Prospect of living easily and plentifully had so multiplied the Number of Ecclesiasticks, that the large Revenue of the Church, notwithstanding the vast Increase thereof by the Liberality of Princes and other well disposed Christians, was insufficient for their Maintenance. Instead of wholesome Laws to prevent so many who might in some other Way have served the Publick from entering into the Church, all Ways were contrived by the Pope to empty the Purses of the Laity for

for their Support; because he well knew that as their Number did his Power would encrease. With a View to this a Custom of selling Masses, Dispensations, Indulgences and other Things of this kind was introduced; and as dying Men are generally indifferent about worldly Goods Ecclesiastical Harpies' frequently prevailed upon them, by insinuating that GOD would be thereby well-pleas'd, to rob their Families for the sake of giving to the Church. As they never neglect any thing that can make for their Interest Popes reaped vast Advantages from the superstitious Fondness for Crusades, which prevailed in the eleventh and twelfth Centuries. Under the Pretence of taking them under the Protection of the Pope all who engaged in these Expeditions were exempted upon paying a round Sum from all civil Jurisdiction. The Nuncios of the Pope did likewise pretend to an exclusive Right of collecting and disposing of the Alms given for the carrying on of these; and under the Pretence of applying them to this Use the Estates of such as he was pleas'd to call Hereticks or Schismaticks were confiscated by the Pope's Order, without so much as asking the Sovereign's Consent under whom they lived. The Wealth of the Church being by these and other Artifices vastly encreas'd, the Number of such as desired Preferments increas'd also; nor as it put them into a Condition of living well without taking any Pains were any deterred by the Injunction of Celibacy, which was laid upon the Clergy in the eleventh Century, from entering into the Ecclesiastick State. The Number of Monks was likewise encreas'd by the Superstition, Avarice or Ambition, of many Parents: Who thinking to do GOD Service or hoping thereby to provide for them, and so to prevent the Decline of their Families by dividing their Estates, forced their younger Sons into Convents. In order to make room for Churchmen Cathedrals had besides proper Priests for performing divine Service each a Chapter of Canons, and many new Convents were founded. Thus Monasteries, at first erected in Times of Persecution for the Reception of such as devoted themselves to religious Exercises, and in which the Members who observ'd a very severe Discipline contented themselves with the most ordinary

Of the P O P E's Spiritual Monarchy.

Fare, were filled with Persons drawn thither by the Prospect of faring well and living idly. The Religious Houses, numerous as they were now become, being insufficient to contain all who offered themselves, a new Order called *Mendicants* was instituted about the thirteenth Century. Two Purposes were hereby answered: It was capable being confined to no Number of receiving all; and as the Persons of this Order pretended to a more than ordinary Sanctity, and to depend entirely for Subsistence on the Charity of well disposed Christians, many bestowed Alms upon these who being scandalized at the luxurious and riotous Lives of Monks would never have given any Thing to a religious House. Some without Doubt and such were to be pitied entered into this Order with a Design of rendering themselves by the Austerity it enjoined more acceptable to GOD: But the vast Increase thereof was owing to Pride; for although it may at first Sight appear strange, there is as much Pride in affecting to be distinguished by a poor, sordid, begging Condition as by an Affluence of Fortune.

MONKS contribute greatly to the Advancement of the Power of ROME.

Monks being as submissive to their Superior as private Soldiers are to their Colonel, the Pope had nothing to do but bring its Head into his Views and every Convent was a sort of Regiment at his Call. It having been found by playing them off, if the Interest of Rome required it, against the secular Clergy as well as against the Laity that they were of great Service to the Holy See, Monks were towards the End of the thirteenth Century encouraged by the Pope to throw off all Obedience to their Diocesans, and to put themselves under his immediate Protection. This Point being gained Popes in the Quarrels which from Time to Time arose between different Orders, as for Instance between the *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, always took Care to carry it with so even a Hand that one could not oppress the other; and as neither could complain of Partiality both were thereby kept firm in their Interest. By Degrees Monks engrossed Alms and Legacies and interfered in other Things to the great Prejudice of the secular Clergy. This of course drew upon them the Envy and Hatred of Bishops, whose Interest was strongly connected with that of the secular Clergy; but being assured of the Pope's Countenance these

these were not regarded. Whenever any Bishop disputed the Authority of a Pope, Monks like so many Bull-dogs were set upon him : and the People deluded by their Hypocrisy commonly sided with them. They besides kept a watchful Eye over the Behaviour of Bishops, and constantly informed the Generals of their respective Orders who resided at *Rome* thereof; so that before any Scheme to throw off his Authority could be brought to Maturity the Pope had Time to take his Measures. At length, and especially as some Bishops from corrupt Views preferred the Jurisdiction of one of their own Order to that of the Civil Magistrate, it was found impracticable to stem the Torrent : And all Thoughts of reviving their Independency on the See of *Rome* were laid aside by Bishops. It however ought to be remembered that many, and particularly of those on this Side the *Alps*, were 'all along very impatient under the Pope's Yoke ; and the *French* and *Spanish* Bishops took great Pains to have it decreed in the Council of *Trent*, that Bishops are by divine Appointment obliged to reside constantly upon their Sees. As the Consequence of this would have been, that is not only unnecessary but contrary to the Command of God for them to go to *Rome* upon any Pretence, no such Decree was made : But it is not probable that any more General Councils will be held ; for as it cost great Pains to get over this Difficulty, no Pope will choose to run the Hazard of having his Authority limited in such another Assembly. They are besides unnecessary, if a Doctrine first broached by the Jesuits that the Pope is infallible be true ; and whether it be or not, as it prevails so generally, no Bishop will think it prudent, without being assured of Support from some powerful Prince, to attempt the freeing of himself from Subjection to the See of *Rome*.

The vast Encrease of Ecclesiasticks and the immense Riches of the Church would however have never been sufficient of themselves to have established such a spiritual Monarchy as was aimed at. To do this effectually, it was necessary that the Pope should possess whose Revenue should be sufficient to support his Grandeur ; and which being exempt from the Jurisdiction of all temporal Princes might serve as a Sanctuary for his

By what Means the Pope became independent of the Eastern Empire.

Adherents upon all Occasions. Whilst the Western Empire lasted or the *Goths* were Masters in *Italy* the Pope could not acquire any Dominions. The Power of the latter being ruined by *Justinian* all *Italy* became a Province to the Emperors of the *East*: But by the ill Conduct of the Exarchs of *Ravenna*, to whom the Government of *Italy* was committed, their Authority soon began to decline. An Irruption being not long after made by the *Lombards* these, as the Emperors such was the Confusion and Division in the Empire could send no considerable Force against them, easily became Masters of great Part of *Italy*; which together with the Quarrel betwixt Pope *Gregory* and the Emperor *Leon Isaurus* furnished the Popes with the Opportunity they had long wished for of throwing off all Subjection to the Eastern Empire. The Veneration for Images having by Degrees degenerated into Idolatry this Emperor caused them to be pulled down in *Constantinople*, and ordered the same to be done in *Rome* and other Parts of *Italy*: But as all Superstition is serviceable to the Cause of Priestcraft, and this was besides profitable to the *Roman Chair*, *Gregory* who then filled it would hear nothing of demolishing Images. Things were in the End carried so far that the Pope for his own Safety found it necessary to stir up a Rebellion against *Leon* in *Italy*; and the Exarch of *Ravenna* being slain in a Tumult an End was put to the Power of the Eastern Emperors in *Italy*.

The POPE
in great Dan-
ger from the
LOMBARDS.

By this Means *Gregory* got rid of the Emperor's Jurisdiction; which whatever he might give out of the Usefulness of Images in order to amuse and work up the Populace to his Purpose was without Doubt his principal View: But a Storm soon threatened him from another Quarter. The King of *Lombardy*, who endeavoured to subdue all that had revolted from the Empire, had after taking *Ravenna* and other Places laid Siege to *Rome*. In this Distress *Gregory* implored the Aid of *France*; and by the Interposition of this Court the *Lombard* was prevailed upon to desist, *Rome* being afterwards again attacked and reduced to the greatest Extremity by the *Lombards*, *Zachary* Successor to *Gregory* besought a second time the Assistance of the *French*; and in order to obtain it approved of the deposing of *Chil-derick*

derick in favour of *Pepin*, whose Ancestors had for several Reigns engrossed all Authority in *France*.

After several Defeats the Kingdom of *Lombardy* was entirely conquered by *Pepin*; and that Part which formerly composed the Exercate was given to the See of *Rome*. By this Liberality *Pepin* not only rewarded *Zachary* for his Services in bringing the *French* Crown into his Family, but he had at the same Time an Opportunity of shewing without any Expence to himself his Zeal for the Church; and all Ecclesiasticks the most proper Instruments for the carrying on of his ambitious Designs were hereby secured to his Interest. These extravagant Grants put the Pope, who feared that the Successors of *Pepin* would some time or other resume them, upon endeavouring to make himself independent; and it is said by some learned and impartial Historians that he soon began to play the Sovereign. This Conduct being quite new and looked upon as inconsistent with the Character of a Bishop the People refused to submit to him; but upon the coming of *Charlemain* to his Assistance they were forced to do it. *Charlemain* was whilst at *Rome* proclaimed Emperor by Pope *Leo III.* and the People of *Rome*; and he was besides honoured with the Title of Patron or Protector of the Church. He soon after made himself Master of all *Italy*; but his Father's Donation of that Part which formerly belonged to the Exercate was confirmed to the Pope.

As the supreme Jurisdiction was however reserved to the Emperor and his Successors, and the Consent of the reigning Emperor was necessary to make the Election of a Pope valid, the Pope repented of having put themselves under his Protection. To get rid of this Subjection no Arts were left untried, nor did Popes stick at exciting Insurrections sometimes in *Germany* at other Times in *Italy*: Hoping by lessening the Emperor's Power to pave the Way for it, and the *German* Bishops for the most Part came into their Schemes. The Reign of *Henry IV.* whose Debaucheries and imprudent Management had irritated and embroiled him with the States of *Germany*, being thought a proper Time for compleating this long projected Design, *Gregory VII.* alias *Hildebrand* at that Time in Possession of the Holy

Chair, a cunning, proud and enterprizing Man began with declaring, that the Emperor by selling some Bishoprick to such as were unqualified or of infamous Characters had forfeited his Right of Collating to Bishopricks. The Emperor refused to give up this Right; but being excommunicated and a strong Party being raised against him by the Intrigues of *Hildebrand*, he was in the End forced to do it. After gaining this Point he was not content with exempting Bishops and other Ecclesiasticks from the Emperor's Jurisdiction, but he immediately set about the erecting of a Sovereignty in *Italy*: And it has been thought that, considering the Superstition of the Times and the divided State. *Europe* was then in, it would have been, if *Gregory* had been succeeded by three or four such Popes as himself, no hard Matter for them to have established an absolute and universal Sovereignty in Temporals as well as Spirituals. Having thrown off all Subjection to the Emperor *Gregory* soon wanted to be his Master; and pretending to a Power of judging betwixt him and his Subjects summoned him to appear and answer to their Complaints at *Rome*. No Regard being paid to this Summons he dared to excommunicate *Henry*; and declaring him unworthy of the Imperial Dignity encouraged his Subjects to rebel against and depose him. The next Emperor *Henry V.* used all his Endeavours to regain the Power his Father had lost, and having seized Pope *Pascal* forced him to come to Terms: But an Outcry being hereupon raised against him by the Clergy all over *Europe* his Subjects flew in his Face, and he found it necessary for the sake of restoring Tranquility in his Dominions to give up formally in the Year 1122 the Right of Collating to Bishopricks.

Disputes with
ENGLAND
and FRANCE.

Much about the same Time a Dispute arose on the same Subject with the King of *England*; which ended in this Prince's renouncing the Right of Collating to Bishopricks; yet the Bishops were to do him Homage. As the Pope's Aim was to have Bishops quite exempt from Submission to temporal Princes this did not satisfy, and the *French* Bishops were expressly forbid to do Homage to the King of *France*: But as he insisted that they should, the Pope did not care to have upon his Hands at the same

Time

Time a Quarrel with the Emperor and the King of France. It was also more for his Interest to weaken the Power of the Emperor than that of the King of France; for while the former continued to be powerful in Italy it was impossible for the Pope to establish the intended independent Sovereignty there. The Empire being moreover divided into many Principalities, its Members for ever jealous of the Emperor's becoming too powerful were easily brought into the Pope's Views; and the specious Pretence of protecting the Holy See was always sufficient to captivate vulgar Minds.

The Emperors Frederick I. and Frederick II. did in-ITALY divided deed attempt to re-establish the Imperial Authority over into GUELPHS the Popes; but it was all in vain, and Italy divided on and GIBEL- this Occasion into the Factions of Guelphs and Gibelines LINES. suffered for a long Time great Ravages. As Germany was after the Death of Frederick II. thrown into the utmost Confusion and a long Interregnum followed, the Pope had a fair Opportunity to exercise sovereign Power over the State of the Church; and the succeeding Emperors, besides being warned by what their Predecessors had suffered in quarreling with Popes, had Business enough upon their Hands to support themselves in Germany without meddling with the Affairs of Italy.

A Doctrine of a most dangerous Nature and extensive The POPE af- in its Consequences was soon after advanced; namely jumes the Su- that all temporal Powers were subject to the See of Rome. periority over It was not indeed said in express Terms that Princes all temporal were subject to the Pope in Civil Matters; -but that as Princes. supreme Head of the Church he had a Power to judge of their Actions, and in Consequence thereof to admonish, reprove, command or forbid, as he saw it necessary. When any of them were at War the Pope would take upon him to order a Suspension of Arms, and that the Matter should be referred to him; threatening at the same Time to excommunicate that Prince who would not abide by his Determination, and to put his Dominions under an * Interdict. Under the Pretence moreover of its being his Duty to redress Grievances and see Justice done throughout Christendom, Subjects were encouraged to ap-

* By this the Exercise of divino Service and the Administration of the Sacraments were forbid.

peal to him when they imagined themselves injured by their Sovereigns; and the latter were sometimes forbid to levy any Tax on Pain of Excommunication. By the Fear of this, which commonly declared their Dominions forfeited and absolved their Subjects from all Oaths of Allegiance, many crowned Heads were kept in Awe: And some who would not submit to the Pope's Usurpation were after seeing their Country laid waste by civil War actually deposed or assassinated. In order to support so monstrous a Power the Ignorant were deceived with forged Decretals: Upon which a new Canon Law was built. By this an unlimited Power was given to the Pope as universal Father over all Christians; and it was insisted that, although some of the Predecessors of *Gregory* had not exercised it, such a Power was always inherent in and inseparable from the See of *Rome*. Amongst other Instances of the Exercise of this unlimited Power, the Deposing of *Wamba* by the Bishops of *Spain* and that of *Lewis* the Good by the *French* Bishops were mentioned: And as the Deposing of Kings had never been expressly forbid by Canons, Councils or Decretals, it was by a strange kind of Logick inferred that it did extend so far. As some Princes had either upon Principles of Ambition or Superstition demeaned themselves so far as to beg of or accept from the Pope the Title of King, it was imagined that he had a Right to give and take away Crowns. It being moreover forbid to marry within the fourth Degree of Affinity and the seventh of Consanguinity Princes, who generally were within these Degrees, had frequent Need of Dispensations from the Pope: And he knew how to make his Advantage in every such Case. To add one thing more, as *Rome* was now become the Theatre of Business the greatest Genius's of all Nations resorted thither to study Politics; and as their Advancement in their own Courts depended in a great Measure upon the Pope's Recommendation they commonly adhered firmly to his Interest, and were sure of being backed by the Clergy. The Way thereto being sufficiently cleared by these and such like Arts and Accidents, Pope *Boniface VIII.* made no Scruple to let the World see, by shewing himself to the People at the Jubilee in the Year 1300 sometimes in the

Habit

Habit of an Emperor and sometimes in that of a Pope, that nothing short of Supremacy in civil as well as spiritual Matters would satisfy the See of Rome.

This intolerable Power of Popes was however often *The Authority* called in Question, and they were sometimes prevented *of the POPE* from exercising it. They did as it has been observed *declines.* entirely get the upper Hand of the Emperors; but when *Boniface VIII.* would have played the same Game in *France* he found himself mistaken. In order to satisfy the common People, who would have been scandalized thereat, *Philip the Handsome* declared that his severe Proceedings against this Pontiff were not against the Vicar of JESUS CHRIST, but against a wicked Fellow who had by unjust Means thrust himself into the Holy Chair: And he insisted upon the Necessity of calling a general Council to deliver the Church from his Oppressions. The Schisms which followed hurt the Pope's Authority still more. As the Cardinals did not always agree there was sometimes a double Election: Which not only shewed that the Holy Spirit had no Hand in choosing Popes: But the two Persons chosen after reciprocally abusing and excommunicating each other were for the most Part glad to implore the Aid of temporal Princes, whose Power had been before trampled upon.

About the Year 1130 *Innocent II.* and *Anaclete* were *Schisms in the* both chosen at the same Time. The first was indeed *Church.* more generally acknowledged; but the last was supported by the King of *Sicily* and the Duke of *Aquitaine*: And after his Death *Victor*, who accommodated Matters with and abdicated in Favour of *Innocent*, was elected by the Party of *Anaclete*. After the Death of *Adrian IV.* two Popes were again chosen *Alexander III.* and *Victor IV.* *France, England* and *Sicily*, joined with the former: The latter was supported by the Emperor and approved of by the Clergy of *Rome*. After the Death of *Victor* his Friends elected three others successively: But *Alexander* survived them all. All these Popes, who never ceased to revile and excommunicate each other, were forced to carry it very submissively to the Princes who protected them. Another Schism, and the greatest that ever happened, was occasioned by a double Election upon the Death of *Gregory IX.* During this which lasted

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy:

lasted near forty Years one Pope supported by *France, Scotland, Spain, Savoy and Naples*, held his Court at *Avignon*; the other, to whom all the rest of Christendom adhered; resided at *Rome*. As both Sides boasted of the Number of Saints which had by Revelations or Miracles declared their Approbation of any new Election, and nothing was to be seen but the reviling and excommunicating of each other by the two Competitors, some cool-headed People proposed in a general Council held at *Constance* for terminating this Affair the deposing of the two Rivals; and a new Pope was chosen. The last Schism in the Year 1433 arose because *Eugene IV.* deposed by the Council of *Basil* would not give Place to *Felix V.* appointed to succeed him. *Nicholas V.* being chosen after the Death of *Eugene* in the Year 1438, *Felix* for the sake of Peace and the advantageous Terms offered him desisted from his Pretensions.

The Power of ROME hurt by the Removal of the papal Residence. By these Schisms Popes were exposed to Contempt, and as the Authority of General Councils was made Use of to bridle that of Popes it suffered much; but the removing of the papal Residence from *Rome* to *Avignon* by *Clement V.* gave the greatest Shock thereto. This, which was done at the Instance of *Philip the Handsome King of France*, being looked upon by him as the most proper Expedient to render the Excommunication of himself by *Boniface VIII.* ineffectual: And it was judged that as *Frenchmen* would generally be raised to the Cardinalship whilst the Pope resided in *France*, there would be no Likelihood of any Excommunication of a King of *France* for the future. The *French* at that Time thought this which lasted above seventy Years a vast Thing; because the Pope was all this Time very little more than their Tool: But it has been since confessed that it was a great Expence to their Court, and that it served only to introduce amongst them Simony, and a certain unnatural Vice which is not fit to be named. However this was it very much hurt the papal Power: For as this was in a great Measure founded upon an Excellency and particular Sanctity supposed to be conveyed to the See of *Rome* by *St. Peter*, it became a Doubt with many how these could be transferred to *Avignon*. As *Frenchmen* were besides more curious to pry

pry into, and forward to expose the Failings of Popes than *Italians*, their Reputation and consequently their Authority suffered by this Removal of their Residence. The Revenue of the Church suffered likewise thereby: For as the Factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* still continued, and every *Italian* State had been since the Imperial Power was ruined in *Italy* endeavouring to make itself as independent and powerful as possible, the Advantage of the Pope's Absence was taken by some to seize such Parts of the State of the Church as lay convenient for them. At the Persuasion of the *Florentines* many Cities banished the Legates of the Pope, and withdrawing their Submission from him were governed by petty Sovereigns of their own. Some Parts thereof being also granted by the Emperor *Lewis the Bavarian*, who claimed the whole as a Fief of the Empire, to such as sided with him in his War with the Pope the State of the Church was much lessened: And it cost many Years to reannex all that was lost in these confused Times to the Dominions of the Holy See.

The City of *Rome* being reduced to the Pope's Obé-*Intrigues of*
 dience *Boniface IX.* caused the Castle of *St. Angelo*, by *ALEXANDER*
 which it has been since kept in Awe, to be built about *IV. in Favour*
 the Year 1393: And great Part of the State of the *of CESAR*
 Church came again under Subjection to the See of *Rome* *BORGIA his*
 during the Popedom of *Julius II.* Being ambitious of *natural Son.*
 making him the greatest Prince in *Italy*; *Alexander VI.*
 put his natural Son *Cesar Borgia* upon subduing those
 Princes who had made themselves Masters of any Part
 of the State of the Church; and promised to confirm
 his Conquests to himself and Descendants. By Force
 and Treachery this was in a great Measure effected;
 for he stuck at nothing, alledging that whatever he did
 must be right since he had his Father's Orders for it,
 who being under the Direction of the HOLY GHOST
 could not err. Upon the Failure of Money to pay his
 Troops it was agreed by the Pope and him to poison
 some of the richest Cardinals at an Entertainment; but
 the Servant having by Mistake given them the poisoned
 Liquor intended for the others *Alexander* died in a few
 Hours, and although *Borgia* did by the Help of sudorick
 Medicines survive it his Constitution was much hurt.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

As *Borgia* could not get a Pope favourable to his Project chosen it was at an End: And *Julius II.* who in a few Weeks succeeded *Pius III.* the immediate Successor of *Alexander* being his deadly Enemy, all he had conquered was taken from him and he was forced to save himself by Flight. In the Time of *Julius* all the rest that formerly belonged to the See of *Rome*, except the Dutchy of *Ferrara* which became subject to the Pope upon the Failure of the House of *Este* about the End of the sixteenth Century, was likewise restored thereto: And he had a great Hand in preventing the *French* from making themselves Masters of *Italy*.

LUTHER
gives a great
Blow to the
papal Power.

The papal Power was now not only reestablished but carried further than ever, all the western World except the *Waldenses* in *France* and a few *Hussites* in *Bohemia* having submitted to the Authority of *Rome*: When all of a sudden and from a most inconsiderable Accident an Opposition thereto arose, which ended in the Revolt of great Part of *Europe*; and the Pope, who was just before in the Meridian of his Power, did in a short Time lose a great Part thereof, and was in Danger of losing it all. We shall consider only how far human Means were therein concerned, for the Wisdom and Providence of God are rather in our Opinion to be adored with all Humility and Admiration than to be curiously pried into; nor can the Saying of *Tacitus* be ever more aptly applied than here: *Abdito Numinis Sensus exquirere illicitum, anceps, nec ideo Assquare*; in other Words, *It is unlawful to search into the secret Designs of God, and as these are inscrutable they ought not even to be guessed at.* *Leo X.* was of a courteous Disposition, very generous to Men of Learning and Integrity, and would if he had been tolerably well skilled in Divinity, or had shewn the least Regard for Piety, have passed for a pretty good Pope. Having by Acts of Liberality and Magnificence drained his Coffers he was advised by *Cardinal Pucci* to raise Money by selling Indulgences. These, by which the Dead as well as the Living were absolved, and the People were allowed to eat Flesh on Days of Abstinence and indulged in many other Things, were sent all over *Europe* in great Quantities: And a Price was fixed upon them. As all the Money raised by the Sale thereof in
Saxony

Saxony was granted to *Magdalen Sifter* to the Pope, she in order to make the most thereof appointed *Archimbald* a Bishop by Habit and Title, but as well versed in the tricking Part of Trade as a *Genoese*, to manage for her. It, had formerly been the Custom in Saxony for the *Augustines* to publish all Indulgences; but the Agents of *Archimbald*, who as they paid him large Sums for being employed were resolved to get what they could by it, suspecting that these being versed in the thing might over-reach them chose to make use of the *Dominicans*: Who for the Sake of recommending themselves to the Agents never ceased to preach up the vast Benefits of Indulgences. As the *Augustines* were disgusted at losing what had been very profitable to their Order, and all considerate People were scandalized at this monstrous Traffick, one of them named *Luther* determined to write against it. Having after mature Deliberation published ninety-five Positions concerning this Matter at *Wittemberg*, these were answered by *John Tezel* a *Dominican* at *Frankfort*. *Luther* defended his Propositions and *John* replied; but as the former besides having both Reason and Scripture of his Side was the more able Disputant, the *Dominican* appealed to the Authority of the Pope and the Church. This made it necessary for *Luther* to examine into the Foundation of the Pope's Authority, and in what State the Church then was. In the Course of this Examination great Errors and Abuses were discovered; the Tricks and scandalous Lives of Monks and Priests were brought to Light; and in order to secure to himself the Assistance of temporal Princes he took Care to explain the Nature and Extensiveness of civil Power, and to shew in what Manner it had been encroached upon by Churchmen. A very considerable Party was immediately formed in Favour of *Luther*: But in order to conceive how so great a Blow could be given to the See of *Rome* by a poor Friar, it will be proper to consider the Circumstances of the Times.

As it was not expected that he would fall off from the Pope, nor perhaps he did not think at first of so doing, many Divines, some Cardinals, and *George Duke of Saxony*, pleased with the Justice of his Cause and his Manner of defending it, sided with him; and the Emperor *Maximilian*

Of the P O P E's Spiritual Monarchy.

as it is reported said he ought to be protected, for that he might be very useful: Nor had he whilst he confined himself to the writing against the Abuse of Indulgences any Enemies, except those Monks whose Interest was at Stake. These did indeed raise a great Clamour against him: But their Malice unsupported by Argument encreased instead of lessening his Party. The Christian World was moreover at this Time in a miserable Condition. What was called Divinity was meer Chicanery or Sophistry, new and absurd Propositions being every Day advanced in the Schools; and the Clergy of all Degrees had by lording it over Mens Consciences rendered themselves hated and despised. The turbulent Humour, Infidelity and Ambition, of the two last Popes were not forgot. Bishops were in the general without either Integrity or Learning; and the inferior Clergy besides being grossly ignorant and most notoriously immoral were on the Account of their insatiable Avarice become intolerable.

ERASMUS
and other
learned Men
pave the Way
for the Refor-
mation.

The Clergy had it is true been for a long Time in the general vicious and illiterate; but as Learning began to revive in *Europe* these Things were now taken Notice of. Priests and Monks whose Actions would not bear the Light were highly incensed against the Restorers of Literature; and having no Share with them in Argument did not scruple to accuse them of Heresy. Some Monks had not long before in a Dispute with *John Reuchlin* accused him of Heresy; but the Matter ended in their Confusion, and gave the Learned *Ulrick van Hutten* a fine Handle to expose them in a Book called *Epistolæ obscurorum Virorum*. It ought likewise never to be forgot that the learned *Erasmus*; by shewing the Absurdity and Usefulness of School Divinity; by recommending the Study of the Bible and the Fathers; by discovering the Errors and Abuses which had crept into the Church; and by ridiculing the barbarous Ignorance of Monks and Priests; had a great Hand in paving the Way for the Reformation. As the Disputes betwixt the Admirers and Decryers of Learning were carried on with great Warmth when *Luther's* Doctrines appeared in the World most of the former sided with him: And *Erasmus* who was universally allowed to be the greatest Divine of the Age espoused his Cause. He did indeed dislike his virulent Manner of Writing; and he afterwards

in

in a Treatise *de Libero Arbitrio* started some Objections to *Luther's* Opinions: But besides its being obvious that *Erasmus* wrote this rather at the Sollicitation of others than of his own Inclination, the main Point was not affected by these Objections and they were likewise fully refuted by *Luther*.

Some are of Opinion that *Charles V.* connived at the spreading of *Luther's* Doctrines in *Germany*, hoping by the Means of the Division thereby occasioned to make himself absolute in the Empire; else he might as they say easily have suppressed them by putting *Luther* to Death when he had him in his Power at *Worms*. It is however far from being clear, that if *Luther* had been contrary to the safe Conduct promised murdered his Opinions would have died with him: And it would have been very imprudent in the Emperor to have thereby disoblinded the Elector of *Saxony*, whose Authority in *Germany* was very great, whilst he had a War upon his Hands both with the *Turks* and with *France*. He did afterwards under the Pretence of Religion attack the Protestants but his real Design was to enslave *Germany*, and he was successful against the League of *Smalkald*: Yet as he found it would be difficult to accomplish this Design, and he wanted the Assistance of all the *German* Princes against the *French* and *Turks* and to secure the *Imperial* Crown for his Son *Philip*, he thought proper to drop it. Nay further Pope *Paul III.* jealous of *Charles's* Power, and suspicious of his intending to reform the Court of *Rome*, encouraged *Francis I.* of *France* to prevent the entire Ruin of the Protestants in *Germany*; and prevailed upon this Prince to enter into an Alliance with the *Turks* against *Charles*.

It was also a great Mistake in *Leo* to decide in Favour of the Indulgence Merchants by a Bull in *November* 1518, since thereby all Hopes of an Accommodation were cut off: For it would have been much more politic in him to have enjoined Silence to both Parties, and to have contrived some Way to satisfy *Luther*. The Conduct of Cardinal *Cajetan* at *Augsburg* was equally imprudent. *Luther* offered to drop the Affair provided his Adversaries were forced to do the same; but nothing less than a Recantation would satisfy the Cardinal. Here-

VOL. II.

H

upon

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

upon as the Elector of *Saxony* was constantly pressed to give him up *Luther* was in Vindication of himself and Doctrines compelled to fall upon the Pope. It being now come to an open Rupture with the Pope himself *Luther* appealed to a general Council; the calling of which being upon various Pretences delayed the Cause of *Rome* became more and more suspected. About the same Time the Pope's Quarrel with *Henry VIII.* made Way for the Introduction of the Reformation in *England*: And the House of *Navarre* in Revenge for the Pope's having sided with *Ferdinand* the *Catholic* encouraged the Protestant Religion to the utmost of its Power in *France*. Besides all this many honest sensible Men even amongst the *Roman Catholics* were quite unconcerned at *Luther's* rough Treatment of the papal Authority; because they knew it well deserved to be so treated.

Reasons for
the Reformation's
not being
carried farther.

As every Thing seemed thus to co-operate with the Decree of Heaven in spreading the Doctrine of *Luther*, and the Spiritual Monarchy of *Rome* was upon the Brink of Ruin, it is proper to enquire in the next Place why it was not quite overthrown? It ought to be remembered, that in every State where the Doctrine of *Luther* was embraced the supreme Power in Ecclesiastical Affairs devolved upon the civil Magistrate. As this was the Case it was not to be expected that all the other Protestant States should submit to the Direction of any one, and consequently the Protestants for want of being united under some one Head could not exert their Strength with so much Advantage against the Pope as he could his against them. It ought likewise to be considered, that as the Reformation was not the Effect of Deliberation but quite unexpected no regular Plan for the carrying of it on had been agreed upon; so that although *Luther* first gave the Alarm others instead of conforming precisely to his Doctrine valued themselves upon improving it. This necessarily produced Controversies, in which no Authority to determine betwixt them being allowed the contending Parties were very obstinate. Hence arose Schisms and Things were by Degrees carried so far, that instead of uniting against the common *Enemy* the Protestants not only weakened their own Cause, but furnished
the

the Catholics with an Opportunity of saying, that the *Hereticks* not being able to come to any Agreement concerning Matters of Faith were quite bewildered. As *Luther* moreover had inveighed severely against the dissolute Manners of the *Romish* Clergy, the latter were glad of the Opportunity to retort his own Arguments upon his Followers, when some of these under the Pretence of Gospel Liberty abandoned themselves to all Manner of Licentiousness. The Progress of the Reformation was likewise impeded by the Swarms of *Anabaptists* and other *Enthusiasts* which sprung up in and disturbed the Peace of *Germany*: For as these Disturbances happened soon after the Publication of *Luther's* Doctrine they were imputed to this by the *Catholics*, and some Princes conceived an Aversion to it as productive of civil Confusion, which they looked upon as a greater Evil than any they could thereby be delivered from. It has been thought by some, that the Judgment given by the University of *Paris* against *Luther* was a great Hindrance to the spreading of his Doctrine. Imagining that the Members of this University would be glad of an Opportunity to affront the Pope, with whom they had lately had a Quarrel concerning the Investiture to Bishopricks, he submitted his Dispute with *Eckius* to their Decision: But he found himself mistaken; for they condemned his Opinions and in very harsh Terms. As the *Spanish* Court at that Time found it necessary for its own Interest to be well with the Holy See the Introduction of the Protestant Religion was not only prevented in *Spain*; but the *League* in *France* being powerfully supported by *Spain* *Henry IV.* was in order to maintain himself upon the *French* Throne forced to abjure it. The immoderate Zeal of *Zuinglius* and *Calvin*, who were too hasty in bringing about a Change in Religion, ought also to be reckoned amongst the principal Things which hurt the *Protestant* Cause. *Luther* wisely saw the Difficulty of weaning vulgar Minds from Things to which they had been long accustomed, and made very little Alteration in external Matters: But nothing less would serve these than divesting the Churches of all Ornaments and abolishing all Ceremonies; and they would have all Degrees as well as Habits of the Clergy laid aside. Religion being thus

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

all at once stripped of what was most striking to the common People, and looked upon by them to be of great Importance, they were quite incensed against those who had done this, and were of course more zealous in adhering to the Tenets of their Ancestors. The Hopes of seizing some Revenues of the Church did indeed induce divers Men to declare for Protestantism: But on the other Hand the Fear of losing Benefices kept many fast to the Interest of *Rome*. This was manifestly seen in *France*, where before the Reformation very little Regard was paid to the Pope's Authority; but when the Bishops apprehended Danger of losing their Bishopricks they shewed more Regard for the Pope, and under the Presence of its being the Cause of GOD prevailed upon the Populace to unite with them against the *Protestants*.

The papal Power is likely to gain Ground.

Upon the whole the Pope has so recovered himself, that instead of the *Protestants* being able to hurt him he will for the Time to come in all likelihood gain Ground of them. Those Things which *Luther* upbraided the Church of *Rome* with are either laid aside, or in Pursuance of the Maxim, *Si non caste saltem caute*, they are concealed from the Eyes of the Vulgar. *Paul IV.* did it is true carry it haughtily towards *Spain*, and the same Thing was done by *Paul V.* to the Republick of *Venice*: But by the Interposition of wiser and cooler Heads these Differences were composed without coming to Extremities, and Popes have since been careful to behave civilly to Sovereigns. We do not at this Day see such debauched Popes as *Alexander VI.* and if they have the ambitious turbulent Humour of *Julius II.* care is taken to hide it. Ways are now found to raise Money without that vile Practice of selling Indulgences or without open Simony. The *Romish* Bishops do in the general preserve a grave decent Character, and some of them are eminent for Learning and Piety: Nor are the Priests and Monks chargeable as heretofore with barbarous Ignorance or flagrant Immoralities. As *Luther* and his Followers gained vastly upon the People by their excellent Sermons, and by Books of Devotion published in the Vulgar Tongue, the *Romish* Clergy copied after them; so that Books and Sermons equally learned and instructive are frequently seen in Catholick Countries. They are more-

over

over at this Time well versed in the Controversial Points, and have always a Dozen Distinctions ready to obviate any Objection. For Instance it seems very absurd that the Pope should grant Absolution for 20 or 30,000 Years to come: But they by the Distinctions of *intensive* and *extensive*, *Potentialiter* and *Actualiter*, amuse young Students, and make the common People believe some profound Mystery is couched under these Terms. Instead of that Ignorance and Hatred of Literature, which drew upon them the Resentment of all learned Men and gave *Luther* greatly the Advantage over them, the *Romish* Clergy at this Time and especially the *Jesuits* are remarkable for their Application to and Improvements in Science. The *Catholick* Religion is not propagated by Fire and Sword as heretofore; but the Protestants are cajoled with fair Words or tempted by large Promises. The Revenues of the *Romish* Church are so large that if any Man, although he has nothing to recommend him, goes over thereto he is sure of being provided for, and if he be a Man of Sense his Fortune is made. On the contrary if any Person renounces Popery and embraces the Protestant Religion, he must except he has a Fortune of his own or be a Man of extraordinary Parts expect nothing but Want. Lastly the Popish Interest has been greatly advanced by the Banishment of *Protestants* from many *Catholick* States.

Temporal Government is founded on the highest Reason as well as upon divine Institution; for without this Authority is Men would constantly be exposed to Rapine and Confusion: But it has never yet been proved, that the Pope's Reason or Spiritual Monarchy is founded either on Reason or upon Scripture. As this therefore is an artificial Fabrick it must be supported by Arts; and the Views of Popes will always be different from those of Temporal Princes. It is the Business of Civil Magistrates to encourage Labour and Industry, that every Individual may not only support himself and Family decently, but also be able to spare something towards defraying the Expences necessary for preserving the Peace and Security of the Publick. Instead of encouraging these the Pope contrives to draw Money from the whole Christian World for the Support of his Grandeur and Power. It is a great

Of the POPE'S Spiritual Monarchy.

Expence to other Princes to keep up Guards and Garrisons for the Security of their Dominions: But the *Romish* Clergy, who may be well looked upon as his standing Army, so far from being chargeable to the Pope support themselves in Ease and Luxury and bring Money into his Coffers. Prudent Sovereigns do not judge it safe to extend their Dominions too far; but it is for the Pope's Interest and not at all dangerous to him that his Jurisdiction be carried as far as possible. If the Pope's Partisans say his Authority is founded upon the positive Command of GOD this should be proved clearly from Scripture. If they say it is derived from *St. Peter*, it ought to be proved not only that such an Authority was vested in him, but that he was Bishop of *Rome*, exercised it there, and conveyed it down to his Successors, and that the Succession has not been interrupted. Instead of proving these Things the Popish Doctors decline meddling with them, and fill the Heads of their People with Things that do not concern the main Point. They talk of a long Succession of Popes, and of the Antiquity and Universality of the Church; and lay great Stress on the Promise that the *Gates of Hell shall never prevail against it*. Fathers, Councils and Miracles, are also appealed to: And if any one is still dissatisfied, he is without so much as hearing his Reasons branded with the Name of Heretick and has good Luck if he escapes burning.

The papal Constitution is admirably contrived for answering the Purposes it was designed for.

As a *Democratical* or *Aristocratical* Form of Government is besides other Inconveniencies liable to Factions, it is impossible the Pope's Spiritual Power, the Foundation of which is so rotten, could have lasted long under either. Monarchy then is the only Form that suited it, and of the different Sorts of Monarchy the best to answer their Purpose has been fixed upon by Popes. The whole Art of Man could not have contrived a better: For all the Subtleties of the most refined Politicians are nothing to what is to be met with here. Monarchs have heretofore strengthened their Authority by giving out that they were descended from the Gods, or that their Government was founded by the express Command of the Gods; and if Success attended them, which was looked upon as a Mark of Divine Favour, they were sometimes after

Death reckoned amongst the Gods: But the Pope calls himself the Lieutenant of JESUS CHRIST; arrogates to himself whilst living all Power in Heaven and Earth; and would have it believed that such as refuse to acknowledge his Authority cannot be saved. If these Points are once well settled the whole Business is done; for what is more proper to draw the Veneration of Men to a Person than the Notion that the Majesty of GOD resides in him? Or what stronger Motive can there be to the most absolute Submission than the Fear of Damnation? It has been in most Monarchies thought best to have the Crown hereditary; but this would not suit here: For as there would sometimes be a Minority it would not look so well to see the Vicar of GOD riding upon a Broom-stick, which he takes for a Hobby-horse, or to see the Supreme Director of *Christendom* going himself to School. It would too be difficult for a young Prince to exercise the Functions of a Pope with becoming Gravity; nor can it be supposed that a Succession of Popes of the same Family should either like or be fit for the Office. In this Monarchy the Chief Ministers of a Pope have hopes of succeeding in their Turn, and therefore are not under the same Temptation to invade their Master's Authority: And hence it is that the Papal is not equally liable with hereditary Monarchies to Revolutions. In an hereditary Monarchy the reigning Family sometimes becomes extinct; and when this happens the Disputes concerning the Right of Succession do frequently end in the Ruin of the Monarchy. As a Train of Ladies living in great Splendor would not suit with the Gravity of the Court of *Rome* it is not proper for Popes to marry: And the People are from the Injunction of Celibacy they are under taught to believe, that being wholly devoted to spiritual Things worldly Pleasures never distract them. As a Man is moreover under a strong Temptation to prefer the Aggrandisement of his own Family to the publick Good, there would if Celibacy was not enjoined be Danger of the Triple Crown's becoming hereditary: And the Attempts of the Popes *Alexander VI.* and *Paul III.* in favour of their natural Sons shew plainly the Wisdom of this Injunction.

*Rules observed
in cho:sing
a Pope.*

The Holy See having heretofore suffered greatly by Schisms, it is now to prevent the disoblighing of many Cardinals a Rule that no Person can be Pope without having the Votes of two thirds of the Conclave. The Election always falls upon an *Italian*, nor is this to be wondered at the Majority of the Cardinals being *Italians*. As it greatly concerns the See of *Rome* to carry it with an even Hand to *France* and *Spain* it would be dangerous to have a Pope of either of these Nations. Besides that such a one may be supposed from his long Experience in the World to be well versed in Politicks an old Pope is commonly chosen, that there may be a Prospect of his making Room in a short Time for somebody else. It would too be of bad Consequence to fix upon a young Man; for during a long Papacy the Constitution might be injured, or at least all the profitable Employments and Benefices would be swallowed up by one Family. To prevent the latter Mischief care is always taken that a new Pope shall not be at all related to his Predecessor. Although as it has been observed it would be imprudent to choose a Person too much attached to the Interest either of *France* or *Spain*: Yet lest he should be disagreeable to either of these Nations each gives in a List of those Cardinals it would have excluded from the papal Dignity. Upon the whole the Election often falls upon one who did not in the least expect it; for as the Cardinals are kept locked up, that the World may believe no undue Influence is made use of, untill somebody is fixed upon they are glad at any Rate to put an End to the Contests and Cabals which sometimes reign in the Conclave. The Pope does not like other Sovereigns on his entering upon the Government bind himself to any Terms; and indeed it would be absurd for him who is said to be guided by the HOLY GHOST to be laid under any Restrictions.

Of Cardinals.

Although the College of Cardinals is the Pope's standing Council they are seldom consulted; for he usually pursues his own Inclination or is governed entirely by some Nephew. The chief Privileges of the Cardinals are their exclusive Right to choose a Pope; and that he must be one of their Body. The Number of Cardinals ought to be Seventy-two; But the Sacred College is seldom

dom full. The Nomination to the Cardinalship is absolutely in the Pope's Power; yet great Regard is paid to the Recommendation of *France, Spain* and other States. Some *Romish* Bigots have dared to assert that a Cardinal's Cap is equal in Dignity to a Crown: And to this Day the Cardinals do claim Precedence of the Electoral Princes of *Germany*. They used to be distinguished by the Title of Excellence: But this Title being grown very common in *Italy* it was by Order of *Urban VIII.* changed for the Title of Eminence. As this last had been before confined to Sovereigns the *Italian* Princes, who look upon themselves to be greater than Cardinals, and it is plain they are; so because one of these will at any Time renounce the Purple for the Sake of succeeding to the smallest Principality, thereupon took and have since used the Title of Highness.

Since the Time of *Sixtus IV.* who died about the POPES com- Year 1471, Popes have made it their Study to advance *monly make* and enrich their Relations: And there are some remark- *their Families.* able Instances of their succeeding in this. *Sixtus V.* did not bring less than 3,000,000 Ducats into his Family in about five Years. *Gregory XV.* who enjoyed the Popedom but twenty seven Months, heaped up above 3,000,000 Crowns: And it has been said that at the Death of *Urban VIII.* the House of *Barberini* were in Possession of two hundred and twenty-seven Offices or Benefices, each of which was worth from three to ten thousand Crowns; so that the Riches of this single Family could not be less than 30,000,000 Crowns. This may at first Sight be thought scandalous: But if it be considered that the Pope's Revenue is vastly larger than his ordinary Expence, what can he do better with the Surplus and the many rich Benefices in his Gift than dispose of them amongst his own Relations?

A Custom was introduced by Pope *Urban VIII.* of *Of the Cardi-* making one of the Pope's Nephews Prime Minister *nal PATRON.* with the Title of Cardinal Patron. Amongst other Reasons assigned for this it is said, that it is natural for a Pope to prefer his own Nephew to a Stranger: And that he is thereby better secured from Plots against his Life. It is certain that a Pope is more exposed to these than an hereditary Prince whose Family is powerful enough to
re-

revenge his Death; nor can there be a stronger Proof how fearful the Pope is of being poisoned, than that when he receives the Sacrament the Person who administers it first tastes both the Bread and Wine. It is likewise pretended to be of Advantage to the Publick that the Administration of Affairs should be in the Hands of a Nephew: Because although he will enrich himself he will take care that other Officers shall not, since he knows the Odium thereof will fall upon himself; and it is certainly not so bad for the Publick to be plundered by one as by several. Besides as it is a sort of settled Thing for a Nephew to manage, he is not so apt to be rapacious as the Ministers are in other States where Changes are frequent; for as such know their Time may be short they will enrich themselves as fast as possible, that they may the more willingly give Way to another Set of hungry Ministers. A Nephew can likewise being so nearly related deal more freely with the Pope: And as he must be supposed to be a cordial Friend to the Pope the Interest of the latter is much more likely to be pursued by a Nephew than by a Cardinal; for most of the Cardinals receive Pensions or are some other Way influenced by foreign Princes.

The Subjects of this Monarchy. The Subjects of this Monarchy may be divided into Clergy and Laity. The former may be considered as a standing Army kept up to support the Pope in his vast Conquests. The latter are no better than Slaves; on whom large Contributions are raised for the Support of the former. The Clergy are not allowed to marry. The Pretence for this is that worldly Cares would prevent a faithful Discharge of their Duty: But the true Reason perhaps is, that being free from the Ties of paternal or conjugal Affection they may on all Occasions be ready to promote the Interest of the Church and obey implicitly the Orders of the Pope. As a Wife and Children which would perhaps be thereby exposed to the Resentment of an enraged Prince are commonly dear to a Man, a Clergyman would if married be cautious of flying in his Sovereign's Face: But a single Man can more easily get out of his Sovereign's Way. Besides if the People apprehended what they give was for the Maintenance of Clergymen's Family they would be a little

little sparing; whereas under the Notion that all this is applied to the Service of the Church avaritious Churchmen have now a fine Opportunity of heaping up Riches. Upon the whole this Injunction of Celibacy falls in with the grand Object of rendering the Clergy independent of the civil Power which Popes have always had in View; But some Remedy for Incontinence is greatly wanted amongst them. The Clergy whose Number, if Paul IV. was not mistaken when he boasted of having 288,000 Parishes and 44,000 Monasteries under his Jurisdiction, is prodigious may be divided into the secular and regular Clergy. The latter which consists of Monks of all sorts and Jesuits, are from their being most devoted to him to be esteemed the Pope's Body Guards. The greater Part of these live in Ease and Plenty; the rest to make Amends for their faring hard are buoyed up with the Hopes of being greatly rewarded hereafter for their extraordinary Sanctity.

As a blind Submission of the Laity to the Clergy is absolutely necessary to support this spiritual Monarchy the former are forbid to read the holy Scripture: For if this was well understood it would be obvious that no one is authorized to lord it over another's Conscience; and by keeping it from the Laity the Clergy have an Opportunity of mixing something with every Doctrine they teach that may promote the Interest or Power of the Pope or themselves. In order to make Way for Tradition the HOLY SCRIPTURE is represented as imperfect; and whatever can serve the Cause of Rome is imposed upon the poor deluded People under this Name. The Doctrine of Remission of Sins annexed in the Gospel to Repentance is clear, full and comfortable; and happy had it been for Mankind that Priests had never puzzled it. In the *Romish* Church Sins are distinguished into Venial and Mortal; and to make the Determination of Churchmen necessary there are many reserved Cases. Books of Casuistry enough to freight large Fleets have been written; and it would be well for the Cause of Morality if they were all at the bottom of the Ocean: For by entering too minutely into the Circumstances of some Crimes that ought not to be mentioned some Things are put into the Heads of young People which they would

Doctrines and Customs of the Church of ROME which serve to keep under and impoverish the Laity.

other-

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

otherwise never think of. Amongst other Terms of Absolution Confession by which the Clergy learn all the Secrets of the Laity is made indispensably necessary. By this the latter are kept in Awe and the former have an Opportunity of carrying on their own Schemes: For notwithstanding the solemn Obligation the Clergy are under not to reveal a Confession every Thing gives Way to their Interest or Ambition. The *Romish* Church gains a great deal by a Power its Priests exercise of ordering Satisfaction for Sins: For although Pilgrimages, Prayers, Fasts and Whippings, are sometimes enjoined, any or all of these are to be got over by giving a round Sum to some Church, Convent or the Poor. That nothing may go beside the Clergy the *Mendicants* called *Minimos Fratrum* are reckoned amongst the Poor; and by making the Laity believe *St. Matthew* means these when he speaks of *Minimos Fratrum* in his 25th Chapter they are saddled with the Expence of Maintaining above 100,000 idle sturdy Fellows. Good Works certainly recommend to the Favour of God: But as in their List of Good Works Liberality to the Church and Submission to the Pope and themselves stand first the Design of *Romish* Priests in ascribing so much thereto is easily seen through. It is taught amongst the Papists that Monks can merit Heaven for themselves and have many Good Works to spare for the Laity. These called Works of Supererogation are sold at an extravagant Price to the Laity; and as the Cheat can never be made apparent on this Side the Grave silly Souls continue to be gulled and the Clergy get Money. In order to find Employment for Priests, who take Care to be well paid for all they do, the Number of Festivals and Processions is as much as possible encreased: Nay with a View to the same the Sacraments are multiplied to seven, and a Custom is introduced of saying Mass both for the Living and the Dead. By this large Sums of Money are raised: For nothing of Importance is engaged in without Mass being first sung for Success; nor does any Person of Fortune die without ordering a good Store of Masses to be celebrated for the Deliverance of his Soul out of Purgatory. Notwithstanding it is evident both from the holy Scripture and the Practice of the primitive Church that the Laity ought in receiving the Sacrament to partake of

the

the Cup; yet that a Notion may prevail of the Clergy's having some superior Excellence in them the Cup is by the *Romish* Church denied to the Laity; and which makes the Thing more monstrous some unconsecrated Wine in a Chalice, which is called the Chalice of rincing, is given to the Laity, just as if some Impurity left in their Mouths by the Bread was to be washed down. By making Marriage a Sacrament a Multitude of Causes are brought into Spiritual Courts; for the Succession to Crowns as well as to private Estates frequently depends thereupon. This obliged *Mary Queen of England* to endeavour at the Restoration of Popery; for without the Pope's Dispensation she had been a Bastard: And *Philip III.* of *Spain* was without Doubt more firmly attached to the Interest of *Rome*; because his Father had by a Dispensation from thence married his own Sister's Daughter. Persons in divers Degrees both of Consanguinity and Affinity are prohibited from marrying on purpose to encrease the Number of Dispensations; upon which Care is taken to fix a high Price. The Administration of Extreme Unction gives the Clergy an Opportunity, and it is too often made use of, of persuading dying Men, who are sometimes not perfectly sensible and for the most Part indifferent about worldly Goods, to make large Bequests to the Church at the Expence of their near and perhaps poor Relations. The Veneration for Relicks, which prevails in the *Romish* Church, besides being advantageous puts it into the Pope's Power to make a Man who has done something considerable for his Service a Present of a Piece of Bone instead of a Purse of Gold; and such is the Power of Superstition the Person thinks himself well rewarded. Adoration of Saints serves for a Pretence to encrease the Number of Churches as well as Festivals, and consequently to employ and feed more Churchmen. The Power assumed by the Pope of Canonization makes Persons of ambitious and credulous Dispositions stick at nothing that may advance his Interest or Authority; for what more alluring Bait could have been thrown out to such than the Notion of being raised to Dignities and Offices in Heaven? Mention might here be made of fictitious Miracles, Apparitions, Exorcisms and other Tricks, by which Money is drawn from the Laity; but enough has been said on this Subject.

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy:

*Learning is
prostituted to
the Support of
the POPE's
Authority.*

As the Universities in Catholick Countries are under the Pope's Direction it is easy to conceive that none but his Creatures are advanced to Professorships. The Consequence is that those who teach Divinity, Civil Law, or even Philosophy, instead of letting young Students into the Truth of Things make it their Business to amuse or confound ingenious Minds with unmeaning Terms or trifling Distinctions, lest they should discover by examining fairly the rotten Foundation of the papal Power. The Divinity of the *Romish* Schools consists of a Heap of frivolous puzzling Questions invented by *Peter Lombard*, *Thomas Aquinas*, *Scotus* and such like Pedants: And what is called Philosophy is a Heap of idle Chimeras. The *Catholick* Universities were not only overrun with such solemn Nonsense and vain Speculations in the dark Times of Ignorance; but as much as possible of these is retained in this enlightned Age. Morality in particular is perplexed with many unintelligible or double meaning Distinctions, on Purpose that the common People being bewildered may give up their Consciences to the Direction of Confessors and Casuists. As the Revival however of Learning was a principal Cause of the Reformation it became necessary to be more artful in these Things; and the Instruction of Youth in private Schools as well as Universities has been since committed to the Jesuits. These being bound by a more strict Vow to support the Pope's Power all imaginable Care is taken that nothing destructive thereto be instilled into their Pupils: On the Contrary the Impression of Veneration for the Pope is so deeply made on their tender Minds that it is scarce ever to be effaced by the strongest Reasons that can be offered. The Jesuits by thus engrossing the Care of Youth have not only acquired great Riches: But as they have thereby an Opportunity of knowing the Circumstances and Capacities of their Disciples they prevail on many who are remarkable for Wealth or Understanding to enter into their Order; and some who do not choose to enter thereinto frequently promote its Interest when they come into the World. They do indeed boast of the good Rules observed in their Society, and pique themselves on their Method of teaching the *Latin* Tongue; but it is well known that their Scholars

except

except such as are intended for their own Order are kept a good deal in Ignorance. Upon the whole however it must be allowed that the Jesuits are more learned, obliging and polite, than the other Orders. By these Qualities they have insinuated themselves as Confessors into most Courts, and they have played their Cards so cunningly that the Affairs of many Princes, in the Management of which they never forget the Popes and their own Interest; are got entirely into their Hands. Amongst other Instances of prostituting Learning to the Cause of Priestcraft the Power of licensing Books, which is exercised by the Pope or his Deputies, ought not to be passed over. By Virtue of this not only all Books which the Clergy dislike are prevented from seeing the Light, but when the Works of any Author are reprinted all Passages prejudicial to their Schemes are left out, and others which may be serviceable thereto are frequently inserted: Nay if any thing is overlooked in one Edition it is marked in an Index* kept for this Purpose to be left out in the next. As the Books wrote in Defence of the Protestant Religion are not allowed to be read but by Persons thoroughly in the Interest of *Rome*, these may misrepresent to the common People the Doctrines of Protestants as much as they please: It being impossible for the latter to vindicate themselves to such as are not allowed to read their Defence. Although this be the Truth of the Case, the Defenders of the *Romish* Doctrines have the Assurance after reviling the Protestant Doctrines to challenge the Protestants to wipe off their Aspersions: And the deluded People instead of seeing through this Trick are persuaded to believe that the Protestants cannot do this, and consequently their Aversion to Protestantism is increased. Accounts of Miracles wrought in distant Countries and of surprizing Things done by Martyrs are likewise frequently published; and as no body dares to Question the Truth thereof these are believed and wondered at by the Vulgar.

If all the above Methods are found insufficient *More violent* more violent ones are used to support the Pope's Power. *Methods are* As Excommunications by Virtue of which Sovereigns *used upon Oc-* have formerly been deposed and whole Kingdoms laid *casion.*

* Called Expurgatorius.

under

Of the POPE'S Spiritual Monarchy.

under Interdicts are now not much regarded, except by some few petty *Italian* Princes, a Tribunal known by the Names of the *Holy Office* and the *Holy Inquisition* has been erected in some Countries for the Trial of such as are in the least suspected of Heresies. Disobedience to the Pope and his Injunctions being reckoned amongst the worst of these it is no Wonder the People are thereby kept in Awe; for the Proceedings in this Court are carried on so rigorously, that if a Man has the Misfortune to be prosecuted therein he is sure to be a great Sufferer although he should be able to make out his Innocence ever so clearly.

Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men in the Catholick Religion. By the Artifices, pious Frauds and Severities which have been mentioned, and by other Arts, the Vulgar are so deluded or frightened as to be kept under Obedience to the Pope's spiritual Power: But Men of Sense cannot but see through all these; and were they not restrained by private Reasons they would without Doubt endeavour to free themselves and others therefrom. It is probable that the Danger of exchanging an easy affluent Fortune for Distress and Poverty, which they would in all probability be immediately exposed to, prevents some sensible Men from going over to the Protestants. Others may think that the believing of the Doctrines of JESUS CHRIST and living up as much as they can to his Precepts will entitle them to the Favour of GOD. As to the rest they judge it more prudent to conform externally to many Things, although these are the Inventions of Priests, than to disturb weak Minds who always look upon such Things to be of the greatest Importance with their private Opinions: Nor do they think it of much Consequence to undeceive the Vulgar, because they well know that no Religion without a Mixture of Mystery and Extravagancy would please them. Others shocked at what has been by Churchmen added to Christianity do without taking the Pains to examine into the Simplicity, Purity and Excellency, thereof conclude, that such a Religion as it is represented cannot be from GOD: And thinking it enough to comply so far therewith as to prevent temporal Inconveniencies they are in their Hearts downright Deists.

Upon

Upon the whole the Catholick Religion seems to be *Many States* firmly established in the Countries where it at this *have an Inte-* Time prevails, and it would be dangerous for any Sove- *rest in main-* reign to attempt the rejecting thereof: For the Clergy *taining the* would move Heaven and Earth against him; and they *POPE'S Au-* would perhaps if it became necessary at last find such *thority.* a Villain as *James Clement* or *Ravillac* to do his Business. It is besides for the Interest of many States to support the Catholick Religion; nor could they expect any thing less than a civil War if they were to attempt any Change therein. As none but *Italians* are advanced to the Popedom there is scarce an *Italian* Family of any Note which has not at some Time tasted the Sweet of Church Revenues: And as all the *Italian* States derive some Advantage from *Italy's* being the Seat of papal Power, it is not to be expected that any one of these should desire to see it ruined. The Bishopricks and other rich Benefices in *Poland* being for the most part in the Hands of the Nobility, who have the principal Management of State Affairs, there is no Likelihood of the Pope's losing his Authority there. If the Numerousness of Ecclesiasticks in *Portugal* together with their being sure of Support from *Spain* in case any Change in Religion was attempted be considered, it is not at all surprizing that the *Portuguese* should bear as they have lately done the Pope's ill Treatment in the Affair of Presenting to Benefices. As temporal Power is annexed to many Bishopricks and other Benefices in *Germany* all who possess or are in Expectation of any of these will, if they prefer being powerful Princes to the being poor Preachers, adhere to the Catholick Religion: And if any Ecclesiastical *German* Prince was so disinterested as to desire the Introduction of the Protestant Religion into his Dominions, the ill Success and fatal Consequences which followed the Attempts of two Electors of *Cologne* to introduce this are enough to deter him from attempting it. What has induced some secular *German* Princes to reunite themselves to the *Romish* Communion is well known; and it is not likely, since all of these who are powerful entertain Hopes of getting the Imperial Dignity into their Family, that any of them will leave this Communion: For as *Charles V.* neglected the fair Opportunity which offered of establishing the Protestant Religion

Of the P O P E's Spiritual Monarchy.

in the Empire no one of his Successors had he been ever so willing could since have done this. As the Case stands at present the Ecclesiastical *German* Princes commonly side with the Emperor that they may have his Protection against the Secular ones who are more powerful: But if he was to renounce the Catholick Religion all Churchmen would be against him; the Pope would stick at nothing to ruin him; and the *French* King would perhaps take the Advantage of the Confusion which must ensue to obtain the Imperial Dignity. The *Spaniards* besides being great Bigots to the *Romish* Religion are concerned to maintain the Pope's Authority; because it is of great Use to them in preserving their Dominions in *Italy*. *France* seems to be less interested than any other Catholick State in supporting the Pope's spiritual Power; nor has the *Gallican Church* ever submitted absolutely thereto. The Parliament of *Paris* does likewise guard against all Encroachments of the Pope upon its Liberties; and many Positions advanced by the Creatures of *Rome* have been rejected by the Doctors of the *Sorbonne*. As soon as a Nuncio from the Pope enters the *French* Territories the Cross which he before carried upright is reversed until he has Leave from the King to exercise his Function; and in order to obtain this he must promise in writing not to act in any other Manner nor any longer in the Office of Nuncio than the King pleases. He is obliged to make use of a *French* Secretary; and at his Departure to leave an Account of his Negotiations, which are looked upon to be *ipso facto* void except all these and some other Formalities have been complied with. Hence the *French* take Occasion to say that the Commission of a Nuncio which he receives partly from their King lasts only during his Pleasure: And the Custom still kept up of lowering the Cross whenever the King is present implies that the Nuncio's Authority is subordinate to that of the King. It has been said that in the Time of *Richelieu's* Administration it was under Deliberation whether *France* should be erected into an independent Patriarchate? But it does not seem likely that if this Project had been carried into Execution it would have done the Nation any Service; for the Clergy jealous that the next Step would have been to seize some of their Revenues would never have been quiet. It seems upon

Of the POPE's Spiritual Monarchy.

113

upon the whole to be plain, that if any King of *France* should attempt to free himself from the Pope's Dominion he would be perpetually disturbed by Insurrections at home and Attacks from the neighbouring Catholick Powers; and if he should succeed would thereby lose all Hopes of uniting the Imperial Dignity to the *French* Crown.

The Pope would without doubt be glad that the States *Of the POPE's* which have revolted were reduced to his Obedience; yet *Interest with* he had rather these should continue as they are than that *Regard to* his own Authority should be endangered by any Catho-^{PROTES-}lick Power's raising itself too much on their Ruin. For ^{TANTS.} this Reason *Paul III.* fearing the Success of *Charles V.* against the Protestants might make him absolute in *Germany* recalled the Troops he had lent him: And if the Expedition of *Philip II.* against *England* had succeeded *Sixtus V.* would have had Cause to repent of the Share he had had therein. During the War in the *Valteline* *Gregory XV.* sided with the *Grisons* notwithstanding their being Protestants against the *Spaniards*: Nor was *Urban VIII.* sorry to see the Power of the House of *Austria* curbed by *Gustavus Adolphus*, and especially as the Emperor had shewn in the Affair of *Mantua* that he had no great Regard for the Catholick Interest. Not many Years ago the Court of *Rome* saw with concern the Success of the *French* against the *Dutch*; and was under great Uneasiness lest *Holland* should be quite subdued. Artifice seems then to be the only Way consistent with the Pope's Interest of reuniting Protestants to the *Romish* Communion, and this is practised by the Pope and his Emissaries in various Ways. In order to bring them over to the *Romish* Religion Protestant Princes are much caressed, and they are often prevailed upon to marry Catholick Ladies. Younger Brothers of illustrious Families are sometimes tempted by rich Benefices to renounce the Protestant Religion: And instead of entering into Controversies with the Protestant Divines great Pains are taken by the *Romish* Clergy to keep up those which the Protestants have with each other. By these and other Arts the Catholicks have of late Years gained great Advantages over the Protestants; and except the latter grow wiser they will in all Probability continue to gain Ground upon them.

A Reconciliation betwixt PAPISTS and PROTESTANTS is scarce to be hoped for.

From what has been said it is easy to see that no Reconciliation betwixt Papiſts and Proteſtants is likely to be brought about; for the Difference is not only concerning Matters of Faith, but as the Catholicks want to regain the Church Revenues which are in the Poſſeſſion of the Proteſtants their Interests are diametrically oppoſite. The Unwillingneſs of Proteſtant States to part with the ſupreme Power in Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, which is now looked upon by them as an eſſential Part of Sovereignty, would be another grand Obſtacle; and the Pope could never give this up, for it would be giving up his whole Cauſe. If moreover the Proteſtants were diſpoſed to give Way in ſome Things for the ſake of Peace the Pope could not give Way in any Thing; for if he ſhould allow himſelf to be in the Wrong in a ſingle Point his Infallibility which is the very Foundation of papal Power would fall to the Ground. On the contrary if Proteſtants ſhould once admit his Infallibility they muſt of courſe believe implicitly whatever he is pleaſed to advance. Upon the whole there is no Proſpect of an Accommodation betwixt the Catholicks and the Proteſtants; and if it could be ſuppoſed that the Laity amongſt the latter ſhould be for one, the Clergy who would not in that Caſe know how to diſpoſe of their Wives and Children would certainly be againſt it. However good therefore the Deſigns of ſuch as have propoſed any of theſe may have been all Schemes of Reconciliation betwixt the Catholicks and Proteſtants are chimerical: And the former who well know this laugh in their Sleeves at the ſerious Endeavours of ſome to carry any of them into Execution. This Notion of bringing about ſuch a Reconciliation does beſides hurt the Proteſtant Cauſe; becauſe ſome, who do not well underſtand where the Difference lies, hearing their Divines talk of a Reconciliation are apt to think it is but ſmall, and being once grown cool thereto they are ready to embrace the firſt advantageous Terms of renouncing Proteſtantiſm: For as neither a Fortreſs nor a Woman can long hold out after a Parly is once begun ſo if a Man is once ſtaggered in an Opinion he ſoon gives it up.

Conſiderations upon the Strength of PAPISTS and PROTESTANTS,

In order to judge whether the Pope and his Adherents are able to reduce Proteſtants to Obedience to the See of Rome by Force, the Strength of each Party muſt be conſidered. *Italy, Spain, Portugal, the greateſt Part of France, Poland,*

land, Hungary and some of the Swiss Cantons are of the Pope's Party; and according to the best Calculation above Two-thirds of the Germans are Papists. There are also many Papists in Holland; and Great Britain is not without them. On the Protestant Side can only be reckoned Great-Britain, Sweden, Denmark, Holland, Part of Swisserland and Part of Germany; for the Protestants in France are disarmed; those in Poland are dispersed; those in Prussia and Courland are but just able to support themselves in the Exercise of their Religion; and those in Hungary and Transylvania are not able to give any Assistance to the Protestant Party. Besides this evident Superiority in Number the Catholicks are united under one Head and do in outward Appearance at least agree in Matters of Faith; but the Protestants are very much divided in their Opinions. Not to mention the Anabaptists and many other small Sects their main Body is divided into two almost equal Parties Lutherans and Calvinists; many of whom have as great an Aversion to each other as they have to the Catholicks. The Form thereof being in all Protestant States regulated by the civil Magistrate Church Government is in most of these different: Nor are the Protestant Clergy so zealous as the Romish in propagating their Religion. A great many of the former make no other Use of their Benefices than to live easily upon them; whereas the Monks and Jesuits gain great Applause by their Missions to the East and West-Indies; which although the Method of their Missionaries in making Converts is liable to Objections are in the main laudable. Besides all this the Jealousy which reigns betwixt some of the most considerable Protestant States, as betwixt Sweden and Denmark and Great-Britain and Holland, will for ever prevent their joining heartily against the Catholicks. The Protestants in Germany are indeed very numerous; but being subject to different Princes whose Views are often different and sometimes contrary their Strength is inconsiderable. Twice within the same Century they were brought into such Distress by the Emperors that had not France and Sweden interposed an End must have been put to their Religion. For some Time indeed a Notion has prevailed that the German Protestants are able to support themselves, and that the Elector of Brandenburg is the properest Person to be trusted

Of the P O P E's Spiritual Monarchy.

with the Direction of their Affairs; and the Houses of *Brandenburg* and *Lunenbug* avail themselves of this Notion to justify their keeping what was granted to *Sweden* as a Recompence for having been so instrumental in preserving the Liberty and Religion of the Protestants in *Germany*. Whether this Notion is well founded Time only can determine; but the ceding of some Provinces in *Pomerania* to *Sweden* was once thought a masterly Stroke in Politicks: For that thereby the Assistance of a powerful Protestant Kingdom was effectually secured against the Enterprizes of ambitious Emperors. It is certain that no Dependence is to be had upon Treaties; and he who imagines that any Emperor would not be glad of ruining the Protestant Interest and making himself absolute in *Germany* must be quite unacquainted with the History of past Times. Notwithstanding all these Inconveniencies the Protestant Religion is in no great Danger from Force; for although they are of the same Religion it is not to be supposed that the other Catholick Powers would sit still and see any one of themselves aggrandize itself by subduing a Protestant State: Because as the Balance of Power would be thereby endangered it would be for their Interest to prevent it.

*The best Way
to preserve
the PROTESTANT
Religion.*

If this be the Truth of the Case that the Protestant Religion is secure against open Force great Care should be taken in every State to prevent its being ruined secretly. The preventing of this does not depend upon such Arts as are made use of to support Popery but upon the following very simple and plain Means. Schools should be filled with Men well qualified to instruct young Persons in the Fundamentals of the Protestant Religion. The Clergy should watch constantly and warn their Hearers against the Designs of *Romish* Priests; and as Example is more prevalent than Precept they ought to be exemplary in their Lives. The Practice of Morality, to which the Peace, Order and Prosperity of every Nation are in a great Measure owing, should not only be inculcated but enforced by Rewards and Punishments: And in order to make the Observation of these general it is of vast Consequence for Persons eminent by Rank or Station to convince the lower sort of People that they are themselves influenced by the great Precepts of Christianity.

It

It is undoubtedly true that a Reconciliation of the *different Sects of Protestants, and especially of the Lutherans and Calvinists,* would greatly strengthen the Protestant Cause; and some think this might be brought about: But it will appear to any one who understands well the Passions and Prejudices of Mankind and has read the Writings of both Sects impartially to be almost impossible. Others have thought that a System of such Articles as are absolutely necessary to Salvation might be agreed upon by the two Sects; and that each might be left at Liberty as to Matters of lesser Consequence. No good Judgment can be formed of the Success of this Expedient until such a System composed with the utmost Art and Caution be offered to the Publick: But in my Opinion as there would be Danger of reviving ancient Disputes and of creating new ones it is better to leave this Matter to the Providence of GOD. In the mean time it greatly concerns the different Sects of Protestants to wave all private Differences and unite in preserving each other: For although one of these may be sometimes cajoled in order to play it off against the rest it is certainly for the Interest of *Rome* to ruin them all.

PROTESTANTS is not probable.

C H A P. VI.

Of NAPLES and SICILY.

*Ancient State
of NAPLES
and SICILY.*

AS *Naples* and *Sicily* are at this Day and have frequently been subject to the same Sovereign, and their History is consequently much interwoven, it is best to treat of them conjunctly. Before the Establishment of the *Roman Empire* in *Italy* that Part of it at this Time called *Naples* consisted of many independant Towns; most of which were inhabited by *Grecian Colonies*, These were by Degrees all subdued by the *Romans*: And the *Carthaginians*, who had made some Settlements there, being afterwards driven from *Sicily* this Island was also subdued and became a *Roman Province*. The *Roman Empire*, at first weakened by being divided into an Eastern and Western Empire, gradually declined so much in Power that at length *Italy* became an easy Conquest to the barbarous Nations.

*The SARACENS invade
SICILY, 672.*

In the Year 672 the *Saracens* invaded *Sicily*. They could not at this Time long maintain themselves there: But by the Help of *Sardinia* and *Corfica*, which afterwards fell into their Hands, they about the Year 828 renewed their Attempts upon this Island and made themselves Masters of all of it except *Messina*. On settling the Boundaries of the two *Roman Empires* by *Charlemain* and *Nicephorus* the northern Part of *Italy*, except *Rome* and some Territories thereunto adjoining which were ceded to the Pope, was annexed to the Western; and the rest thereof was annexed to the eastern Empire. The Distance of the two Emperors from *Italy* together with the Difficulties they were perplexed with, one to keep himself upon the Throne the other to extend his Conquests in *Germany*, gave the *Lombards* an Opportunity of encroaching upon their Neighbours. By their Incursions and the Ravages from Time to Time com-

committed by the *Saracens Italy* was thrown into great Confusion.

This was the State of Things when the *Normans* THE NOR- established themselves in the southern Part of *Italy* about MANS settle in the Year of CHRIST 1002; and laid the Foundation of *ITALY*, the Kingdom of *Naples*. As it was the Superstition of those 1002. Times to visit the *Holy Land* Pilgrims for their greater Security usually went in large Bodies. Some *Normans* a People remarkably infested with this Superstition being on their Return from *Palestine* they were invited to stay and refresh themselves for some Time at *Salernum* by *Guimare* the reigning Prince. Whilst they were there the *Saracens* came to demand an annual Tribute. The necessary Orders for the levying of this were issued: But as the Infidels continued in the mean Time with great Security in their Camp upon the Coast the *Normans* a warlike People, who could not bear to see this mean Submission of the *Italians*, took an Opportunity of falling so apropos upon them that only a few who fled with great Precipitation to their Vessels escaped. Upon their coming back to *Salernum* with a great Booty the *Normans* were much carested: But all the Persuasion of *Guimare* could not prevail upon them to lay aside their Refulution of returning home. The Vessels of Gold taken from the *Saracens*, which they carried with them, and the rich Presents made by *Guimare* at parting encouraged many of their Countrymen to set out for *Italy*. After these had done divers signal Services for the Duke of *Naples Rainulph* one of their Chiefs was honoured by this Duke with the Title of Count; and had a Town with its Domains given to him. Hereupon *Rainulph* who soon began to act the Sovereign sent an Ambassador to the Duke of *Normandy*, to beg that some of his dear Countrymen might be suffered to come and people his new Dominions. Amongst others who went were the Sons of *Tancred* of *Hautville*, of whom as they had the chief Hand in founding the Kingdom of *Naples* and in conquering *Sicily* it is necessary to say something.

Tancred Lord of *Hautville* lived near *Coutance* in *The Sons of* lower *Normandy*. Although his own Estate was but TANCRED go small he in marrying, which he did twice; consulted into ITALY.

more

more the good Qualities of the Women than their Fortunes. By his first Wife he had *William* surnamed *Fier-a-Bras* or the Invincible, *Drogon* and *Humphry*: By the second he had *Robert* surnamed *Guiscard* * afterwards Duke of *Pouille* and *Calabria*, *Mauger*, *William*, *Alverede*, *Humbert*, *Tancred* and *Roger*, which last conquered *Sicily* and founded a new Monarchy there. As these had all been educated suitably to their Birth and their Patrimony was scarce sufficient for two of them they all readily embraced the Opportunity of trying their Fortunes in *Italy*. Being arrived there they went first into the Service of the Prince of *Capua*; and afterwards into that of *Guimare* Prince of *Salernum*. They distinguished themselves greatly in the Service of the latter: But they at the same Time gained the Affections of his Subjects to such a Degree that *Guimare* growing jealous of them wished for an Opportunity to get rid of them honourably.

The NOR-
MANS assist in
conquering SI-
CILY, 1004.

Michael Ducas Emperor of the East having about this Time formed a Design of recovering *Sicily* from the Infidels he sent an Army into *Italy* under the Command of *George Maniaces*. This General, who well knew the Bravery of the *Normans*, requested of *Guimare* that some of them might be allowed to serve under him. *Guimare* could not have met with a Way more agreeable to himself of obliging the Imperial General; and it being represented to the *Normans* that they must in this Expedition get immense Plunder they readily fell in with the Proposal, and three Hundred of them commanded by *Fier-a-Bras* set out from *Salernum*. *Fier-a-Bras* went in the Year 1004 over to *Sicily*, and after defeating the Armies of the Infidel Chiefs *Apolofar* and *Apochaps* carried his victorious Arms all over this Island: But being ill used by *Maniaces* after all his good Services he in Disgust went back with his Forces into *Italy*.

FIER-A-BRAS
Count of
POUILLE.

Fier-a-Bras being joined there by other *Normans* who were returning from the *Holy Land*; and having made himself Master of the *Pouille* he drove all the *Greeks* from

* This Word, which in the old *NORMAN* Language signified the Cunning became afterwards the Surname of the Family.

thence

thence and enjoyed it a long Time with the Title of Count.

Drogon his Successor in the *Pouille* was reduced to DROGON. great Extremity by *Meles* the Imperial General; but obtaining at last a compleat Victory over the *Greeks* he established himself and extended his Dominions. A Rebellion afterwards breaking out he was treacherously assassinated by the *Apulians*.

Humphry his Successor after revenging his Brother's HUMPHRY. Death entirely reduced the *Apulians* to Obedience. Being informed that *Henry II.* Emperor of *Germany* was coming to the Assistance of *Pope Leo IX.* against him he defeated this Pontiff's Army; and took him and all the Cardinals in his Retinue Prisoners. Instead of using his Prisoners unhandsofly *Humphry* conducted them with all imaginable Respect to *Rome*: Which so pleased the *Pope* that he confirmed him in the Possession of all the *Normans* had conquered in *Italy*.

After the Death of *Humphry* *Abelgard* his Son re-ABELGARD. ceived the Investiture of *Pouille* and *Calabria* from the *Pope*: But as this was contrary to the Agreement betwixt the Brothers, which was that each should in his Turn succeed to their Conquests, *Robert* surnamed *Guiscard* took Arms against *Abelgard* and soon forced him to quit his Pretensions.

Robert was afterwards made Duke of *Pouille* and ROBERT Duke *Calabria* by the *Pope* for the Services he did him of POUILLE against the Emperor. Whilst he was busied in extend-and CALA- ing his Dominions in *Italy* the *Saracens* made them-BRIA. selves Masters of *Messina* the only Place in *Sicily* which remained to the Emperor of the East: But their Cruelty in hanging up many of the principal Inhabitants so irritated the Rest that they invited the *Normans* to assist in the retaking of this Town. A Difference arising about the same Time betwixt the Generals of the Infidels; one of them named *Bittumene* went over to *Pouille* and encouraged *Robert* to attempt the Conquest of *Sicily*.

His Brother *Roger* being hereupon sent over to *Sicily* His Brother he defeated the Garrison of *Messina* which sallied out ROGER is sent against him. Being afterwards reinforced from the into SICILY. Continent he invested this Town, and pressed the

Siege

Of NAPLES and SICILY.

Siege with such Vigour that it soon fell into his Hands. All the *Saracens* found therein were put to the Sword; and the Town in which there were immense Treasures was pillaged. With the Assistance of *Bittumene* who brought him more Troops from his Brother he took *Ramette* and several other Places, and afterwards obtained a compleat Victory over *Balkan* the *Saracen* Governor near *Castro-Giovanni*.

A Quarrel be-
twixt the two
Brothers.

The *Saracens* lost in this Action 10,000 Men: But a Misunderstanding arising betwixt *Roger* and *Robert*, because the latter failed in his Promise of giving half *Calabria* and half of what was taken in *Sicily* to the former, *Roger* went back to *Italy*. This was so resented by the People that *Robert* not thinking himself safe endeavoured to conceal himself in the Disguise of a Peasant. Being discovered his Life was saved by the Interposition of *Roger*; and the two Brothers were heartily reconciled. Hereupon *Roger* went again over to *Sicily*; where *Bittumene* who was left to command in his Absence had been treacherously murdered by some *Saracens*: But after punishing some Officers of the Garrison of *Troine* for their indecent Behaviour to the married Women and quelling an Insurrection in this Town he again went back to *Italy*. During his Stay there which was not very long the *Saracens* were so reinforced from *Africa*, that according to the Account of all Historians *Roger* found them at his coming again into *Sicily* full 300,000 strong. Being not at all discouraged thereat he attacked them and with such marvellous Success that according to some Historians not one was left to carry the News of their Defeat. In the Year 1071 he in Concert with his Brother *Robert* took *Palermo*.

ABELGARD
tries to recover
POUILLE.

Whilst the two Brothers were pushing their Conquests in *Sicily* some Attempts were made by *Abelgard* and *Herman* Sons of *Humphry* to recover the *Pouille*: But after sheltering themselves for some time in *Salernum* they were glad to fly for Safety to *Constantinople*. In the Quarrel betwixt Pope *Gregory VII.* and *Henry IV.* Emperor of *Germany* *Robert* sided with the former, and secured him at *Salernum* from falling into the Emperor's Hands. Having afterwards subdued *Durazzo*, *Epirus* and some of the Islands of *Greece* *Robert* died of a Fever at

Death of Ro-
BERT.

Cassopo

Cassapo in the Year 1083. By his Will he left all out of *Italy* to *Boemond* his eldest Son; and all in *Italy* to *Roger* his other Son.

As these two Princes could by no Means agree it came at last to an open Rupture; during which *Ben-Avir* General of the *Saracens* arrived on the Coast of *Calabria Ulterior* with a considerable Fleet and committed great Ravages upon this Coast: But an End was put to these Ravages by the Death of *Ben-Avir*: Who was killed on Ship-board by an Arrow from the Shore. Another considerable *Saracen* being in Possession of *Agrigentum* *Roger* attacked this Place; and after an obstinate Defence became Master thereof.

In the mean Time *Roger* his Uncle had after making great Conquests upon the Infidels taken upon himself the Title of Count of *Sicily*. He afterwards drove the Infidels entirely from this Island; and he likewise took from them the Islands of *Malta* and *Gozzo*.

Upon a false Report that *Roger* Duke of *Pouille* was dead his Brother *Boemond* seized some Towns, and forced these to acknowledge *William* the Son of *Roger* who had raised the Report of his Father's Death: But the Trick being discovered the Count of *Sicily* compelled the revolted Places to renew their Oath of Allegiance to his Nephew. At length *Boemond* having lost all in *Sicily* and finding that his Uncle was determined to support his Brother in the Dutchy of *Pouille* went over into *Asia*; where he afterwards reigned with the Title of Prince of *Antioch*, and his Descendants enjoyed the Principality of *Antioch* for many Years.

At the Death of *Roger* Count of *Sicily* in the Year 1102 his Son *Roger* succeeded: And by the Death of *William* Duke of *Pouille* without Issue this Prince had an Opportunity of annexing this Dutchy to *Sicily*. As his Dominions were now too large for the Title of Count he resolved to take that of King; and being fond of *Sicily* which his Father had obtained by Conquest all his Dominions were called by the Name of the Kingdom of the two *Sicilies*.

Being crowned in the Year 1129 at *Palermo* Pope *Calixtus* II. under the Pretence that only the Pope has a Right to erect a new Kingdom resented this as an Infringement

fringement of his Right, and resolv'd to depose *Roger*: The Attempts of *Calixtus* to do this were however vain; nor had his Successor *Honorius* any better Success against *Roger*. The next Pope *Innocent II.* managed so well that *Roger* was besieged in *San Germano* before he knew that any Preparations for War against him were made. From thence he fled to *Galuzzo* and was reduced to the greatest Extremity: But *William* his third Son being informed of the Danger *Roger* was in march'd towards this Place, and after defeating his Army made *Innocent* Prisoner. The Pope being immediately set at Liberty by *Roger* it had such an Effect, that he not only confirm'd to *Roger* the Title of King but he also gave him *Naples* and the *Terre de Labour*. Upon the arrival of the News at *Rome* of *Innocent's* being taken Prisoner a new Election was immediately proceeded to by the Cardinals, who gave him over for lost; and *Peter Leon* who took the Name of *Anaclet II.* was chosen. *Roger* thinking himself in no Danger from him he had treated so generously immediately set about the reconciling of himself to the new Pontiff; and was acknowledged by him as a King. In a Council call'd by *Innocent Anaclet* was condemn'd as an Usurper and put to Death; and the Emperor *Lothaire* was resolv'd to support the Right of *Innocent* to the Holy See. *Roger* now saw his Error in having sided with *Anaclet*, and to avoid the Resentment of *Innocent* and his powerful Ally went into *Sicily*. Hereupon *Pouille* and *Calabria* became an easy Prey to the Enemies of *Roger*, and Count *Raymond* was invest'd by *Innocent* with these: But after the Death of this Pontiff *Roger* recover'd his lost Dominions from *Raymond*; nor was he afterwards disturb'd in the Enjoyment thereof by any of the Successors of *Innocent*. Having now nothing to fear on this Side *Roger* made a Descent upon *Africa*; and after imposing a Tribute upon the King of *Tunis* carried his victorious Arms as far as *Palestine*. He died at *Palermo* soon after his Return from this Expedition in the Year 1155.

WILLIAM I. *William* his Son succeed'd to the Throne; but Pope 1155. *Adrian* refus'd to acknowledge him as a King. In Revenge he seiz'd three Towns in the Ecclesiastick State. Being

Being hereupon excommunicated, and his Subjects being discharged from their Oaths of Allegiance, Insurrections were raised in several Parts; and had *William* not been a Man of uncommon Conduct and Courage he must have been ruined. Without being in the least dismayed thereat he marched with a large Army into the *Pauille*, and put all that dared to dispute his Right to the Sword. Having reduced his rebellious Subjects to their Duty the Pope finding he could not carry his Point was glad to come to Terms with *William*.

Going afterwards over to *Egypt* *William* took several Towns from the Infidels and came home laden with their Spoils. While he was upon this Expedition *Manuel Comminus* Emperor of the East thought it a proper Time to attempt the reannexing of *Naples* and *Sicily* to his Empire. In his Return home *William* to his great Surprise fell in with the Imperial Fleet upon his own Coast: But having the good Fortune to obtain a Victory over it he took a hundred and fifty Vessels.

Thus far *William* made a glorious Figure; but being afterwards governed entirely by a Favourite named *Mayon* whom he had raised from Obscurity to the Degree of prime Minister, he became odious to his Subjects and a Conspiracy was formed against him by the Nobility. Into this that Wretch *Mayon* entered; but upon his being as a just Punishment for his Oppressions assassinated the Design upon the King's Life was laid aside, and he reduced some Towns that had revolted to Obedience. He died in the Year 1167: And *William* his Son by *Margaret* Daughter of *Garcias IV.* King of *Navarre* succeeded.

This Prince; who was only nine Years of Age at his Accession, at the Age of fourteen took the Administration of Affairs into his own Hands: And notwithstanding his Youth governed with such Prudence and Mildness as to obtain the Surname of *the Good*. A Quarrel breaking out betwixt the Emperor of *Germany* and the Pope *William* as his Father had in a like Case done sided with the latter; and when the Pope was no longer safe at *Rome* conducted him in his Gallies to *Venice*. Being determined to revenge the Death of the Emperor *Alexis*, whom his Governor *Andronicus* had caused to be drowned,

William

William landed in *Theſſalonica* with an Army. This Traitor durſt not oppoſe him; and the Nobility encouraged by the Preſence of *William* immediately ſeized and tore him to Pieces. *William* afterwards turned his Arms againſt *Joſeph* King of *Morocco*; and having vanquiſhed him in a pitched Battle made his Daughter Priſoner.

He has a great Hand in ſav- About this Time the Sultan *Saladin* after taking *Jeru-*
ing TYRE. ſalem had laid Siege to *Tyre*. The Emperor *Conrade* uſed his utmoſt Efforts to prevent the falling of this important Place into the Hands of *Saladin*; and upon *Conrade's* receiving a conſiderable Reinforcement from the King of the two *Sicilies* *Saladin* was glad to give over the Siege. *William* married *Jane* Daughter of *Henry II.* of *England*; but having no Children by her he a little before his Death declared his Aunt *Conſtance* Heireſs of his Dominions.

CONSTANCE This Princeſs Daughter of *Roger II.* had during her is appointed his Father's Life been confined in a Convent; becauſe an Succ'eſſor but Abbot named *Joachim*, who was by all looked upon to **TANCRED** is have the Gift of Prophecy, had told *Roger* that if ſhe crowned. ever married ſhe would throw all *Italy* into a Flame. After her Father's Death ſhe threw off the Veil; and married *Henry* Son of the Emperor *Frederick Barbaroſſa*. This Prince upon the Death of *William* ſet out at the Head of an Army to take Poſſeſſion of the two *Sicilies*: But in the mean Time the People not caſing to be ſubject to a *German* Prince had raiſed *Tancred* a Relation of their late King to the Throne; and Pope *Clement III.* who dreaded the Increate of the Emperor's Power in *Italy*, pretending that *Pouille* and *Calabria* did by the Death of *William* without the Iſſue Male revert to the *Holy See* had inveſted *Tancred* therewith.

The two SICI- While *Henry* was on his March he received the News **LIES** attacked that the Emperor his Father was drowned in *Paleſtine*. **by HENRY** He did nevertheleſs after ſtopping to be crowned Em- **Husband to** peror at *Rome* proceed in his Enterprize againſt **CONSTANCE.** *Tancred*. Having taken moſt of the Towns in *Pouille* and *Calabria* he ſat down before *Naples*; but a Plague occaſioned by the exceſſive Heat of the Seaſon made ſuch Havock in his Army that he was forced to raiſe the Siege and return into *Germany*. After his Departure the conquered Towns opened their Gates to

Tancred; and the Empress *Constance* whom *Henry* had left at *Salernum* was delivered into his Hands. As *Tancred* would not listen to any Proposal of *Henry* for ransoming her, the latter by ceding to him the City of *Tusculum* brought Pope *Celestin III.* into his Interest; by whose Threat of Excommunication *Tancred* was so frightened as to set *Constance* at Liberty, and she was immediately sent home by the Pope. After making great Levies in *Germany* *Henry* went again into *Italy*: And ^{Death of} as both *Tancred* and his Son *Roger* happened to die ^{TANCRED.} at this Conjunction the Minority of *William* Son of *Roger* made the Conquest of the *Two Sicilies* easy to him.

He revenged the delivering up of his Wife upon the ^{HENRY be-} Inhabitants of *Salernum* by razing this City to the ^{comes Master} Ground. He caused the Body of *Tancred* to be dug ^{of the two Si-} up and beheaded. He condemned *Tancred's* Widow to ^{CILIES.} perpetual Imprisonment; and he caused the young King *William* to be castrated. As *Constance* was soon after pregnant *Henry* to prevent the Suspicion of a supposititious Child, she being above fifty Years of Age, caused her to Lie-in at *Palermo*, and the principal Ladies of the Kingdom were present at her Delivery. The Birth of a Prince did not however extinguish the Hatred which the People had conceived against *Henry* on the Account of his Cruelty, and divers Conspiracies were formed against him; which being discovered *William* who was privy thereto had his Eyes put out and was sent into *Germany*. All the other Accomplices suffered most cruel Deaths: But one of them in particular, who was besides suspected of a criminal Intimacy with the Empress, was set naked in a Chair of red hot Iron and a Crown of the same Metal red hot was put upon his Head.

Henry offered to annex the Kingdom of the ^{NAPLES and} *Two Sicilies* to the Empire for ever, in case the Electors would ^{SICILY an-} consent to make the Imperial Crown hereditary in his ^{nexed to the} Family. The Offer was accepted; and his Son *Frederick* ^{Empire.} although but three Years of Age was declared his Successor. *Henry* died at *Messina* in the Year 1198, having been as it was supposed poisoned by *Constance* who had for some Time detested him.

Frederick being a Minor the Administration of the Affairs ^{FREDERICK,} of the Empire was in the Hands of his Uncle *Philip*, 1198.

and after his Death in the Hands of *Otho* Duke of *Brunswick*: But the Pope disliking the latter persuaded the *Germans* to invite *Frederick* into *Germany*. He went thither and was crowned at *Aix la Chapelle*; and the Army of *Otho* being defeated at the Battle of *Bovines* by *Philip* of *France* *Frederick* took Possession of the Empire.

War with the
POPE.

Going afterwards to be crowned again at *Rome* by *Honorius III.* he ceded to this Pontiff all that his Predecessors had taken from the Holy See: But as this would not satisfy the encroaching Temper of *Honorius* *Frederick* found it necessary soon after to declare War against him. While he was engaged in this War with the Pope, who had excommunicated him, *John* of *Brienne* King of *Jerusalem* came into *Europe* with the Princess *Iolanda* his Daughter, to beg Assistance against the *Saracens* who had driven him out of his Kingdom. *Frederick* being a Widower married this * Princess, and having reconciled himself to the Pope set out with a powerful Army and retook *Jerusalem*. During his Absence Pope *Gregory IX.* encouraged his Father-in-law *John* of *Brienne* to take Possession of *Naples*: But *Frederick* at his Return soon recovered the Possession thereof.

FREDERICK
is excommunicated and deposed.

Having afterwards taken the Island of *Sardinia* from the *Saracens* the Pope insisted that this Island should as it used to do belong to its own Bishop; which being refused by *Frederick* he was excommunicated, and several Towns of *Italy* were encouraged by the Pope to throw off all Obedience to him. Great Preparations for War were now made on both Sides; but the Pope's Army being defeated he was glad to make Peace, and it was agreed that every Thing in Dispute should be settled by a general Council. There was no Time for the holding of a general Council during the Papacy of *Gregory IX.* or of his Successor *Celestine IV.*: But the next Pope *Innocent IV.* assembled one at *Lions* which consisted of 140 Bishops of different Nations. The Emperor being thereby deposed *Germany* was torn into Factions; and the Parties of *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* were likewise revived in *Italy*. While *Frederick* was

* On the Account of this Alliance the Kings of *SICILY* have ever since called themselves Kings of *JERUSALEM*.

suc-

successful against the Pope in *Italy* the Archbishops of *Mantz* and *Cologn* at the Instigation of the Council proposed the Election of a new Emperor; and *Henry Landgrave of Thuring* was chosen. A Battle ensued betwixt *Conrade* Son of *Frederick* and *Henry*; but the former being worsted was forced to save himself by Flight. His Success shortly after in the Battle of *Ulm* was much better; and *Henry* died of the Wounds he received therein. *William* Count *Holland* was now elected Emperor and large Remittances were made to him by the Pope. He could not however support his Election; for being defeated by *Conrade* he was forced to return to *Holland*. In *Italy* also *Frederick* established his Affairs pretty well, and he made a near Relation of *Innocent's* whom he had declared King of *Sardinia* Prisoner: Yet the Quarrel betwixt him and the Pope continued until his Death in the Year 1250.

Upon the Death of *Frederick* *William* revived his Pretensions to the *Imperial* Crown; but as the Lay Princes did in the general declare for *Conrade* *William* soon found the Assistance of the Ecclesiastical ones insufficient to support him. *Conrade* after ruining *Naples* and some other Towns in his Interest defeated the Pope's Army commanded by his Nephew. Being obliged to return into *Germany* *Conrade* left the Command in *Italy* and the Care of his Son *Conradin* to *Mainfroy* his natural Brother. During the Absence of *Conrade* *William* was prevailed upon by the Pope to come Incognito to *Rome*; but finding the Affairs of *Innocent* quite different from what they had been represented he returned to *Holland*.

After the Death of *Conrade* in the Year 1254 many *Many Towns* Towns in *Italy* threw off their Subjection to the Empire, in *ITALY* and erected themselves into Republicks; and their In- make them-
dependency was many Years afterwards confirmed to selves independ-
them for Sums of Money by the Emperor *Rodolpb*. In dent.
Consequence thereof these Towns were perpetually at Variance with each other; and *Italy* was for many Years a Theatre of Confusion and Civil War.

Mainfroy upon the Death of *Conrade* gave it out that *Conradin* was also dead, and caused himself to be proclaimed King: But being excommunicated by Pope *Alexander* IV. the Kingdom of the *Two Sicilies* was by
Urban

Urban IV. his Successor offered to *Charles* Count of *Anjou* Brother to *Lewis IX* of *France*.

CHARLES I. This Prince contrary to the Advice of his Brother accepted the Offer, and was proclaimed King of the *Two Sicilies* and *Jerusalem* at *Rome*: And having defeated the Army of *Mainfroy*, who was afterwards slain by *John* Count of *Caserte* whose Wife he had violated, all *Naples* and *Sicily* submitted to him. *Conradin* who retired into *Germany* sold Part of *Suabia* to the Duke of *Bavaria*; and having raised a considerable Army went back into *Italy*. In a Battle fought near the Lake of *Celano* the *Germans* had at first the Advantage; but falling to plunder too soon *Charles* who was reinforced with some fresh Troops fell upon them and routed them with great Slaughter. *Conradin* and his Cousin *Frederick* Duke of *Austria* fled in Disguise. Being discovered by offering a Ring to Sale they were carried back to *Naples* and tried as Traitors. *Conradin* was beheaded; but he found Means to convey from the Scaffold his Ring to *Peter III.* of *Arragon* his Cousin, as a Testimony that *CONRADIN* *is* he bequeathed to the House of *Arragon* his Right to the Crown. Having first agreed to present a white Mare and to pay 40,000 Crowns into the Apostolick Chamber yearly *Charles* was by Order of the Pope in the Year 1266 crowned King of the *Two Sicilies*. Instead of residing at *Palermo*, which had been the usual Residence of his Predecessors, *Charles* kept his Court at *Naples*. He is said by the best Historians to have been an ambitious, covetous and cruel Prince. In his Reign the horrible Massacre of the *French* called the *Sicilian Vesper* was perpetrated. He died in the Year 1285 and was succeeded by *Charles* his Son.

CHARLES II. This Prince having been sent in his Father's Life against the Fleet of *Arragon* commanded by Admiral *Lora*, he engaged too precipitately and was taken Prisoner. The Inhabitants of *Messina*, who had declared for *Peter* of *Arragon*, in Revenge for the Sufferings of *Conradin* from his Father condemned *Charles* to die; and *Constance* Queen of *Arragon* Daughter of *Mainfroy*, at whose Disposal his Life was, told him he should be beheaded as *Conradin* was, and admonished him to prepare for Death on the *Friday* following. *Charles* answered

answered boldly, *That by calling to Mind how the Saviour of the World died for Man on the same Day of the Week he should meet Death patiently.* Moved by this Answer *Constance* replied, *That if the Respect for that Day inspired him with such Courage, she out of Respect for the Day of the Week on which our Lord pardoned his Enemies would spare his Life.* The Order for his Death being hereupon revoked *Charles* was sent to *Barcelona*. During his Imprisonment his Father died, and the Government of his Dominions was by the Pope and *Philip of France* committed to *Robert Count of Artois*. At length by the Interposition of *Edward I. of England* *Charles* was set at Liberty; and as a Security for his Compliance with the Terms agreed upon his Sons *Lewis, Robert and John*, were left with *Alphonso King of Arragon*. Notwithstanding this Agreement, by Virtue of which *Charles* was crowned at *Rome* in the Year 1289, *James the Brother of Alphonso*, who claimed under *Conradin*, took upon himself the Title of King of the two *Sicilies* and continued the War in *Calabria*: But the Kingdom of *Arragon* falling to him by the Death of his Brother he accommodated Matters with *Charles*. The Terms were that *James*, who was to marry *Charles's* Daughter, should give up all Claim to the two *Sicilies*: In Lieu of which *Charles* engaged that *Charles of Valois* should renounce all Pretensions to *Arragon* and *Valencia*.

While *Charles* was gone into *France* to procure this Renunciation *Frederick* Brother to *James* attempted to make himself Master of *Sicily*. *James* protested against the Attempt and assisted *Charles* with his Fleet: But *Frederick* being worsted in one Action his Brother, who was unwilling that he should be driven quite out of this Island, recalled his Succours. *Frederick* in a little Time subdued all *Sicily* and carried the War into *Naples*. A Treaty was at last agreed upon: By which *Frederick* was to enjoy *Sicily* during his Life with the Title of King of *Trinacria*; to marry one of *Charles's* Daughters; and to assist him in conquering *Sardinia*. *Charles* out of his great Zeal for *Christianity* published an Edict for compelling all the *Saracens* in his Dominions to renounce *Mahometism*: But as the evil Spirit of Persecution when once raised knows no Bounds, he afterwards most

unjustly persecuted the *Knights Templars* in his *French* Dominions. He died in the Year 1309.

ROBERT King
of NAPLES,
1309.

Robert his Son, surnamed the *Prudent*, before his Advancement to the Throne of *Naples* gave such Proofs of Courage and Conduct, that the *Florentines* and other States begged of him to command their Troops against the *Gibelines*. All his good Qualities could not however prevent *Charles II.* Son of *Charles Martel* King of *Hungary* from disputing the Succession to *Naples* with him: But the Pope paying more Regard to the Merit of *Robert* than to the Pretensions of *Charles* his elder Brother's Son caused him, to be crowned at *Avignon*.

War with the
EMPEROR.

Espousing the Cause of the *Guelphs* *Robert* was cited to the Diet by the Emperor *Henry VII.* and not appearing he was sentenced to lose his Life and Dominions. Notwithstanding the Remonstrances of *Philip the Fair* of *France* against the Injustice of the Emperor he entered the Territories of *Robert*; but he was repulsed with some Loss. An End was at last put to their Quarrel in which no great Advantage was gained on either Side by the Death of *Henry*. *Lewis* Successor of *Henry* being disgusted with the Pope went to *Rome* in order to have a new one elected: But by the timely coming up of *Robert's* Army to the Pope's Assistance the Emperor was forced to retire with his Troops. The *Florentines* being hard pressed by the *Gibelines* begged the Protection of *Robert*; but the Army sent to their Relief was in endeavouring to raise the Siege of *Montcatin* defeated. *Robert* lost his Son *Charles* and his Brother *Peter* in this Battle; and another Brother named *Philip* was taken Prisoner. Being called to the Assistance of the *Genoese* *Robert* after sustaining a Siege of seven Months sallied out of *Genoa* and obliged the *Gibelines* to raise the Siege.

ROBERT is
made Lord of
GENOA.

For this extraordinary Service he was made Lord of *Genoa* and resided there eighteen Years. In a Voyage from thence to *France* he was very near losing his Life, *Frederick* of *Sicily* having hired some Villains to fire his Ship; but the Design being discovered they were seized and put to Death. The Death of *Frederick* soon after prevented *Robert* from the revenging this base Action.

Peter,

Peter, who succeeded to *Sicily* at the Death of *Frederick* his Father in the Year 1328, having made himself odious to the People *Robert* resolved to attempt the Conquest of this Island. He took *Lipari*; obtained one Victory; and was in a fair Way of succeeding had he not been called home to quell an Insurrection. After this *Robert* devoted himself entirely to Books; of which he was so fond that he used to say he would rather be deprived of his Crown than of the Pleasure of Reading. He was remarkably generous to all Men of Learning and particularly so to the famous *Petrarch*. He died in the Year 1343; and having no Sons settled the Kingdom of *Naples* upon *Jane* his Grand-daughter.

Peter of *Sicily* who died in the preceding Year was succeeded by *Lewis* his Son. During the Minority of this Prince, who was but five Years of Age at his Accession, the Government of *Sicily* was in the Hands of *John Duke of Athens* his Uncle.

Jane who had in her Grandfather's Life married *Andrew* Brother to *Lewis* of *Hungary* was by no Means willing he should be crowned with her; and as this was insisted upon by the Pope the Aversion she had long had for him from that Time encreased. In September 1345 *Andrew* was found hanging in his Chamber which was near to that of the Queen. Vengeance being threatened by his Brother *Lewis* of *Hungary* the Queen who was supposed the Contriver of his Death caused the same be enquired into; and in order to take off the Odium from herself some innocent Persons suffered for it.

In the following Year she married *Lewis* of *Tarentum* her first Cousin: But as this Prince was suspected of having had too great an Intimacy with her during her former Husband's Life, and of being accessary to his Death, the King of *Hungary* went over to *Italy* with an Army and soon made himself Master of *Naples*. *Jane* dreading his Resentment fled with her Husband into *France*: By the Interposition however of the Pope, to whom being in want of Money she sold *Avignon* for eighty thousand Florins, she was suffered to return after an Absence of five Years.

Her second Husband *Lewis* dying in the Year 1362 she was within a Year married to *James* Infant of *Majorca*.

Majorca afterwards King of *Arragon*. This Prince, who was called to assist his Father in recovering his Kingdom of *Majorca* from the King of *Arragon*, being taken Prisoner *Jane* paid 40,000 Crowns for his Ransom; but her Behaviour afterwards broke his Heart. He died in the Year 1368.

She marries
OTHO of
BRUNSWICK.

In the Year 1372 she married for the fourth Time *Otho* of *Brunswick*. After the Death of this Prince Pope *Urban* invested *Charles de Duras* with the Right of succeeding to *Naples*: Who having married *Mary* Sister of *Jane* was according to the Disposition of *Robert* to succeed on Failure of the Issue of *Jane*. To prevent this *Jane* adopted *Lewis* of *Anjou* Brother of *Charles V.* of *France*: But *de Duras* took Occasion from her abandoned Life to cause her to be seized and smothered between two Feather-Beds in the Year 1382.

She is put to
Death, 1382.

Kings of SI-
CILY.

During the long and scandalous Reign of *Jane* in *Naples Sicily* had had several Masters. *Lewis* Successor as it was before observed of *Peter* his Father died in the Year 1355. His Brother and Successor *Frederick* left only a Daughter named *Mary*. This Princess who married *Martin* Infant of *Arragon* reigned from the Year 1368 to the Year 1401.

CHARLES
III. 1381.

Charles III. surnamed the *Short*, Son of *Lewis de Duras* was crowned King of *Naples* in the Year 1381 by the Pope; who in order to facilitate *Charles's* Conquest of this Kingdom furnished him with a large Sum of Money. Being appointed in the Year 1370 to command the Forces of *Lewis* of *Hungary* against the *Venetians*, *Charles* for his great Address in bringing about a Reconciliation betwixt the two contending Powers obtained the Surname of the *Peace maker*. Upon the Death of *Lewis* in the Year 1382 the *Hungarians* invited *Charles* into *Hungary*. At first he took only the Title of Governor. He was however crowned King of *Hungary* in the Year 1385: But this was so resented by *Elizabeth* Widow of *Lewis* and *Mary* her Daughter that they caused him to be assassinated at a Feast in the next Year.

LADISLAUS,
1386.

Ladislaus Son of *Charles* was crowned King of *Naples* at *Gaieta* by the Legate of Pope *Boniface IX.* in the Year 1390. *Lewis* of *Anjou* the adopted Son of *Jane* was at the same Time acknowledged as King by Pope *Clement*

ment VII. whose Residence was at *Avignon*: But having lost his Credit at the Siege of *Aversa* he returned to *France*, and the whole Kingdom of *Naples* submitted to *Ladislaus*.

After the Death of *Mary* Daughter of *Frederick*,^{SICILY is annexed to AR-} whose only Son *Frederick* survived her but a Year, *Martin* her Husband continued to reign in *Sicily* till the Year ^{RAGON, 1409} 1409. Upon his Death *Martin* King of *Arragon* his Father succeeded; and transmitted the Kingdom of *Sicily* together with *Arragon* to his Nephew *Ferdinand*.

Sigismund King of *Hungary* having been imprisoned by ^{LADISLAUS} the Nobility *Boniface* managed so as to get *Ladislaus* crowned King of *Hungary* in the Year 1403. His Reign ^{King of HUNGARY} there was however but short; for *Sigismund* found Means ^{1403.} to procure his Liberty and forced *Ladislaus* to quit *Hungary*. After revenging himself upon his principal Enemies in *Hungary* *Sigismund* went over to *Italy*, and laid Siege to *Rome*; but fearing an Excommunication he soon after accommodated Matters with the Pope. At the Sollicitation of Pope *Benedict* XIII. *Ladislaus* had put a Garrison into *Rome*; but this was soon expelled, and *Rome* was reduced by *Lewis* of *Anjou* to the Obedience of Pope *Alexander* V. the rival of *Benedict*. *Lewis* had besides the better of it in a pitched Battle against *Ladislaus*: yet instead of making use of these Advantages he returned to *France*.

Ladislaus was at last confirmed by Pope *John* XXIII. He is poisoned. Successor of *Alexander* in the Possession of *Naples*: But this Pope was determined at all Events to get *Rome* out of his Hands. This was at last effected by bribing a Physician whose Daughter *Ladislaus* was fond of. The Pope gave her something to rub her private Parts with, persuading her it would secure the Continuance of the King's Love to her. The credulous Girl doing as directed was herself poisoned; and the Poison had the same Effect upon *Ladislaus* the next Time he embraced her. He had however Time to be carried to *Naples*; where he died in the Year 1414 without Issue.

His Sister *Jane* who succeeded having buried her first Husband *William* of *Austria* Son of *Leopold*, she in ^{JANE II.} the Year 1415 married *James* Son of *John* of *Bourbon* ¹⁴¹⁴ and *Catherine* of *Vendome*. This Prince, not being able
to

to bear the Insolence of *Pandolph Alope* and *Mutio Sforça* her Favourites, put the former to Death; imprisoned the latter; confined the Queen; and took the Management of Affairs into his own Hands. *Julius* of *Capua* Grand Marshal of the Kingdom, by whose Advice all this was done, being disgusted at the Partiality of *James* in raising none but *Frenchmen* to Offices laid a Plot to cut him off: And hoping thereby to recover the Queen's Favour made her privy to it. She seemingly approved thereof; but having vowed Revenge upon the Marshal as well as upon *James* she discovered it and he was put to Death.

*After being
some Time con-
fined by her
Husband she is
set at Liberty.*

This Faithfulness, as he took it to be, of *Jane's* so wrought upon the King that she was set at Liberty, and had as formerly the Direction of every Thing: But she soon contrived to stir the People up against him and clapped him into Prison. By the Intreaty of *Martin V.* of *Arragon* *James* was set at Liberty; and having sold the Principality of *Tarentum* to *John Anthony Ursin* he to shew his Contempt both of the Queen and People returned to *France*, and died in a Convent there in the Year 1438. After the Death of *Alope* the Queen fixed her Affections upon *John Carracciol* of *Naples*, who besides a fine Person had both Sense and Courage. Being made Lord High Steward he prevailed upon her to banish *Sforça* his Rival. The Pope to whom this brave General had done great Services was so provoked thereat, that he declared the Crown of *Naples* forfeited and invested *Lewis* of *Anjou* therewith.

*She adopts AL-
PHONSO of
ARRAGON,
and after-
wards LEWIS
and RENE of
ANJOU.*

In order to secure herself against the united Attempts of the *Pope*, *France* and *Sforça*, *Jane* adopted *Alphonso* Son of *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*: But his Ingratitude soon discovered itself in endeavouring to exclude her from all Share in the Government; and some Attempts were made upon her Life. Upon this she recalled *Sforça*; and by his Advice revoked the Adoption of *Alphonso* and appointed *Lewis* of *Anjou* her Successor. This Disposition was approved of by *Clement V.* But as *Lewis* died before *Jane* she in the Year 1438 by a Will made upon the Day she died appointed *Rene* of *Anjou* his Brother Heir of all her Dominions.

At the Death of *Ferdinand* Nephew and Successor to *Martin* the Elder in the Year 1416 *Alphonso V.* his Son

named the *Wife* succeeded to *Arragon* and *Sicily*. He died in the Year 1458 and was succeeded by *John* his Brother. The Kingdoms of *Arragon* and *Sicily* were afterwards annexed to *Castile* by the Marriage of *Ferdinand* the *Catholick* Son and Successor of *John* with *Isabella* Heiress of *Castile*.

Rene of *Anjou* being Prisoner at *Dijon* when *Jane* RENE, 1435- died his *Wife* *Isabella* set out immediately for *Naples* and was received as Sovereign. Having afterwards purchased his Liberty he entered into an Alliance with the *Genese*; and received the Investiture of *Naples* from Pope *Eugene* IV.

Upon his Arrival at *Naples* divers Towns submitted ALPHONSO L. to him; but being besieged in the Capital and in Danger of falling into *Alphonso's* Hands he was glad to save himself by Flight and leave his Rival in the Possession of the Kingdom.

Upon the Death of *Alphonso* in the Year 1458 FERDINAND] his natural Son, who had been legitimated by Pope I. 1458. *Eugene*, succeeded to the Crown of *Naples*. During his Reign, which lasted 36 Years, *John* Son of *Rene* entered the Kingdom with a large Army and had taken the City of *Naples*; but Pope *Pius* II. being firmly attached to *Ferdinand* he was soon driven from thence.

Alphonso the Son and Successor of *Ferdinand* having ALPHONSO II. 1434- reigned one Year the Crown fell to *Ferdinand* his Son.

During the Reign of this Prince *Charles* VIII. of FERDINAND France, to whose Predecessor *Lewis* XI. *Charles* the II. 1495- last Duke of *Anjou* had bequeathed his Pretensions, in a few Months subdued the greatest Part of the Kingdom: But as this alarmed *Europe* a Confederacy was entered into by the *Emperor*, the *Pope*, *Ferdinand* of *Spain* and some other Powers, for driving the *French* out of *Italy*. Hereupon *Charles* afraid of being shut up in *Naples* made the best of his Way for *France*; and *Ferdinand*, who reigned but little more than a Year, both lost and was restored in this short Time to his Dominions.

As *Ferdinand* left no Children *Frederick* his Uncle FREDERICK, succeeded. *Lewis* XII. of *France* had a Mind to assert 1496. his Pretensions to *Naples*; but calling to Mind the ill Success of *Charles* he entered into an Agreement with *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* for dividing this Kingdom between

NAPLES annexed to SPAIN
1504.

MAZANELLO's Sedition, 1647.

twixt them. The Conquest thereof was soon made, and *Frederick* who was in the Year 1501, carried into *France* spent the Remainder of his Days there. A Dispute arising betwixt the Conquerors about adjusting their Shares it came to a Rupture. In this the *French* had at first the Advantage; but by the brave Conduct of the *Spanish* General *Gonsalvo* they were afterwards forced to evacuate *Naples*; and as *Sicily* had for some Time been it was about the Year 1504 annexed to the Kingdom of *Spain*.

In the Year 1647 the Inhabitants of *Naples* being disgusted at the imposing of a Tax upon Provisions, a Fisherman named *Thomas Agnello*, called by a corrupt Way of speaking *Mazanello*, about twenty four Years of Age declared himself publicly the Defender of the Peoples Liberties. As he was one Day carrying Fish to Market the Tax thereof was demanded and upon his refusing to pay it the Officers seized him; but the People soon rescued him and breaking open the Custom-house burnt all the Books of the Commissioners. From thence they went and set Fire to the Houses of all such as had been most forward to lay on the new Tax, and would not suffer them to save the least Thing. They went next to the *Viceroy* with *Mazanello* at their Head, and demanded of him on Pain of Death that all Taxes should be taken off, and that the Privileges granted to them by *Ferdinand* and *Charles V.* should be confirmed: And every Person who dared to oppose them was immediately put to Death by *Mazanello's* Order. The Cardinal *Philomarini* Archbishop of *Naples* after taking vast Pains to appease the People offered a large bribe to *Mazanello*; but he honestly refused to accept thereof, and would lay down his Authority on no other Terms than those demanded of the *Viceroy*. Finding it must be so the Archbishop went with him to the *Viceroy*; and Articles of Agreement were signed upon those Terms. *Mazanello* immediately let the People know what he had done and desired every Man to go home and behave quietly; charging them however at the same Time not to part with their Arms untill the Agreement was confirmed by the Court of *Madrid*. The following Inscription is also said to have been engraven upon a marble Pillar by his Order:

MAZANELLO PRINCE AND CHIEF OF THE PEOPLE ENJOINS AND COMMANDS EVERY PERSON TO OBEY NO OTHER ORDERS THAN THOSE OF THE DUKE D'ARCOS VICEROY. After acting thus surprizingly he fell into a Delirium. Some say this was occasioned by Poison given him by Order of the Viceroy: Others that having been eight Days without Rest and constantly employed in Things too mighty for him it turned his Brain. However this was the Orders he now gave being inconsistent with his former ones he was deserted, and some Gentlemen taking the Opportunity of this State of Things to kill him his Head was fixed upon a Pole, and his Body was dragged through the Streets by the same Mob who just before had almost adored him. As this was thought by the Court of France a proper Time to attempt the Conquest of the Kingdom the Duke of Guise was sent with a powerful Fleet to Naples. He was received by the Malecontents with open Arms: But the Insurrection being quelled he was seized by the Spanish Party and carried Prisoner into Spain.

After the Death of Charles II. of Spain Philip Duke NAPLES con- of Anjou took Possession of Naples and Sicily: But ^{quered by} the Party of the Archduke Charles, who also claimed CHARLES the Spanish Succession, being prevalent in Italy he in the Archduke of AUSTRIA, 1706. Year 1706 made himself Master of Naples.

In Pursuance of the Treaty of Utrecht the Spaniards ^{The Emperor is} evacuated Sicily in Favour of the Duke of Savoy: But ^{put into Pos-} it was agreed afterwards by the Treaty of Quadruple Al- ^{session of Si-} liance that the Emperor Charles VI. should have this ^{CILY.} Island. In lieu thereof Charles ceded Sardinia to the Duke of Savoy: And he agreed that Don Carlos should succeed to Tuscany, Parma and Placentia. Many Difficulties were raised afterwards by the Court of Vienna to prevent this Disposition in Favour of Don Carlos from taking Place: But he was at length introduced into Italy by a British Fleet.

Upon the breaking out of the War on Account of NAPLES and the Polish Election France, Spain and Sardinia united SICILY are against the Emperor. Whilst the French and Sardinian ^{conquered by} Troops attacked the Imperialists in the Milanese Don DON CAR- Carlos accompanied by Count Montemar advanced to- ^{LOS who is} wards the Kingdom of Naples. Count Julius Visconti ^{proclaimed} the King, 1734.

the Viceroy fled upon the Approach of the *Spaniards* towards the *Pouille*; nor could Count *Traun*, who lay entrenched with 3000 Men in order to dispute their Passage, stop the Progress of the *Spaniards*. The Deputies from many Towns had met and submitted to the Infant in the *Ecclesiastick State*. In 1734 the Deputies from *Naples* had a Conference with him at *Aversa*; and the Priviledges of this City being confirmed he upon the 10th of the next Month made his publick Entry thereinto. *Amalfi*, *Nola*, *Salernum*, *Soriento* and many other Towns declared also for *Spain*; and upon the Arrival of an Express from *Madrid* with the Cession of the two *Sicilies* to *Don Carlos* he was immediately proclaimed.

Battle of
BITONTO.

Count *Montemar* finding that the 4000 Men detached under the Duke of *Castropignano* were not sufficient to act against *Visconti*, who had got together eight or nine Thousand and was strongly entrenched near *Bitonto*, he went with 6000 more and attacked his Entrenchments Sword in Hand. After an obstinate Resistance the *Austrians* gave Way and 1400 of their Infantry were taken Prisoners; the rest with their Cavalry fled towards the Mountains of *Calabria*, where many of them were cut off by the Peasants. This Victory was followed with the surrender of *Guieta* on the 6th of *August*; and *Capua* did the same upon the 24th of *November*. Count *Montemar* now made for his Services Duke of *Bitonto* set out immediately for *Sicily*; and had such Success in subduing this Island that the King was in the following Year crowned at *Palermo*. The Preliminaries of *Vienna* which were entred into by *France* without the Knowledge of her Allies put a Stop to all further Operations in *Italy*.

Preliminaries
of VIENNA.

By these *France* engaged that the King of the two *Sicilies* should cede the Reversion of *Tuscany* to the Duke of *Lorrain*; and the Dutchies of *Parma* and *Placentia* which were in his Possession to the Emperor. The Dutchy of *Milan* Part thereof being reserved for the King of *Sardinia* was also to be restored to the Emperor.

DON CARLOS
accedes thereto,
1735.

The Kings of *Spain* and the two *Sicilies* were by no Means satisfied with these Terms, and for some Time delayed to make the stipulated Cessions: But his Father having at last acceded to the Preliminaries of *Vienna* *Don Carlos*

Carlos did by an Act signed at Naples in December 1736 accede thereto also.

In the Year 1738 Don Carlos married Mary Emilia Treaty with Christina Daughter of the King of Poland. He after the Sultan, wards concluded a Treaty of Amity and Commerce 1740. with the Sultan: Which was signed in April 1740 at Constantinople.

As the two Sicilies have thus lately been conquered by The Interest of the Troops of Spain, and erected by Virtue of a Cession the two Sicilies from the King of Spain into an independent Kingdom, LIES is con- the Interest of the Kingdom of the two Sicilies seems at need wish present to be so strongly connected with that of Spain, that of SPAIN. of which an Account has been already given, that it is unnecessary to say any Thing further thereof.

C H A P. VII.
Of V E N I C E.

*Origin of the
Republick.*

THE northern barbarous Nations, encouraged by the Contempt the western Empire was fallen into, had towards the Middle of the fifth Century spread themselves as far as *Italy*. The Huns were the first of these Nations who under *Attila* their King made an Irruption thereinto; and *Aquicia* for refusing to admit them was sacked. *Milan, Pavia, Concordia, Este* and *Padua* having all in their Turn felt the Rage of these barbarous Nations many Families fled for Safety to the *Islands* in the *Adriatick*. By Degrees seventy two of the *Lagune* Islands which lay near the *Rialto*, upon which the first Comers settled, were peopled. At first every Island was distinct and a Sort of independent State governed by a Tribune; but they were all afterwards united by Bridges and composed that marvellous City since called *Venice*.

*The LAGUNES
at first govern-
ed by Tribunes.*

PAULUCIO is The Government of Tribunes being by Reason of the frequent Quarrels of these Magistrates found inconvenient, it was about the End of the seventh Century resolved to choose one supreme Magistrate and to give him the Title of *Doge*. *Paulucio Anafesto* being the Person pitched upon he made it his Business to digest the Laws in a concise and plain Method.

MARCELLO,
717.

Marcello Tegalliano who succeeded in the Year 717 was in the Year 726 succeeded by *Orso Ippato*.

ORSO; 726.

This Doge attempting to abuse his Power was assassinated by the People in the Year 737; and the Government came into the Hands of Knights.

The Seat of Residence was by these removed from *Heraclea* to *Malomoco*: But as the choosing of them annually was attended with Disturbances the People in the Year 742 elected *Theodato Ippato* the Son of *Orso Doge*.

As

As this Doge did also make an Attempt to abuse his THEODATO.
Power his Eyes were put out and he was banished in 752.

Dominico Monegario the next Doge shared the same DOMINICO,
Fate for the same wicked Attempt. 752.

Mauritio Galbaio his Successor in the Year 758 assist-MAURITIO,
ed *Charlemain* at the Siege of *Pavia*, when he took *Didier* 758.
King of *Lombardy* Prisoner. He died in the Year 781.

Giovanni Galbaio who had been seven Years associated GIOVANNI
in the Government with his Father, a Thing commonly 781.
at that Time done by the *Doges* in order to secure the
Succession in their Families, was in the Year 804 banished
together with his Son and Collegue *Mauritio*.

Obelerio Anlenorio being next chosen Doge he was de-OBELERIO,
posed in the Year 809 by the People for siding with 804.
Pepin, who had been made by *Charlemain* his Father
King of *Lombardy*, against the Emperor of the *East* their
natural Ally.

Pepin in Revenge made War against the new Doge ANGELO, 809.
Angelo Participatio and took from the Republick several
Islands: But he was afterwards reconciled to him and
made him a Visit. While he was at *Venice* he gene-
rously restored these *Islands*, and discharged the *Venetians*
from a Tribute they were accustomed to pay: Nor did
his Generosity stop here; for he gave them a Tract of
Land upon the neighbouring Coast, and ordered their
City to be called from the *Veneti* who inhabited this
Coast *Venice*. Observing that their supreme Magistrate
had no Mark of Distinction he took his Sleeve from his
Coat and put it on his Head: And from this it is said
the ducal Horn since wore by the *Doges* took its Rise.

Giustiniano his Son and Successor was elected in the GIUSTINI-
Year 827. In his Time *St. Mark's* Church was found-ANO, 827.
ed upon a Body, said to be that of *St. Mark*, brought
by some Merchants from *Alexandria*, and the *Venetians*
took this Saint for their Patron. He died in the Year
829.

Giovanni his Brother being of a tyrannical Disposition GIOVANNI
he was in the Year 836 deposed. PARTICIPA-

Pierro Gradenigo who succeeded sent a Fleet of 60 TIO, 829.
Sail of Ships to assist the Emperor of the *East* against the PIERRE
Saracens. These being all sunk or taken the *Saracens* GRADENIGO,
became Masters of the *Adriatick* Sea; which so exas- 836.
perated

- perated the Populace that they fell upon and murdered him in a Church during divine Service in the Year 864.
- ORSO, 864. *Orso Participatio* his Successor recovered *Candia* from the *Saracens* for the *Greeks*.
- GIOVANNI PARTICIPATIO II. 881. *Giovanni Participatio* his Son succeeded in the Year 881. In the Time of *Pierre Tribuno*, who succeeded in the Year 887, the *Hungarians* did after vanquishing the Emperor *Berenger* attack *Venice*; but they were repulsed with great Loss.
- PIERRE, 887.
- ORSO, 909. *Orso Badecro* his Successor in the Year 909 was the first who coined Money in *Venice*.
- PIERRE CANDIANO, 932. *Pierre Candiano* who succeeded in the Year 932 conquered Part of *Istria*; and made the *Sclavonians* tributary. He died in the Year 941.
- PIERRE CANDIANO II. 941. *Pierre* his Son and Successor rendered himself so odious to the People, that they set fire to his Palace in the Year 952 and killed him as he was endeavouring to make his escape.
- PIERRE CANDIANO, III. 978. His Son and Successor *Pierre* was assassinated in the Year 976.
- PIERRE ORSEOLO, 976. The next Doge *Pierre Orseolo* resigned the Government in the Year 978 and became a Friar.
- VITALO, 979. *Vitalo Candiano* his Successor did the same thing in the Year 979. In his Time the *Venetians* relieved *Bari* in *Naples* which was besieged by the *Turks*.
- TRIBUNO, 979. *Tribuno Memo* followed the Examples of his two Predecessors, and retired in the Year 991 into a Monastery.
- PIERRE ORSEOLO, II. 991. In the Time of the next Doge *Pierre Orseolo II.* the Republick began to flourish: For the *Venetians* not only enjoyed a free Trade with *Greece*, *Syria* and *Egypt*, but he obtained for them a large Tract of Land upon the Coast of *Italy*. The *Dalmatians* and *Istrians* after suffering a great deal from the Inhabitants of *Narenta* did also put themselves under his Protection; and from this Time the Doge of *Venice* took the Title of Duke of *Dalmatia*. He died in the Year 1009.
- OTTO, 1009. In regard to the Memory of this Doge *Otton Orseolo* his Son although no more than 18 Years of age was chosen; but the People repenting thereof banished him in the Year 1024 and elected *Pierre Barbolano*.

Centraio Orseolo Patriarch of *Aquileia* caused this **PIERRE**,
Doge to be deposed: And his Brother *Otton* was restored. 1024.

Dominico Fiabonico who succeeded in the Year 1034 **DOMINICO**,
made a Law that no Doge should have a Collegue. 1034.

Dominico Contarino, who was raised to the Dogeship **DOMINICO**,
in the Year 1042, reduced *Zara* a maritime Town in **1042**.
Dalmatia which had revolted to Obedience; and obtained
a Victory over *Robert Guiscard* Duke of *Pouille*. He
died in the Year 1060.

The next Doge *Dominico Silvio* was deposed in the **DOMINICO**,
Year 1083 for his ill Success against *Guiscard*. 1060.

Vitalo Faliero had no better Success in the War against **VITALO**,
Guiscard than his Predecessor; but by extending the **DO-MICHIELLE**,
minions of the Republick in *Dalmatia* he secured him- **1083**.
self from the Resentment of the People.

Vitalo Michiele, who was elected in the Year 1095, **VITALO MI-**
being well skilled in naval Affairs the Fleet of the Re- **CHIELE**,
publick was encreased to 200 Sail. His Son being sent **1095**.
out therewith he took 22 Gallies from the *Pisans* off
Rhodes; and afterwards made himself Master of *Brun-*
dinum.

Ordelaffo Faliero succeeded in the Year 1101, and **ORDELAFFO**.
having defeated the *Paduans* the two States did by the
Mediation of the Emperor come to an Agreement about
their Limits. He once repulsed the *Hungarians*; but
upon their invading *Dalmatia* a second Time he was
slain in Battle and the *Venetians* were glad to sue for
Peace. In his Time great Part of *Venice* was burnt
down by an accidental Fire.

At his Death in the Year 1120 *Dominico Michiele* was **DOMINICO**;
elected Doge. He went at the Recommendation of the **1120**.
Pope with a powerful Fleet to the Assistance of *Baldwin*
King of *Jerusalem*; and had a considerable Share in re-
covering *Tyre* from the *Saracens*. The taking of this
important Place would have rendered the Conquest of all
Syria easy to the *Christians*, had not the Doge been
obliged to return home for the Defence of his own Do-
minions; which were attacked by the Emperot of the
East. The Perfidy of the latter cost him dear; for the
Doge took from him the Islands of *Samos*, *Scio*, *Rhodes*,
Mitillino and *Andro*. Having afterwards reconquered
Dalmatia he died in the Year 1131.

PIERRE,
1131.

Pierre Polano his Successor conquered *Fano*; and defeated the Armies of *Pisa* and *Padua*. In his Time the *Venicians* made a Descent upon *Sicily* and brought away much Spoil.

DOMINICO,
1147.

In the Year 1147 *Dominico Morisini* was elected. He made *Pola* and *Parento* tributary; and obtained great Advantages in Trade from *William King of Sicily*.

VITALO MIC-
CHIELE II.
1156.

In the Dogeship of *Vitalo Michiele II.* who succeeded in the Year 1156, the Patriarch of *Aquileia* surpris'd *Grado* and pillaged it; but as he was returning with the Plunder the *Venicians* met and made him and most of his Followers Prisoners. The Condition of his Ransom was that he should send every Year to *Venice* a Bull and twelve Boars. It became a Custom afterwards to bait these Creatures annually during the Time of the Carnival for the Diversion of the Populace.

War with
GREECE.

Emanuel Emperor of the East having made himself Master of some Places in *Dalmatia* belonging to the Republick the Doge marched against him, and had retaken some of these; but by the Persuasion of the Governour of *Negropont* he clapped up a Peace with this Emperor. For doing this and for carrying home the Plague in his Army, which was occasioned by the Emperor's causing the Waters to be poisoned, he was in the Year 1173 assassinated.

Power of the
DOGE li-
mited.

From the Time of *Paulucio Anafesto* the first Doge to the Death of *Vitalo Michiele II.* the Doges had been chosen by the Body of the People. Being consequently accountable only to the whole People they were all despotic: And some of them would have been Tyrants. As popular Elections have great Inconveniencies, and there is no Remedy in an arbitrary Government against the Abuse of Power but by an Insurrection, the State was frequently thrown into great Convulsions. A Consultation being upon the Death of *Vitalo Michiele* held among the principal Citizens it was resolved, that for the sake of preventing these Mischiefs the Doges should for the Time to come be elected by eleven Persons; and that these eleven Electors should themselves be elected out of a Council consisting of 240 of the chief Inhabitants: But to make the People amends for losing the Right of electing a Doge they were to have the Power

of

of chusing twelve *Tribunes*; whose Consent was necessary to the Validity of the *Doge's Order*. These *Tribunes*, who were to be two out of each of the six Wards the City was divided into, had besides the Power of nominating forty Persons out of their respective Wards to compose the Council of 240: Which was to be renewed every Year and to consist of Nobility, Gentry and Tradesmen without Distinction.

Sebastiano Ziani the first *Doge* chosen under this new Regulation sheltered Pope *Alexander III.* from the Reg-^{SEBASTI-} ANO, 1173. sment of the Emperor *Frederick Barbarossa*. After having in vain tried all Methods to reconcile these two this *Doge* declared War against the latter; and having taken his Son *Otho* Prisoner forced him to submit to his own Terms of Peace. The Interview at the Time of making this Peace in which the Pope set his Foot on the Emperor's Neck was at *Venice*. Some have said that this story is fabulous; but the *Venetians*, who insist upon the Truth thereof, were very angry with Pope *Urban VIII.* for taking down a Painting in the Pope's Palace at *Rome* representing this Interview, and as well pleased with Pope *Innocent X.* for replacing it again.

The Sovereignty of the *Adriatick* being bestowed upon the Republick by Pope *Alexander* during the Dogeship of *Sebastiano*, he instituted the Custom of espousing this Sea ^{The Custom of} ADRIATICK ^{wedding the} once a Year. His Successors do still retain this Custom: ^{ADRIATICK} ^{instituted.} And when the Ring one of the Ceremonies observed is thrown into the Sea the *Doge* pronounces these Words: *Desponsamus te Mare in Signum veri & perpetui Dominii.*

Orio Mastropetro, who succeeded in the Year 1178, ^{ORIO, 1178.} finding himself unable to stop the Progress of the *Hungarians* in *Dalmatia* retired into a Monastery; and *Henri Dandolo* was in the Year 1192 chosen.

The Divisions which had for a great while weakened ^{HENRI,} the Imperial Family at *Constantinople* in his Time ^{1102.} entirely ruined it; and made Way for the Aggrandisement of the Republick. *Alexis Angus* having put out the Eyes of his Brother *Isaac* and seized the Throne, this *Doge* at the Solicitation of *Alexis* Son of *Isaac* joined with *Boniface* Marquis of *Montferrat* and *Baldwin* Count of *Flanders* in sending a Fleet to the Assistance of *Isaac*. After taking *Constantinople* the Usurper fled; but *Isaac* was

The Republick reaps great Advantage from the Divisions in the Imperial Family. shortly after dispossessed again by *Alexis Marzuffe*, who the more effectually to secure himself poisoned the young *Alexis*. He did not long enjoy the Fruit of this Villainy; for the Allies drove him from *Constantinople* in the same Year; and *Isaac* being by Reason of his Blindness incapable of governing *Count Baldwin* was proclaimed Emperor of the *East*. The *Venetians* had for their Part of what was taken at the sacking of *Constantinople* an immense Treasure, and amongst other things twelve *Cuirasses* of Gold adorned with a great Number of precious Stones: Which are at this Day to be seen in *St. Mark's Treasury*. They had besides on the Division of the Empire *Corfu* and most of the Islands in the *Adriatick* and *Archipelago*: And they bought *Candia* which fell to the Marquis of *Montferrat's* Share of him for 80,000 Marks.

PIERRE,
1205.

Pierre Ziano Son of *Sebastiano*, who was elected in the Year 1205, sent Colonies to divers of the *Islands* gained by his Predecessor and conquered *Padua*. He in the Year 1228 became a *Friar*.

JACOPO,
1228.

The next Doge *Jacopo Tiepolo* made *Negroponte* tributary; rescued *Candia* from the *Greek Corsairs*; recovered *Zara* from the King of *Hungary*; and made him give up all Right to this Town which had so often changed its Master. In his Time *Tzelino* took *Padua* from the *Venetians*; and penetrated into their Marshes as far as *St. Ellero*.

MARINO,
1248.

Marino Morosini his Successor in the Year 1248 recovered *Padua* while *Tzelino* was before *Mantua*; whereupon the latter being enraged barbarously put all the Inhabitants of *Padua* in his Army to Death.

REGNIER,
1252.

In the Year 1252 *Regnier Zeno* succeeded. *Baldwin* Emperor of the *East* being in his Time betrayed by the *Greeks Michael Paleologus* seized the Empire, and being assisted by the *Genoese* took some Islands from the *Venetians*: But the *Genoese* Fleet being worsted off *Sicily* by *Rignier Paleologus* was glad to restore these and sue for Peace. Having afterwards the better in another naval Engagement the *Genoese* were glad to make a Truce with *Regnier*. He died in the Year 1268.

LAURENZO,
1268.

In the Time of *Laurenzo Tiepolo* his Successor there was a great Scarcity of Corn in *Venice*; for the neighbouring States envying the Greatness of the Republick would

would not supply it therewith. Hereupon they exacted a Toll from all Ships sailing in the *Adriatick*, which being refused by the *Bolognians* a War ensued; but the *War with the Bolognians* being constantly beat they were in the End **BOLOGNI-** glad both to pay the Toll and to let the *Venetians* have **ANS.** Corn.

Jacopo Contarini who succeeded in the Year 1275 ab- **JACOPO,**
dicated the Dogeships in the Year 1280. **1275.**

His Successor *Giovanni Dandolo* being the first who **GIOVANNI**
coined Gold the Coin was from his Ducal Dignity **1280.**
called a Ducat. In his Time the *Adriatick* swelled so high that the City was laid under Water. He died in the Year 1290.

Pierre Gradenigo the next Doge changed the Form of **PIERRE**
Government which was settled at the Election of *Sebastiano* **GRADENIGO,**
II. 1290.

117 Years before and had been ever since adhered to. **The Govern-**
Instead of the Council of 240 annually chosen he ordered, **ment new**
that all who had been of this Council for the four last **modelled.**
Years should be entitled to ballot; and that such Persons

as should have twelve Ballots should be hereditary Mem-
bers of the new Great Council, which was to be called
il Serrar del Consiglio. As many of the first Rank were
hereby for ever excluded from all Share in the Govern-
ment it is easy to conceive that some of these should be
disgusted; and that the Body of the People who by this
Regulation lost all their Power should join with them.
A Conspiracy headed by *Marino Bocconio* and *Giovanni* **Bocconio's**
Balduino being soon after formed, the Design thereof **Conspiracy.**
was to massacre the *Doge* and all the new Council, and
to put Things upon the former Establishment: But the
Plot being discovered they were both put to Death.

Upon the Death of *Afon D'Est* in the Year 1309
the City of *Ferrara* submitted to the Republick: But
Pope *Clement V.* being disgusted thereat the *Venetians*
rather than suffer the Mischiefs of an Excommunication
gave up all their Right to this City.

In the next Year a very dangerous Conspiracy was **The Conspiracy**
formed against the *Doge* and *Senate*, *Bajomonte Tiepolo* of **TIEPOLO.**
whose Father was a Competitor with *Pierre* for the Doge-
ship being at the Head thereof: And besides the common
People the *Quirini*, the *Baduarii* and many other illust-
rious Families were engaged in it. The Conspirators
being

being assembled they went in an hostile Manner to *St. Mark's Palace*: But the Doge and Senate who were prepared received them so warmly, that after great Slaughter on both Sides they were overpowered. Endeavouring to save themselves by Flight *Bayamonte* was seized from his Horse by a Stone which a Woman threw at him from a Window; and the Pursuers soon put an End to his Life. All the principal Persons taken were put to Death instantly betwixt *St. Mark's Pillars*; and such as escaped never durst appear in *Venice*. The Palace of *Tiepoli* was razed to the Ground; that of *Quirini* was converted into a Butchery; the Woman who threw the Stone was well rewarded by the Senate: And the 5th of *June*, on which Day the Conspirators were defeated, has been ever since observed as an annual Festival throughout the Dominions of the Republick.

The Council of Ten. This gave Occasion to the erecting of that formidable Tribunal called the *Council of Ten*: Whose extensive Power in searching into and punishing State Crimes has ever since kept the Nobility as well as the People in Awe. Upon the whole, whatever Arts *Pierre* might use to have his own Friends chosen of the new Council, the Republick is indebted to him for the most perfect Form of Government it ever had.

War with GENOA.

During these intestine Commotions the *Genoese* upon the Expiration of the Truce sent a Fleet into the *Adriatick*: By which the *Venetian* Admiral *Dandolo* who came up with them on the Coast of *Dalmatia* was defeated with great Loss. The *Venetians* refted their Fleet again as fast as possible; but it was a second Time worsted in the Straights of *Gallipoli*. These two Victories cost the *Genoese* however so dear that they were willing to make Peace. *Pierre* died in the Year 1312.

MARINO,
1312.

GIOVANNI,
1313.

Marino Georgio his Successor lived only 10 Months. The next Doge *Giovanni Soranzo* not only reduced *Zara* which had revolted a little before to Obedience, but he also extended the Dominions of the Republick in *Dalmatia*. Before his Death in the Year 1329 the *Candians* grew mutinous: By the prudent Conduct however of Admiral *Justiniano* they were soon made easy.

FRANCISCO,
1329.

In the Time of *Francisco Dandolo* the next Successor the House of *Scala*, then very powerful in *Italy*, refused

fused to let the *Venetians* trade up the *Po* or *Adige*. A War ensuing the *Florentines*, the *Duke of Milan* and *John War* with King of *Bohemia*. joined with the *Republick*: And in about two Years Time *Mastino de Scala* being constantly unsuccessful was glad to make Peace on the following disadvantageous Terms. To the King of *Bohemia* he ceded *Feltro* *Bellano* and *Ceneda*; to the *Florentines* four Castles; to *Visconti Duke of Milan Bergamo* and *Brescia*; and to the *Venetians Treviso*, *Castelbaldo* and *Bassano*. Upon the Death of *Francisco* in the Year 1340 the Election fell upon *Bartholomeo Gradenigo*.

During his Dogeship the *Adriatick* rose and continued for three Days four Yards higher than usual. The Danger of being drowned was scarce over when the *Venetians* received the News of an Insurrection in *Candia*; but this was happily quelled.

Andrea Dandolo who succeeded in the Year 1343 took *Smyrna* from the *Turks*, and obtained Liberty for the *Venetian Merchants* to trade into *Egypt*: By which as all the *East-India Trade* was at this Time carried on through *Egypt* a vast Advantage accrued to the *Republick*.

Some Merchant Ships of *Venice* being taken by the *Genese* in the *Levant* in the Year 1350. In an Engagement off *Pera* the *Venetians* lost fourteen Galleys and a great Number of Men. But being joined by a Fleet from *Arragon* they obtained a signal Victory in the Year 1353 near the Island of *Sardinia*. In this the *Genese* lost thirty-two Vessels and two thousand Men; and double that Number were taken Prisoners. They however refitted their Fleet, and in the next Year their Admiral *Doria* falling in with the *Venetian Fleet* near the *Morea* he attacked it with such Vigour that every Ship but one was lost or taken. The Prisoners among whom was Admiral *Pisani* amounted to near six thousand; and four thousand Men fell in the Action. This Defeat of the *Venetians* was shortly after followed with a Truce for five Years.

In the same Year *Marino Faliero* was elected *Doge*. A young Gentleman having been detected in an Intrigue with his Wife the Senate in Consideration of the loose Character she bore thought a Months Imprisonment a sufficient

He conspires against the Senate. sufficient Punishment; nor could her Husband prevail upon them to order a severer Punishment. Exasperated hereat *Marino* entered into a Conspiracy for cutting off the whole Senate: But the Plot being discovered by *Bertrando Belliziro* an Accomplice he was seized and beheaded; and several concerned therein were hanged.

GIOVANNI, *Giovanni Gradenigo* who succeeded in the Year 1355
1355. died in the next Year.

GIOVANNI, *Giovanni Delfino* the next Doge being unsuccessful in
1356. the War with *Hungary*, which began in his Predecessor's Time, he for the sake of Peace was forced to make considerable Cessions in *Dalmatia*.

LORENZO, *Lorenzo Celfo* succeeded in the Year 1360.

1360. He was succeeded in the Year 1365 by *Marco Cornaro* who lived only two Years.

MARCO, In the Time of the next Doge *Andrea Contarini* a
1365. Dispute arose between *Carrario* Lord of *Padua* and the Republick concerning the Limits of their respective Territories; and the former prevailed upon the King of *Hungary*, the Duke of *Austria*, the Patriarch of *Aquileia* and their irreconcilable Enemies the *Genoese*, to join with him against the *Venetians*.

ANDREA, The Republick being thus attacked on all Sides was
1367. upon the Brink of being ruined. After defeating her Fleet the *Genoese* took *Umago*, *Grado*, *Caorle*, *Cbiozza*, *Malsmoco*, *Paviglia* and some other Islands. The other Allies made great Conquests at the same Time upon the Continent, and *Venice* itself was thrown into such a Consternation, that had the *Genoese* Fleet appeared before this City it is highly probable that it would have surrendered without striking a Stroke. As *Carrario* would hear nothing of an Accommodation the *Venetians* sent a Deputation to the *Genoese* Admiral *Doria* with a *Chart Blanc*; but his Answer was that nothing less than the entire Ruin of *Venice* would satisfy his Masters. Finding they had nothing else for it the *Venetians* hereupon determined to make a bold Push at Sea; and after mature Deliberation it was resolved to attempt the retaking of *Cbiozza*. They had so little Hopes of Success that it was at the same Time according to some Historians resolved, in case they did not succeed, to remove the Republick from *Venice* to *Candia*: But Fortune favoured them, the *Genoese* Fleet being worsted

worsted and *Doria* their Admiral being killed in an Engagement off *Biondolo*. *Cbiozza* was now easily retaken; and the *Genoese* Garrison consisting of 3000 Men were made Prisoners. After resitting at *Trieste* the *Genoese* again attempted the taking of *Cbiozza*. Failing in this and being equally unsuccessful in their Attempts upon *Pirano* and *Parento* they retired into the Harbour of *Morano*. Not long after the *Genoese* took several Towns in *Istria*: But in the mean time the *Venetians* had recovered most of their *Islands* and their Affairs began to put on a more favourable Aspect.

At length by the Mediation of *Amadeus VI.* of *Savoy* Treaty with a Treaty was concluded upon the following Conditions: **PADUA.** That the King of *Hungary* should not protect any Pirates in his Ports of *Dalmatia*; that the *Venetians* should keep *Tenedos* which they had lately obtained from *Calo John* Emperor of the East; that the Archduke of *Austria* should have *Treviso*; that all taken from the *Venetians* in *Istria* and *Dalmatia* except *Trieste*, which was to be left to the Patriarch of *Aquileia* should be restored; and that *Carrario* should restore *Cuvarsera* and *Marano* and have in lieu thereof some Places taken from him by the *Republick*. Not long after the Conclusion of this Peace in the Year 1383 *Andrea* died.

Michiele Morosini his Successor living but four Months **MICHIELE,**
Antonio Veniero was raised to the ducal Chair. 1383.

As the *Venetians* were not heartily reconciled to *Carrario* they in the Year 1386 renewed the War against him. **ANTONIO,**
John Galeaz Visconti Duke of *Milan* sided with the *Republick*. 1383.
Carrario was assisted by the Marquis of *Ferrara*.
In this War *Carrario* was entirely stripped of his *Do-* War with
minions; and the Marquis of *Ferrara* was obliged to **PADUA and**
deliver up the *Polesine* as a Security for eighty thousand **FERRARA.**
Ducats which he was indebted to the *Republick*. He also
stipulated that no more Salt should be made at *Comma-*
chio. During the Dogeship of *Antonio Corfu* before sub-
ject to the King of *Naples* put itself under the Dominion
of the *Republick*. He died in the Year 1400.

Soon after the Election of *Michiele Steno Carrario*, to **MICHIELE,**
whom *Visconti* had at the Intercession of the *Republick* 1400.
restored *Padua*, laid Siege to *Vincenza*: But rather than
fall into his Hands this City submitted to the *Venetians*,
and

and a Herald was sent to let *Carrario* know this. Instead of giving over the Siege he cut off the Messenger's Nose and Ears; and bid him tell his Masters that it would become them better to mind their fishing than to meddle in the Affairs of Princes.

Unhappy End
of CARRA-
RIO.

The War being hereupon renewed *Verona* and *Padua* were both taken; and *Carrario* with his Brother and Son being carried to *Venice* they were all privately strangled in *Prison*. Thus an End was put to the *Paduan* War, which had been so expensive and dangerous to the Republick: But the Joy hereby occasioned did not last long; for *Ladislavus* King of *Naples* and *Hungary* soon after attacked the Republick in *Dalmatia* and took *Zara* and some other Towns. These were however all redeemed for the Sum of 100,000 Ducats; and a Truce was made with him.

THOMAS,
1413.

Thomas Mocenigo who succeeded in the Year 1413 reformed some Abuses in the publick Offices; and the Republick being at Peace with her Neighbours the rebuilding of *St. Mark's Palace* was begun.

FRANCISCO,
1424.

Francisco Foscaris elected in the Year 1424 was prevailed upon by the *Florentines* to engage with them in a War against *Philip* Duke of *Milan*. Several Treaties were made; but as *Philip* lost something by every one of these he soon broke through them all. A lasting Treaty was however concluded in the Year 1441. By this *Brescia*, *Bergamo*, *Peschiera*, *Legnano*, *Ravenna* and some other Places, were ceded to the *Venetians*: And the *Cremonese* was given to *Francis Sforça*, who during the War went over from *Philip* to the *Venetians* and had a great Share in their Success. *Sforça* was afterwards reconciled to *Philip* and married his natural Daughter. Upon the Death of *Philip Sforça* took Possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*: But the Dutcheffs Dowager opposed him in doing this and called in *France* and *Savoy* to her Assistance.

Treaty with
MILAN.

The VENETI-
ANS assist
FRANCIS
SPORÇA.

Hereupon the *Venetians*, although they did not like so enterprizing a Neighbour as *Sforça*, rather than *France* should have the Disposal of this Dutchy assisted him with Men and Money. Being established therein he pursuant to his Agreement confirmed the Cessions made by *Philip* to the Republick; and likewise gave up all belonging to *Milan* which lay beyond the *Adda*.

Whilst

While these Things were doing in *Italy* the *Turks War* with the took *Argos*, *Corinth* and other Places, from the Repub-^{TURKS.} lick. The *Venetians* afterwards turned all their Forces against the *Turks*: But finding it insufficient to stop their Progress they were glad to put an End to the War by giving up the Island of *Lemnos* and some Places in the *Morea*. By the Treaty made they also agreed to pay the yearly Sum of 8,000 *Ducats* for the Liberty of trading in the *Black-Sea*. After these important Services to the Republick *Foscari* was at last ungratefully deposed in the 84th Year of his Age.

In the Time of *Pascali Malipiero* who succeeded in ^{PASCALI,} the Year 1457 all *Italy* suffered greatly by an Earth-quake. He died in the Year 1462. ¹⁴⁵⁷⁻

During the Dogeship of *Christophoro-Moro* the Repub-^{CHRISTO-} lick which was the first Christian State that entered into a Treaty with the *Turks* paid dear for it. As they trusted too much thereto the Infidels overrun the *Morea*, and in the Year 1469 made themselves Masters of *Negropont*. The ^{The MOREA} Sultan *Mabomet II.* enraged at the Resistance made at this last Place, 40,000 Men being lost before it, put all ^{and NEGRO-} above the Age of twenty found therein to the Sword; and ^{PONTE taken} contrary to his Promise caused *Paulo Erizzo* the Go-^{by the TURKS,} vernor to be cut in two with a Scimitar. ^{1469.}

In the Year 1471 *Nicolas Trono* was raised to the ^{NICOLAS,} Dogeship. Some Time before this *James* a natural Son of *John King of Cyprus* had, without regarding the Pretensions of *Charlotte* the only legitimate Child of *John* who was married to *Lewis of Savoy*, seized this Kingdom. Having afterwards married *Katherine Cornaro of Venice*, who was in Consideration of this Match adopted as Daughter of the State, he left a Son of his own Name by her. As this Prince died soon after his Father the Senate sent *George Cornaro* to persuade his Sister *Katharine* to abdicate the Kingdom in Favour of the Republick. By his Threats and Intreaties she was prevailed upon so to do; but she declared publicly that her Consent was extorted from her. The *Venetians* Acquisition of being by these Stratagems in Possession of *Cyprus* they ^{CYPRUS.} would never enter into a Discussion of the House of *Savoy's* Right thereto; and gave no other Answer to its frequent

frequent Complaints of Injustice than in the Words of the Royal Prophet *: *Heaven is the Lords but he hath given the Earth to the Sons of Men.*

NICOLAS,
1473.
PIERRE,
1474.
ANDREA,
1476.
GIOVANNI,
1478.

Nicolas Marcello elected in the Year 1473 died next Year.

His Successor *Pierre Mocenigo* bravely defended *Scutari* against the *Infidels*; and restored the King of *Caramania* to his Dominions.

At his Death in the Year 1476 the Election fell upon *Andrea Vendramino*. The *Turks* having in his Time overrun *Albania* he before his Death in the Year 1748 entered into a Negotiation for a Treaty with them.

Giovanni Mocenigo the next Doge brought this to a Conclusion. The Terms of the Treaty were that *Scutari* in *Albania* together with the Islands of *Corfu* and *Tenaro* should be ceded to the *Turks*.

War with
FERRARA.

In the Year 1480 *Hercules Duke of Ferrara* in Violation of the Treaty subsisting with *Venice* set the Salt Pits at *Commachio* at Work. A War ensuing *Naples*, *Florence* and *Milan*, united with him; but Ways being found to detach the Duke of *Milan* from the Alliance *Hercules* was in the End forced to give up *Rovigno* and the *Polesine* to the Republick. In lieu of these he was to have the Liberty of working the Salt Pits at *Commachio*.

MARCO,
1485.
AUGUSTINO,
1486.

Marco Barberigo elected in the Year 1485 was in the following Year succeeded by his Brother *Augustino Barberigo*.

This Doge entered into the Alliance for obliging *Charles VIII.* of *France* to quit *Naples*; and the Negotiation at *Venice* for forming this Alliance was carried on so secretly that the famous *Comines* Ambassador from the *French* Court knew nothing thereof. Being after its Conclusion acquainted therewith he was quite surprized; and in his Confusion said he hoped they would give his Master Leave to go home with his Troops. The *Venetians* who spared for no Expence on this Occasion were, upon *Ferdinand's* being established in *Naples*, put into Possession of *Otranto*, *Mola* and some other Places.

Not long after *Pisa* having revolted from the *Flo-War* with *rentines* put itself under the Protection of the Republick. *PISA*.

As the *Florentines* had been all along dangerous Enemies to the *Venetians*, and would not enter into the Confederacy against *France*, the *Venetians* were determined to support the *Pisans* against the *Florentines*. Whilst a War was carried on upon this Account *Lewis XII.* of *France*, who laid Claim to *Milan* in the Right of his Grandmother *Valenti-a Visconti*, resolv'd to attack this Dutchy: And the *Venetians*, enraged at *Lewis Sforça* its present Duke for aiding the *Florentines* in the *Pisan* War and induced by the Promises of the *French King* to cede Part of this Dutchy to them, were brought into his Interest.

Many Senators represented the Absurdity of joining *The VENETI-* against *Sforça*, who could never be in a Condition of *ANS unite with* hurting the *Venetians*, and that if the *French* were once *FRANCE in* established in the *Milanese* the Republick could not long *conquering* be safe; but these Representations were slighted, and *Lewis MILAN, 1499* by the Help of the *Venetians* soon became Master of this Dutchy.

During these Wars in *Italy* the *Turks* fell upon the *LEPANTO* *Venetians* and took *Lepants, Modon, Goron and Durazzo; and other* all which they were for the Sake of putting a Stop to the *Places ceded to* Conquests of the *Infidels* obliged to give up by a Treaty. *the TURKS.*

Upon the Death of *Augustino Barberigo* in the Year *LEONARDO,* *1501* *Leonardo Lore'ano* was rais'd to the Dogeship. *1501.* *Pope Alexander VI.* dying shortly after and his natural Son *Cæsar Borgia*, who had been poisoned, being in a languishing Condition the *Venetians* took *Rimini, Faenza* and some other Places from him. *Pope Julius II.* having in vain demanded the Restitution thereof as belonging to the Ecclesiastical Estate, and the Mediation of the Emperor *Maximilian* having been refused, the latter declared War against the *Venetians*: But his Army being defeated near *de la Vieve* they took *Trieste* and some other Places, and he was glad to make Peace and leave *Battle of DE* them in Possession of their Conquests. *LA VIEVE.*

The Emperor however retained his Ill-will; and in the Year *1509* entered into a League at *Cambray* with *League of* the *Pope*, the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, the Duke of *CAMBRAY,* *Ferrara* and the Marquis of *Mantua*, for humbling the *1509.*
Re-

Republick: Whose Pride and Encroachments upon all its Neighbours were grown intolerable. The *Venetians* might by satisfying some of the *Allies* have easily detached them from this League; but the Success which had for a good while attended their Arms made them imagine their Troops to be invincible. They were by dear Experience soon convinced how ill grounded this Notion was; for the *French King* entirely defeated their Army near *Vaila* with the Loss of 8,000 Men; and made General *Alviano* who commanded there Prisoner. Being at the same Time attacked by the other Allies they in a little Time found themselves dispossessed of every Thing upon the Continent except *Treviso*. The Offers made by the *Venetians* to the Emperor were rejected with Disdain; but by restoring *Ravenna, Faenza, Rimini* and and some other Places, to the State of the Church, and by giving up the Right they had long enjoyed of presenting to Benefices they made the Pope easy.

Battle of
VAILA.

The REPUB-
LICK enters
into a League
against
FRANCE.

The Towns and Ports which they held in *Naples* being soon after ceded to his *Spanish Majesty* he was also drawn off from the Alliance, and entered into one with the *Pope* and *Republick* against the *French*; who by the Addition of *Brescia, Bergamo, Cremona* and *Crema*, to the *Milaneses* were looked upon to be too powerful in *Italy*. A Negotiation was also entered into under the Mediation of the *Pope* for purchasing *Padua, Verona* and *Vincenza*, which the Emperor had taken from them. This did not succeed; but *Andrea Gritto* their General surprized the former of these Places. The Duke of *Ferrara* who still adhered to *France* was excommunicated, and a strong Fleet was sent by the *Venetians* up the *Po* to attack the *Ferrareses*: But this was ruined and their Army was repulsed with great Loss by the Imperial General from before *Verona*. On the other Side the *Venetian* Troops, which were joined with those of *Spain* and the *Pope*, became Masters of all the *Brescian* except *Bergamo* and the Capital. The latter being invested by the *Venetians* it was after a brisk Action relieved by the *French* General *Gaston de Foix*: And *Andrea* who commanded the Siege with several other Officers were taken Prisoners. As the *Venetians* had suffered greatly in this Action it was determined to give over the Siege of *Bononia*:

Battle of
BRESCIA.

Bononia: And the united Forces of *Spain*, *Venice* and the Pope retired towards *Ravenna*. The *French* General in Conjunction with the Duke of *Ferrara* followed; and coming up with them near *Ravenna* a Battle ensued. In this after a most obstinate Resistance and *Battle of* great Loss on both Sides the *French* were victorious; *RAVENNA*. but it cost them dear, for that excellent General *de Foix* being killed in the Action their Affairs from that Time declined, and they soon after agreed to evacuate *Italy*. The *Venetians* now turned their whole Force against the Emperor; and notwithstanding a Defeat they met with from the Imperial General at *Vincenza*, who cut off 5000 of their Army, they took several Towns in *Friuli*. A Treaty being concluded in the Year 1516 betwixt *Treaty with* the Emperor and the Republick, it was agreed that each *the Emperor* Party should keep what it was in Possession of in *Friuli*; 1516. and that *Verona* should on their paying a Sum of Money be restored to the *Venetians*. Thus the *Cambray* War which had for eight Years together made *Italy* a Theatre of Blood and Confusion was happily ended; and the Republick such was her Prudence and Fortitude lost nothing, although the principal Powers of *Europe* were united against her, except what was ceded to *Spain* and the Pope.

Antonio Grimani, who in the Year 1521 succeeded *ANTONIO*. *Leonardo*; dying two Years after the Election fell upon *Andrea Gritto*; who had given great Proofs both of his Conduct and Courage during the *Cambray* War.

This Doge in the Contest betwixt *Charles V.* and *ANDREA*, *Francis I.* sometimes assisted one and sometimes the other, 1523. as it best suited with the Interest of the Republick; and thereby brought it again into a flourishing Condition.

The *Turks*, who were at War with the Emperor, *War with the* suspected the *Venetians* of assisting their Enemy private- *TURKS*, ly; and they were confirmed in this Suspicion by an intercepted Letter from the Imperial Admiral *Doria* to *Pesaro* the Republick's Admiral. *Doria* in this Letter, which he took Care to have fall into the Hands of the *Infidels*, informed *Pesaro* of the Approach of the *Turkish* Fleet; and added that now was the Time for the *Venetians* to attack the *Infidels*. It answered his Purpose of diverting the Storm which threatened his Master: For the Sultan

Saliman in the Year 1537 declared War against *Venice*. After losing fourteen Islands in the *Archipelago*, amongst which were *Cbio*, *Patmos* and *Stambalia*, and the Towns of *Nadin* and *Laurano* in *Dalmatia*, the *Venetians* plainly saw that the *Germans* who had drawn them thereinto did not act with Vigour, but endeavoured to throw the Burden of the War entirely on them. *Lewis Baduaris* being hereupon sent Ambassador to *Constantinople* his Instructions were to make a Peace at any Rate; and if it could not be done otherways to offer *Malvasia* and *Napoli* in *Romania* and a large Sum of Money, the Senate did not care how much so that the Islands were restored again to the Republick. Some Persons having treacherously discovered his Orders, as soon as the *Venetian* Ambassador began to treat the *Turkish* Ministers told him plainly that he had better come at once to the Point; for they well knew his Commission and Trifling would answer no Purpose. Upon the whole a Treaty was in the Year 1539 concluded; but it cost the *Venetians* very dear; for they were forced to cede the fourteen Islands, some Towns in *Dalmatia*, *Malvasia* and *Napoli* in *Romania*, and to pay a large Sum of Money.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

- In the same Year *Andrea* was succeeded by *Pierre Lando*.
 At his Death in the Year 1545 *Francisco Donato* was elected.
Antonio Trivisano who succeeded in the Year 1553 retired in the next Year into a Monastery.
Francisco Venerio the next Doge, who prudently took Care to keep out of the Wars in which his Neighbours were engaged, obtained the Surname of *Princeps Pacis*. He died in the Year 1556
 In the Time of *Laurentio Priuli* Successor of *Francisco Venice* was visited with a severe Plague.
Hieronymo Priuli his Brother, who succeeded in the Year 1559, was for his Zeal against the Reformation rewarded by the Pope with the perpetual Right of choosing the Patriarch of *Aquileia*.
Pierre Loredano elected in the Year 1569 had the Mortification to see *Venice* afflicted with Famine, Fire and War. Whilst the first of these raged, of which all *Italy* felt the Effects, the *Arsenal* took Fire and was burnt

PIERRE,

15 9.

FRANCISCO,

1545.

ANTONIO,

1553.

FRANCISCO,

1554.

LAURENTIO,

1556.

HIERONYMO.

PIERRE,

15 9.

to the Ground. The Loss of military Stores hereby occasioned together with the Solicitations of *John Miquex* a Jew, who having formerly resided at *Venice* was exasperated against the *Republick*; because they would not at his Request give up some Islands in the *Adriatick* to the Jews, encouraged the Sultan *Selim* to invade *Cyprus*. In the Year 1570, while the *Venetians* were preparing to repel the *Turks* and animating other *Christian Powers* to join with them, *Pierre* died and *Lewis Mocengio* succeeded.

The *Turks* besides some Places in *Dalmatia* took in Lewis, 1570 the Year 1570 *Nicosia*; and in the next Year they War with the became Masters of *Famagosta* the Capital of *Cyprus*. TURKS. As this last Place held out a long Time and cost the *Infidels* 20,000 Men, the Governor was seized alive and all the Garrison were cut to Pieces contrary to the Capitulation. Being Master of this important *Island* *Selim* in- Battle of Lepanto, 1571 tended to carry his Arms into *Italy*; but his Hopes of PANTO, 1571 doing vanished upon the signal Overthrow of his Fleet near *Lepanto*. In this Action *Don John* of *Austria* Admiral of the Confederate Fleet in Conjunction with *Venier* the *Venetian* Admiral took 130 Gallies; burnt or sunk fourscore; killed 30,000 of the Enemy; made 5000 Prisoners; and delivered 20,000 Christians from Slavery. The Loss on the Side of the Allies being inconsiderable the *Turks* immediately abandoned *Cyprus*; and this Victory, had not the Jealousies and Misunderstandings amongst them prevented it, must have been followed with still greater Advantages to the Christians: But as the Admiral *Don John* of *Austria*, who was not without great Importunity prevailed upon to do thus much, would come into no further Measures for annoying the *Infidels* they had Time to rally their shattered Forces; and the *Venetians* were after some inconsiderable Efforts forced in the Year 1573 to make a Treaty with them. By this the rich and pleasant Treaty with the *Island* of *Cyprus* together with *Dulcigno* and *Antivari* TURKS. in *Dalmatia* were ceded to the *Turks*. A little before the Death of *Mocenigo*, which happened in the Year 1577, the City of *Venice* suffered a great deal by repeated Fires; and a severe Plague broke out therein,

M 2

Sebastiano

- SEBASTIANO, *Sebastiano Venier*, who was raised to the Ducal Chair for his brave Conduct in the Battle of *Lepanto*, dying nine Months after he was succeeded by *Nicolas de Ponte*.
- NICOLAS, 1577. In his Time the *Maltese* were chastised for their Insolence in committing Depredations upon the *Venetian Merchants*.
- PASCALI, 1578. *Pascali Ciconia*, who succeeded in the Year 1585, took Care that the Republick should not be involved in the War in which most of the *European Powers* were at this Time engaged. He built the Bridge called the *Rialto*; and died in the Year 1595.
- MARINO, 1595. In the Time of *Marino Grimani* his Successor a Quarrel with the See of *Rome* began in the following Manner: A great Part of the Republick's Lands being got into the Hands of the Clergy, these were, as the Clergy never parted with any Thing and insisted upon an Immunity from Taxes, become wholly useless to the State. To put a Stop to this growing Evil a Decree of the Senate was published: Whereby they were prohibited from purchasing Land without License; and all Persons were prohibited from giving any real Estate to the Church in any Manner or upon any Account whatsoever. A Check being hereby put to the Ambition and Avarice of the Clergy they complained to Pope *Paul V.* Upon the Refusal of the Senate to revoke this Decree he excommunicated the Republick; yet the Senate resolved to carry the Decree into Execution. Most of the Clergy submitted thereto. The *Jesuits*, *Capuchins* and *Theatins* being refractory were banished. The Pope endeavoured with all his Might to stir up the Catholic Powers of *Europe* against the Republick: But as his turbulent Humour and the insatiable Thirst of Churchmen for Riches and Power were well known it was all in vain; and the *Venetian Ministers* were in all Courts treated with great Respect. Finding his Excommunication thus justly despised the Pope at last took it off of his own Accord. The *Theatins* and *Capuchins* were hereupon suffered to return; but as the *Jesuits* had been remarkably insolent, it was some Time before these were allowed to set a Foot into the Dominions of the Republick. The ready Submission of all the Clergy, except the Orders abovenamed, to the Senate in such a Country

try as Italy, where PRIESTCRAFT and CHURCH POWER are in their Meridian, seemed a little extraordinary; and was perhaps owing to the following Incident. In the Beginning of this Affair the Vicar of Padua, being asked by one of the chief Magistrates how he intended to act? answered he had not determined but that it should be as the Holy Ghost should direct him. The other replied that the Holy Ghost had already directed the Council of the Ten to hang all who were disobedient. This had such an Effect upon the Vicar that he was one of the first who submitted to the Decree.

Leonardo Donato elected in the Year 1605, in whose Time this Dispute was ended, protested publickly against the Pope's Bull: And all along strenuously insisted upon the Right of the Senate to make any Regulation for the publick Good. He died in the Year 1612.

Antonio Memo his Successor took great Pains to suppress the Uscoques: But the Honour of doing this entirely was reserved for Giovanni Bembo, who succeeded in the Year 1615.

These People, whose Name means Fugitives, were at first composed of such as retired from the Towns in Dalmatia which came into the Hands of the Turks, and fixing at Segna and other Places thereabouts put themselves under the Protection of the Archduke of Austria. As the Turks had taken their All from these People they were implacable Enemies to them; and did them all the Mischief they could and especially at Sea. This privateering War against the Infidels being very profitable it by Degrees degenerated into downright Piracy; and as no Regard was paid to the Flag of any Nation the Navigation upon the Adriatick became quite unsafe. The Republick after repeated Complaints to the Court of Vienna without Redress fitted out armed Vessels against the Uscoques; and hung up all that fell into their Hands. Notwithstanding this as Segna was become the Refort and Refuge of Villains of all sorts and Nations their Number increased. It was hereupon resolved in the Senate to block up Segna and make Reprisals upon the Austrians. Commerce being greatly obstructed by the Uscoques, and all Europe being scandalized at the Court of Vienna's Protection of them, a Commissary was at last sent to

Segna with full Power to punish the guilty. As he banished many and put some of the most guilty to Death, he was accused of holding a Correspondence with the *Venetians*: And it was represented to the *Archduke*, that his Commissary's Cruelty had deprived him of great Numbers of brave Subjects. Being from this Time looked upon with an evil Eye by his own Court the Commissary was shortly after assassinated: Whereupon all who had been banished returned to *Segna*, and his Regulations being broke through Depredations were renewed. The Republick now lost all Patience, and after declaring War sent an Army into *Friuli*: But after some Progress made there this Affair was accommodated. The Conditions of the Accommodation were, that all Places in *Friuli* should be restored; that the Barks of the *Uscoques* should all be burnt; and that most of the *Uscoques* should be sent to *Carlstadt* and other Towns at a Distance from the Coast. The Republick was hereby effectually delivered from the Robberies of these People; to prevent which they had been for many Years at a vast Expence.

NICOLAS,
1618,

Nicolas Donato, who was raised to the Ducal Dignity in the Year 1618, being deposed within a Month *Antonio Prinli* succeeded.

ANTONIO,
1618.
Conspiracy of
PE LA
QUEVA.

In his Time a most dangerous Conspiracy was formed by the *Spanish* Ambassador *Alphonso de la Queva*, the Duke of *Ossuna* Viceroy of *Naples*, and the Governor of *Milan*, for ruining the Republick, and so delivering *Spain* from the only Power capable of thwarting her Designs in *Italy*. *De la Queva* had engaged some *Venetians* to set Fire to the Arsenal and City in several Places, and to take the Advantage of the Confusion thereby occasioned to open the Gates for some chosen Troops, which the Viceroy was to have ready. The Traitors had also agreed to murder by the Help of these Troops all the principal Senators: And at the same Time the Governor of *Milan* was to have an Army ready to seize the strong Places of the Republick upon the Continent. This Plot was carried on with such Secrecy, that notwithstanding the Number of Citizens engaged therein, it escaped the Knowledge of the Spies which are constantly employed by the Council of Ten; nor did they know

know the least of it till the Night before the intended Execution thereof. It was discovered by one *Jaffier* an Accomplice, who could not bear the Thought of the shocking Scene to be the next Day acted: And while he was under Examination two *French* Gentlemen arrived, on Purpose to inform the Senate of some Hints that had been dropped concerning it. Such of the Conspirators as could be seized met with the severest Punishment; but notwithstanding the Ambassador of *Spain* had had so large a Share in this Plot, the Senate unwilling to violate the Law of Nations contented themselves with insisting on his being recalled and punished by his Master. He however thought himself in Danger from the Populace; and took the first Opportunity of fleeing to *Milan*. Thus was the Republick delivered, when upon the Brink of Destruction, from the most dangerous Conspiracy ever formed against it.

After this the *Venetians* applied themselves to the pre-*The Attempt of* serving of the Liberty of *Italy* and guarding against the *SPAIN on the* Designs of the *Pope* and *Spaniards*. When these last *VALTALINE* endeavoured in the Year 1619 to make themselves *is frustrated,* Masters of the *Valtaline*, whose Inhabitants had revolted 1619. from the *Grisons*, the Republick, who well knew her Communication with *France*, *Savoy* and *Switzerland* would be thereby cut off, and that she should be entirely surrounded by the Dominions of *Spain* and the *Empire* both Subject to the House of *Austria*, with all her Might opposed it. She supplied the *Grisons* and *Swiss* with Money and Arms, until by soliciting the Courts of *England*, *France* and *Savoy* to assist in preserving the Independency of the *Grisons* such a Confederacy was formed, as prevented the *Spanish* Scheme which must in the End have been fatal to the Republick from taking Effect.

As it appeared from this Attempt that Union amongst *FRANCISCO,* the *Italian* Powers was absolutely necessary for their Pre- 1623. servation, the next Doge *Francisco Contarini*, elected in the Year 1623, took great Pains and at last succeeded in reconciling the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Montferrat*: Who had been long at Variance on Account of the Succession to *Montferrat*. He died in the Year 1625.

GIOVANNI,
1625.

Giovanni Cornaro his Successor joined with the French in supporting the Pretensions of *Charles Duke of Nevers* to the Dutchy of *Mantua*; and notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Emperor, Spain and Savoy, he was at last therein established. A little before the Death of *Giovanni* in the Year 1630 a Plague made great Havock in *Venice*.

NICOLAS,
1630.

Nichlas Contarini who succeeded reigned but one Year.

FRANCISCO,
1631.

In the Time of his Successor *Francisco Erizzo* the Knights of *Malta*, having taken some rich Turkish Ships bound to *Mecca*, carried them into a Port in *Candia*: Which being looked upon by the Sultan *Ibrahim* as protecting his Enemies he determined to resent it. He however at the same Time gave out, that the Fleet he was fitting out was intended against *Malta*: And notwithstanding the repeated Advice from their Consul at *Constantinople*, the Senate would not believe that he intended to make a Descent upon *Candia*; nor did they take any Measures for the Defence thereof.

War with
the POPE,
1641.

The Republick might indeed be diverted from taking the necessary Steps on this Account by the War she was engaged in against Pope *Urban VIII.* whose Nephews the *Barbarino's* had taken the Dutchy of *Castro* from *Edward Duke of Parma*. After this War, in which the Dukes of *Tuscany* and *Modena* acted in Concert with the Republick, had been continued with great Vigour for the space of four Years, a Peace was brought about in the Year 1645 by the Cardinal *Bibi* Minister of *France*, and *Edward* had Satisfaction. *Contarini* dying about this Time the Election fell upon *Francisco Melino*.

FRANCISCO,
1645.

The Turkish Fleet put to Sea in the same Year, and having landed some Troops in *Candia* the Forts *Theodore* and *Canea* soon fell into their Hands. In the next Year

War with the
TURKS, 1646

they took *Rotimo*: But the Venetians, who had for the Sake of making a Diversion thrown themselves into *Dalmatia*, became in the Year 1647 Masters of *Ghissa*.

1647.

The Turks, wholly intent upon conquering *Candia*, instead of opposing the Progress of the Venetians in *Dalmatia* laid Siege in the following Year to *Candia*.

1648.

This was carried on two Years: But after losing many Men the Turkish General changed the Siege into a Blockade.

Blockade. Before the Death of this Doge in the Year 1655 nine Turkish Vessels were burnt by a Fireship in the Bay of Foggiam.

His Successor *Carolo Contarini* was after reigning one Year succeeded by *Bertuccio Valerio*.

In the Year of his Accession to the Dogeship the Venetian Admiral *Mocenigo* defeated the Turkish Fleet twice. In the first Action he took twelve Ships and burnt five; in the second the Turks lost fourteen Vessels; In both great Numbers were taken Prisoners. In the Year 1658 another still more compleat Victory was gained over the Turks by the Venetian Admiral *Marcello* near the Dardanelles: But this brave Admiral fell in the Action. All the Turkish Ships a few Gallies excepted were taken, sunk or burnt; ten thousand of the Turks were killed; and half as many Christian Slaves were set at Liberty. Soon after the Islands of *Tenedos* and *Lemnos* fell into the Hands of the Venetians. *Bertuccio* dying in the same Year *Giovanni Pisaura* was elected Doge.

He died about a Year after and was succeeded by *Dominico Contarini*.

Notwithstanding all this Success the Venetians were not able to drive the Turks from the Blockade of *Candia*: But as the Sultan had sent most of his Forces into *Transylvania* against *Ragotski*, who had revolted to the Emperor, this City was in no Danger. A Peace being concluded betwixt the Sultan and the Emperor, the Siege of *Candia* was renewed with great Vigour by the Grand *Vizier* in Person. At length the French Troops sent to its Relief under Marshal *Noailles* being defeated all Hopes of raising the Siege were lost: And the City surrendered in September 1679. This long Siege according to the best Calculation cost the Turks above 100,000 Men, besides seven *Bashaws* and fourscore Officers of Distinction. As the Venetians, who had also sustained great Loss, were unable alone to support the War a Treaty was shortly after concluded: By which *Suda*, *Spinalonga* and *Carabusa* in *Candia*, with *Clissa* and some other Places in *Dalmatia* were left to the Venetians. All the rest of *Dalmatia* and of the Island of *Candia* was ceded to the Turks.

Three

- LEWIS, 1676.** Three Years before the Conclusion of this Treaty *Lewis Contarini* was raised to the Dogeship in the Room of *Nicolas Sagredo*, who had been deposed soon after his Election.
- MARCO, 1684.** *Marco Antonio Justiniani* who succeeded in the Year 1684 resolved to make use of the favourable Opportunity, which the Loss sustained by the *Turks* in being repulsed from *Vienna* gave him, to join with the Christians against their common Enemy: And as the Island of *St. Maure* had ever since it came into the Hands of the *Turks* been a Harbour for the *Corfairs* of *Barbary*, the Conquest thereof was resolved upon. While the *Venetian* Fleet bombarded the City of *St. Maure* it was pressed on the Land Side by the confederate Forces of the Pope, *Malta* and *Tuscany*, and soon forced to surrender. The Coast of *Dragamestro* being afterwards ravaged and *Previza* being taken, the Allied Army lay still the Remainder of this Campaign. In the Year 1685 the * *Morraques* in Revenge for their Sufferings from the *Turks* declared for the *Venetians*; and taking *Paulo Michiele* a noble *Venetian* for their Leader assisted in raising the Siege of *Duaro*. *Coron* was also taken and sacked by the *Venetian* Admiral *Francisco Morosini*. In the next Campaign *Morosini*, having first raised the Siege of *Cliffa*, assisted Count *Koningsmark* in taking *Novaron*, *Modon* and *Napoli* and *Romania*. In the Year 1687 the *Venetian* Fleet passed the *Dardanelles*: Which struck such Terror into the *Turks*, who had looked upon this as impracticable, that the Recovery of *Lepanto* and good Part of the *Morea* became easy. On receiving the News of this Success at *Venice* great Rejoicings were made for three Days; a Statue of Brass was erected in Honour of *Morosini*: And Presents were made to all his Officers who had distinguished themselves. The Doge dying soon after no Person was thought by the Senate so proper to succeed as *Morosini*.
- FRANCISCO, 1688.** *Francisco Morosini*, who in Return for this Honour thought himself bound to do something of Consequence, attempted the Siege of *Negroponte*; but notwithstanding his utmost Efforts he failed therein. While these Things were doing at Sea the *Venetian* Army under General *Cornaro* made great Progress in *Albany* and
- * *The Inhabitants of the Mountains in CROATIA are so called. Dalmatia*

Part of the
MOREA re-
conquerd,
1687.

Dalmatia. As *Francisco* fell ill, and his Physicians declared it necessary for the Preservation of his Life, he returned next Year to *Venice*; Where he was received with all the Marks of Affection, and Distinction justly due to him for the important Services done his Country.

Valier, who succeeded in commanding the Fleet, *Bravery and* being sent in the *St. Mark* to *Adis* for collecting the *Death of VA-* Tribute of this *Island*, he had the Misfortune to fall in *LIER.* with ten *Algerine* Ships under the famous Pirate *Mezzo Porto*. After fighting his Ship bravely for some Time his Powder took Fire: Yet *Valier* would not strike, At last the *St. Marks* Rudder being lost, *Valier* being himself killed by a Cannon Ball; and his Lieutenant being mortally wounded; the *Turks* boarded her: But while they were rummaging her she sunk and all on board perished.

On the Death of *Francisco*, in the Year 1694 *Sylves-* SYLVESTRO, *tro Valier* was raised to the ducal Chair. In the next 1694. Year the *Turks*, who since since the Death of *Valier* had been successful in two naval Engagements, went to attack *Chia*: And by the Cowardice of the *Venetian Ad-* CHIO lost, miral, who fled in the Night with such Precipitation that 1695. Part of the *Republick's* Troops had not Time to reembark; the whole *Island* was soon subdued; and all the *Venetians* left behind were made Slaves.

The Emperor being come to a Resolution of making *Treaty of* a Peace with the *Turks*, the Republick did the same under *CARLOWITZ,* the Mediation of the Court of *London*. By a Treaty signed 1699. at *Carlowitz* in the Year 1699 it was agreed, that the *Venetians* should keep all they had gained in the *Morea* together with the *Islands* of *St. Maure* and *Engia*; that *Lepanto* and all the *Islands* in the *Archipelago* should be restored to the *Turks*; that the *Venetians* should be left in Possession of the Forts of *Cbnin*, *Sing*, *Ciclut* and *Gabella*; that a strait Line should be drawn from *Cbnin* to *Vertica*, from *Vertica* to *Sing*, from *Sing* to *Duaro*, from thence to *Vergoraz*, and so on to *Ciclut* and *Gabella*, which was to be the Boundary of the Dominions of the two Powers; and that some other less important Matters should be settled by Commissaries.

Marco Antonio Maccenigo, who succeeded in the Year *MARCO,* 1700, prudently kept out of the War which disturbed 1700. Europe on Account of the *Spanish* Succession.

In

GIOVANNI,
1709.
A Misunder-
standing with
FRANCE.

In the Time of *Giovanni Cornaro*, who was raised to the ducal Chair in the Year 1709, a Misunderstanding arose betwixt the Courts of *Paris* and *Venice* on the following Occasion. The former having in the Year 1710 fixed upon Cardinal *Ottoboni* to be the Protector of the Rights of *France* at *Rome*, it was opposed by the Republick: Whose Laws forbid every Subject who had been in any publick Employment to enter into foreign Service. As *France* persisted in her Choice and the Cardinal accepted the Charge all his Family were banished; and he was deprived of his Privileges as a Senator. Ambassadors were immediately recalled on both Sides, and every thing looked like an open Rupture; but it ended in nothing more than a Coolness betwixt the two Courts. In the next Year the Republick sent a Person of Rank to *Paris* to make this Matter up; and she would fain have been *Mediatrice* betwixt the Allies and *France*. This being refused by the Courts of *Madrid* and *Paris*, both which her Acknowledgment of the Emperor as King of *Spain* had disgusted; she sent her Ministers to the Congress at *Utrecht*, to demand Satisfaction for some Losses sustained during the War; but none was obtained.

War with the
TURKS,
1715.

Great Preparations for War being in the Year 1715 made by the *Turks*, which were supposed to be intended against the *Venetians*; the latter lost no Time in putting themselves into a Posture of Defence: And the Imperial Minister at *Constantinople* had Orders to declare, that if the Republick should be attacked his Master could not dispense with the Obligations he was under of assisting her. War being nevertheless declared the Pope and the Knights of *Malta* joined their Forces to those of *Venice*; but this did not prevent the *Turks* from taking all in the *Morca* from the *Venetians*: Nor would they have come off so if the Emperor had not made a powerful Diversion in *Hungary*. The *Turks* next landed an Army upon the Island of *Corfu*; and laid Siege to the Capital the only fortified Place therein. This Place and consequently the whole Island being saved by the Courage and Conduct of General *Schulemburg*, the Senate amongst other Acknowledgments decreed him a Statue in the Palace of *Corfu*. As the *Turks* afterwards employed all their Forces

CORFU saved
by SCHU-
LEMBURG.

Fortes in Hungary, nothing remarkable which properly belongs to the History of Venice happened.

Peace being restored in the Year 1718 by the Treaty of Passarowitz, the Republick, who avoided entering either into the War in Italy on account of the Election, or into that betwixt the Emperor and the Turks, has ever since enjoyed a profound Tranquillity.

Giovanni was in the Year 1722 succeeded by Aloisio MOENIGO, 1722.

Carolo Ruzzini succeeded in the Year 1732. CAROLO.

He was in the Year 1735 succeeded by Aloisio Pisani. ALOISIO.

The present Doge, who was raised to the ducal Chair in the Year 1741, is Pierre Grimani. PIERRE, 1741.

The Venetians have not so much Subtlety as some other Italians; but this is sufficiently made amends for by their Prudence and Judgment.

Their Jealousy of their Liberties which they have preserved in the most dangerous Circumstances is such, that if any one amongst them becomes too popular, he is immediately sent to the Government of some foreign Province. They are easily provoked; and although they seem to be reconciled never forgive the least Affront, and only wait for an Opportunity of revenging it. They are very frugal in their Families that they may have the more to spare for their Pleasures: In which they indulge themselves without Restraint. As Courtezans are publicly licensed, and the younger Sort and especially of the Nobility are kept within no Bounds, this with the fordid Flattery and Meanness of their Domesticks makes the Nobility haughty, lascivious, and violent in all their Passions.

The Republick of Venice is on the account of its Capital and Dominions, some of which may be justly reckoned the Bulwark of Christendom, very considerable. The Strength of her Capital consists a good deal in its Situation: Which is on many Islands in the middle of a low Tract of Land, five or six Miles broad, overflowed by the Sea. On the Land Side the Water is generally so shallow, that they are forced to set up Piles to shew where there is a sufficient Depth for the Passage of a Boat. As the Venetians could in Case of Need easily cut down these Piles, an Army would in all Probability perish before it got near enough to hurt them. This Shallowness of the Water is certainly a great Security to Venice; but the

Venetians

Venetians are at a vast Expence in clearing away the Sand which constantly lodges, and would by Degrees rise so high as to make the City accessible from the Land. Towards the *Adriatick* there is no Passage except that of *Lido*, which is narrow and defended by a strong Castle, that has sufficient Depth of Water for a Ship of any considerable Burthen to approach the City. The *Trevisan, Paduan, Vincentin, Bergamasc, Brascian, Cremonese* and *Polesine* in *Italy*; together with good Part of *Istria, Dalmatia, Friuli* and *Albania*, and many Islands, the principal of which are *Corfu, Zante* and *Cephalonia*, belong to the Republick. These Countries are in the general fertile of Corn, Wine and Oil; and they abound with Silk.

*Its Revenues,
Strength and
Trade.*

It has been calculated that the Revenue of the Republick, besides the large Sums which arise from Confiscations, Sale of Offices, and of the Peerage which is frequently sold, the large Contributions raised on the *Jews*, and the Tenth paid by the Clergy, amounts annually to 6,890,000 Ducats* of Silver: So that as the Expence of the Government in Time of Peace is not more than 4,000,000 of Ducats, she must necessarily in any long Peace grow rich. It is said, that before the *Gandian War* there were in *St. Mark's Treasury* 14 or 15,000,000 of Ducats in Specie; and a Chain of Gold, which is shewn to the People on some publick Days, that forty Porters could scarce carry. The Arsenal of *Venice* is always so well furnished with Arms and all military Stores, that a considerable Fleet can be fitted out and a large Army set on Foot at a very short Warning. The Trade of the *Venetians* is vastly declined. They used formerly to supply all *Europe* with Spices and other *India* Goods, which were brought over Land through *Egypt* and *Syria*, at their own Price; but since the Discovery of a Way to the *East-Indies* by Sea the *India* Trade is entirely got into other Hands. The *Venetians* have moreover suffered a good deal from the Edicts of *Lewis XIV.* by which the importing of Glasse, Looking-glasses and *Venice Point* into *France* is prohibited; but they have still a great Demand for all these Manufactures in *Germany, Italy* and *Turky*.

* Worth about Four Shillings each.

The Senate, which has the entire Administration of *Its Government*, is composed of such noble Families as were elected Senators in *Pierre Gradenigo's* Time; of about thirty more whose eminent Services or the Sums advanced by them for the publick during the *Genoese Wars* recommended them to this Dignity; and of seventy more who bought the same while the *Candian War* which quite exhausted *St. Mark's Treasury* continued. Although all these Families their Names being written in the Golden Book are reputed equal; yet the most ancient are commonly fixed upon for Offices of great Trust. There are besides several foreign Families enrolled amongst the *Venetian Senators*, as that of *Bourbon*; most of the *Italian Princes*; and the Families of *Richelieu*, *Joyeuse Mazarin* and *d'Argenson*. Every Male of all these Families, when resident in *Venice*, has a Right to all the Senatorial Priviledges. A *Venetian Senator* is prohibited from receiving any Pension from or enjoying any Estate in the Dominions of a foreign Prince; nor is he or any Son of his suffered to marry a Foreigner, or to correspond with any foreign Minister. He may marry into any noble Family that resides in the Republick's Dominions out of *Venice*, although such Family has no Share in the Government; but if he marries any Person beneath his own Rank his Priviledges do not descend to the Sons of such Marriage. The Right of Primogeniture is not regarded in *Venice*: The Estate being divided equally among the Male heirs, who have all when twenty-five Years of Age and resident in *Venice* a Vote in the Senate. The Head of the Republick who is called *Doge* is elected by the Senate; and has the Title of *Serene Highness*. All Decrees and publick Dispatches are wrote in and the Coin bears his Name: Yet upon the whole he is no more than President of the Senate; can do nothing without its Consent; and is as much accountable to the Laws as the meanest Subject. He is allowed a Pension of 11,300 Crowns to support his Dignity; but he cannot stir out of *Venice* without the Leave of the Senate: And lest he should at any Time attempt to make himself arbitrary his near Relations are always excluded from Offices of Trust.

It

The Interest of It is for the Interest of the Republick to be upon good
V E N I C E *with* Terms with the Pope: Whose Influence will be always
Regard to the useful in gaining her Allies when attacked by the *Turks*.
P O P E.

She has for all this on many Occasions vigorously opposed the Encroachments of this Pontiff; and, to prevent the Intrigues of Churchmen in his Favour they are rendered incapable of all civil Employments.

G E R M A N Y. The *Venetians* have Reason to fear, that the House of *Austria* will at some Time revive its Claims on the *Paduan* and *Trevisan*: But as the Power of this House in *Italy* is a good deal reduced they are at present secure enough. It is for the Interest of the Republick to cultivate a good Understanding with the Empire: Whose Assistance often has been and always will be of the utmost Service in the case of a Rupture with the *Turks*. On the other Hand as the Empire has always suffered by Expeditions into *Italy*, it will never be prudent for the *Germanick Body* to disturb any of the *Italian Powers*, and especially this *Republick*, who is the best Ally it can have against the *Infidels*.

S P A I N. The Republick, who has not yet forgot the Conspiracy wherein the *Spanish Ambassador* was engaged, ought to be jealous of the Power of *Spain* in *Italy*; and it particularly concerns her that the *Dutchy of Milan* does not fall under Subjection to a *Spanish Prince*.

F R A N C E. The *Venetians* have not much to fear from *France*, which is at a great Distance from them: But it is for their Interest to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*.

S A V O Y. The assuming of the Title of King of *Cyprus* by the King of *Sardinia* is to this Day disliked by the Republick, although the Island of *Cyprus* has been long subject to the *Turks*. The Friendship however of this Prince, who is in Possession of the Passes into *Italy*, and is by the Acquisition of *Sardinia* become formidable, ought to be cultivated by the *Republick*. On the other Hand she is capable of assisting him on many Occasions; and it is upon the whole for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

N A P L E S and **S I C I L Y**. They would thereby lose a beneficial Trade; not could the *Venetians* get any Thing by a Rupture with the King of the *Two Sicilies*. On the contrary as they could annoy

annoy him greatly by Sea, it is not likely that he should attack them.

It is much for the Interest of the other States of *Italy* The other to be in Alliance with the Republick; and indeed the ITALIAN Preservation of all the *Italian* States, and the Liberties States. of *Italy*, does very much depend upon Union, amongst themselves.

The Republick is in no Danger from the *Swiss*; nor SWISSER- can she have any Interest in attacking them. On the LAND. contrary it concerns her to be in Amity with the *Swiss*, that she may in case of Need hire Troops of them.

A prodigious Hatred of the *Portuguese* did for a long PORTUGAL! Time subsist amongst the *Venetians*, because the *Portuguese* were the first who deprived the *Venetians* of their *India* Trade: But as this is now pretty well forgot and both States have Reason to be jealous of *Spain*, it is for their mutual Interest to be upon good Terms.

The Friendship of the *Maritime* Powers ought always The MARI- to be cultivated by the Republick; for, besides that it is TIME POW- their Interest in common with hers to preserve the Bal- ERS. lance of Power betwixt the Houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*, without the Assistance of a Fleet from them the House of *Bourbon* might easily become Master of the *Mediterranean*. These Powers too can by their Fleets convey Succours and Provisions to the Republick, when her other Allies cannot bring her either of these.

The Republick has little or no Concern with any of The NORTH- the Northern Powers except *Poland*; with whom she is ERN POWERS. engaged in a Defensive Alliance against the *Turks*.

The *Venetians* have suffered a great deal and have more The TURKS. to fear from the *Turks*; for, notwithstanding that all the Christian Powers are concerned in point of Interest to join with them against the common Enemy, it has been often found that their Assistance was not to be depended upon, or was rendered ineffectual by the Jealousies which arose amongst themselves. For these Reasons, and on Account of the great Traffick which they carry on in *Turky*, it is for the Interest of the *Venetians* to avoid as much as possible a War with the *Turks*.

C H A P. VIII.

Of DENMARK.

DENMARK a
very ancient
Monarchy.

DENMARK a very ancient Monarchy had its Kings long before the Birth of **JESUS CHRIST**; but as the ancient History of this Kingdom is in the general obscure and uncertain, we shall content ourselves with just mentioning a few Things, which are with some Degree of Certainty handed down.

FROTHO III. *Frotho III.* one of the most famous amongst the ancient Kings of *Denmark*, was as it is said Master of *Denmark*, *Sweden*, *Norway*, *England*, *Ireland* and that Part of *Germany* bordering on the *Baltick*. He likewise subdued the *Vandals*; and took upon himself the Title of King of the *Vandals*.

GOTRIC. *Gotric* another of the ancient Kings was remarkable for the great Assistance he gave to *Wiikind* King of *Saxony* against the Emperor *Charlemain*.

ERIC I. 846. In the Time of *Eric I.* who reigned about the Year of **CHRIST 846**, Christianity was first promulgated in this Kingdom by *Ansgartus* Bishop of *Bremen*.

GORMO II. An Attempt being afterwards made to extirpate Christianity by *Gormo II.* the Emperor *Henry the Bird-catcher* took up Arms against him, and forced him to permit the free Exercise thereof all over his Dominions.

HARALD VI. In the Reign of *Harald VI.* Son of *Gormo II.* *Jutland* and some other Provinces in *Germany* belonging to the *Danes* were conquered by *Otho the Great*.

SWEYN I. 980. *Sweyn* his Son, who succeeded to the Crown in the Year 980, being taken Prisoner by the *Fulins*, the Women gave their Ornaments of Gold and Silver for his Ransom. In Return for this he ordained that Daughters, who before inherited only a small Part of their Father's Estate, should for the Time to come share equally with Sons.

Canuti

Canute II. Son and Successor of *Sweyn*, surnamed *the CANUTE II.* Great, completed the Conquest of *England* which his Father had begun.

At the Death of this Prince in the Year 1017 his CANUTE III. Dominions were divided betwixt his three Sons. *Harald* had *England*; *Sweyn* *Norway*; and *Canute* *Denmark*.

After the Death of *Canute Magnus* Son of *Olaus* the MAGNUS. Saint King of *Norway* made himself Master of *Denmark*.

The Kingdom of *Denmark* was afterwards conquered SWEYN II. by *Sweyn*, who defeated *Harald Hardroode* King of *Norway*.

Sweyn died in the Year 1074, and *Harald* his Son HARALD after reigning two Years was succeeded by *Canute* his VII. Brother.

This Prince by encreasing the Power and Authority CANUTE IV. of the Bishops, and by granting the Tenth Penny to the Clergy, so exasperated his Subjects, that the *Futlanders* fell upon and slew him in the Year 1087: But in Return for his Liberality to the Church he was canonized.

Olaus IV. his Brother was next raised to the Throne; OLAUS IV. and at his Death in the Year 1095 *Eric* another Son of 1087. *Sweyn II.* succeeded.

After taking *Julin* a strong City in *Pomerania* *Eric* ERIC II. died in the Year 1105 in the Island of *Cyprus*, as he was 1095 going a Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*.

After a long civil War which followed upon the SWEYN III. Death of *Eric*, *Sweyn*, *Canute* and *Waldemar*, who all CANUTE V. laid Claim to the Crown, agreed to divide the King- WALDEMAR

dom betwixt them: But *Canute* being assassinated at the I. 1157. Instigation of *Sweyn*, and *Sweyn* being slain in a Battle with *Waldemar*, the latter became about the Year 1157 Master of the whole Kingdom. *Waldemar* afterwards chastised the *Rugians* and *Vandals*, who had during the civil War committed great Ravages in *Denmark*; demolished *Julin*, and laid the Foundation of *Dantzick*. In his Time also it was that *Absalom* Bishop of *Roschild* COPENHAGEN began to build *Copenhagen*. founded.

Canute his Son, who succeeded in the Year 1182, CANUTE VI. was for a long Time at War with the *Vandals*; but he 1182. in the End forced all their Princes to do him Homage, and took upon himself the Title of King of the *Vandals*. He

ESTHONIA and LIVONIA conquered. afterwards took *Hamburg*, which continued subject to the *Danes* twenty seven Years, and other Places from *Adolph* Count of *Holstein*; and having conquered *Esthonia* and *Livonia* caused the Christian Religion to be preached in these Provinces. He died in the Year 1202 and was succeeded by *Waldemar* his Brother.

WALDEMAR II. 1202. This Prince was in the Beginning of his Reign very successful, and considerably extended his Dominions in *Germany*; but they were afterwards greatly diminished in Consequence of his Conduct with regard to Count *Swerin*. The latter being informed upon his Return from an Expedition to the *Holy Land*, that *Waldemar*, to whose Care he had committed his Lady and Country, had most wickedly abused his Confidence by living in Adultery with her, he contrived to make *Waldemar* Prisoner; and after confining him three Years forced him to pay 45,000 Marks of Silver for his Ransom.

Many Provinces revolt. *Pomerania*, *Mecklenburg*, *Lubeck* and *Dantzick* took this Opportunity to revolt. *Adolph* Count *Schawenberg* took from him many Places in *Holstein*; and the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order made themselves Masters of *Esthonia* and *Livonia*. Attempting to recover these Countries *Waldemar* was defeated with great Loss in the Year 1227 by Count *Schawenberg* at the Battle of *Bornhou*: He however before his Death in the Year 1241 did recover *Esthonia* and *Revel*.

Battle of BORNHOU, 1227.

ERIC V. 1241.

Eric his eldest Son succeeded to the Crown; but *Waldemar* gave some Parts of his Dominions to his other Sons: As the Dutchy of *Sleswick* to *Abel*; the Province of *Blaking* to *Canute*; and the Islands of *Laland* and *Falster* to *Christopher*. A Quarrel soon arose between *Eric* and his Brothers who refused to do him Homage; and a War ensued, which lasted till he was assassinated by *Abel* in the Year 1250.

He is slain.

ABEL, 1250.

After reigning two Years *Abel* was slain in a Battle with the *Friselanders* and *Ditmarsians*, and *Christopher* succeeded.

CHRISTOPHER I. 1252.

He is poisoned with the Host.

This Prince after suffering a good deal from the Intrigues of the Archbishop of *Lunden* clapped him into Prison: But it cost *Christopher* dear; for being excommunicated he was poisoned in the Year 1286, and as some say with the Host.

The Reign of *Eric* his Son was greatly disturbed ERIC VI.
by the Clergy; and he was at the same Time at War 1286.
with both *Norway* and *Sweden*. He was at last bar-
barously assassinated by some Lords of his own Kingdom.

Eric his Son upon his Accession declared War against ERIC VII.
the King of *Norway*, who had given Shelter to his Fa-
ther's Assassins: But nothing considerable was done by
Eric in this or in his Wars with some other Neighbours.
He died in the Year 1319.

Christopher Brother and Successor of *Eric*, who associa- CHRISTO-
ted his Son *Eric* with him in the Government, was PHER II.
driven out of the Kingdom because he had laid very heavy 1319.
Taxes on his Subjects; and *Waldemar* Duke of *Sleswick*
was chosen. The People grew afterwards weary of *Wal-*
demar and *Christopher* was recalled. In a Battle with
Waldemar *Eric* was mortally wounded.

In this Reign the Kingdom of *Denmark* was so torn The Kingdom
into Pieces that scarce any Thing remained to Christo-is rent into
pher; and the Interregnum of seven Years, which hap- Pieces.
pened after his Death in the Year 1334, gave the *Hol-*
steiners an Opportunity of lording it in *Denmark*. Being
at length quite tired with their Oppressions, the *Danes*
invited *Waldemar* Son of their late King, who had been
brought up at the Court of the Emperor *Lewis* the *Ba-*
varian, to the Throne.

This Prince drove most of the *Holsteiners* out of WALDEMAR
the Kingdom; and in some measure reestablished its III. 1341.
Affairs. He did indeed sell *Esthonia* to the Knights of
the *Teutonic Order* for 18,000 Marks of Silver, most of
which he spent in a Voyage to the *Holy-Land*: But to
make good the Loss of this Province, he prevailed on
Magnus Samech of *Sweden* to restore *Scania*, which the
Count of *Holstein* had sold to him in the late Reign.

By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1366 betwixt him ALBERT OF
and *Albert* of *Sweden*, the Island of *Gothland* and some SWEDEN
Places belonging to the *Swedes* were ceded to *Waldemar*. makes large
He had afterwards some Quarrels with the *Hans Towns*, Cessions to him.
and died in the Year 1375.

During the Minority of *Olaus* Successor of *Walde-* OLAUS VI.
mar, who was the Son of his Daughter by *Hacquin* 1375.
of *Norway*, *Margarst* Mother of *Olaus* had the Ad- NORWAY is
ministration of Affairs. This Prince succeeded after- annexed to
wards DENMARK.

wards to the Crown of *Norway*, and in Right of his Father who was Son of *Magnus Samech* laid Claim to that of *Sweden*.

MARGARET,
1387.
Norwegians chose *Margaret* his Mother for their Queen; who having associated *Eric* of *Pomerania* her Sister's Son in the Government immediately declared War against *Albert* of *Sweden*. As the *Swedes* dissatisfied with *Albert* were ready to submit to *Margaret*, the Troops of *Albert* were soon dispersed; and he was taken Prisoner.

War with SWEDEN.
Union of the
three NORTH-
ERN CROWNS.
After six Years Confinement *Margaret* upon his renouncing all Pretensions to the *Swedish* Throne set *Albert* at Liberty, and caused *Eric* her Colleague to be crowned King of *Sweden*. Not long after it was in an Assembly of the States of *Denmark*, *Sweden* and *Norway* at *Calmar* resolved, that for the Time to come these three Kingdoms should be subject to the same Sovereign. *Margaret* died in the Year 1412 greatly regretted by the *Danes*: To whom she had been an extraordinary good Queen.

ERIC VIII.
1412.
Eric now sole Master of the three Kingdoms had a long Quarrel with the Counts of *Holstein*, who were assisted by the *Hans Towns*, concerning the Duchy of *Sleswick*; but it was at last made-up. In the Year 1438 he gave the Isle of *Rugen* to the Duke of *Pomerania* his Cousin, which had been for many Years subject to *Denmark*.

He is stripped of his Dominions.
About this Time the *Swedes*, disgusted because *Eric* had violated the Oath taken at his Coronation by sending many foreign Officers amongst them, resolved to stand up in Defence of their Liberties. The *Danes* and *Norwegians* also, taking the Advantage of his neglecting the Affairs of Government and living altogether in *Gothland*, threw off their Obedience; and after alledging that he had forfeited his Right to the Crown, by endeavouring contrary to the reserved Privilege of Election to raise *Bogislas* Duke of *Pomerania* to the Throne, they chose *Christopher* Duke of *Bavaria* his Sister's Son for their King. *Eric* finding himself thus stripped of his Dominions retired in the Year 1439 to *Pomerania*, and spent the Remainder of his Days privately.

Christopher

Of DENMARK.

Christopher reigned nine Years to the general Satisfaction of his Subjects. The Crown being at his Death offered to *Adolph* Duke of *Sleswick*, he excused himself on the account of his infirm old Age from accepting thereof: But he recommended to the *Danes* and *Norwegians* *Christian* Count *Oldenburg* his Sister's Son, from whom the present Royal Family of *Denmark* is descended.

As the *Swedes* did not agree with the two other Nations in choosing *Christian* for their King, but elected *Charles* *Cannison*, the former soon after his Accession made War against *Charles*; and many *Swedish* Lords joined with him. After this War had been for some Time carried on with great Animosity, the Bishop of *Upsal* fell upon *Charles* so unexpectedly that he was forced to save himself by flying into *Prussia*; and *Christian* was in the Year 1458 crowned King of *Sweden*: But the *Swedes* dissatisfied with his Government in the Year 1463 recalled *Charles*, whereupon the War betwixt the two Nations was renewed.

At the Death of *Charles* in the Year 1470 *Christian* went with a powerful Army into *Sweden*; but instead of regaining the Crown he was routed with great Loss near *Stockholm* in the Year 1471. The Emperor gave to this Prince the Province of *Ditmarsh*; and erected the County of *Holftein* into a Dutchy for him. *Margaret* one of his Daughters having married to *James* III. of *Scotland*, *Charles* gave her in Dowry the Islands of *Orkneys* and *Shetland*: Which before appertained to the Kingdom of *Norway*.

Upon the Death of *Christian* in the Year 1481 his Son, who divided the Dutchy of *Holftein* with his Brother *Frederick*, was chosen King of *Denmark* and *Norway*.

After reigning peaceably many Years *John* attacked *Sweden* with great Vigour; and having defeated the *Dalecarlians* forced *Steen Sture*, in whose Hand the Administration of Affairs was, to deliver up *Stockholm*. He was hereupon crowned King of *Sweden*; but his Army was afterwards defeated by *Steen Sture*, and he was forced to quit the Kingdom. *Steen Sture* Administrator of the Affairs of *Sweden*, and *Suante Sture* his Successor, did

afterwards in Concert with the *Lubackers* give *John* so much Trouble, that he was glad a little before his Death in the Year 1513 to accommodate Matters with the latter.

CHRISTIAN II. 1513. *Christian* the Son and Successor of *John* soon drew upon himself the Hatred of the *Danes*: Which was occasioned partly by his suffering himself to be governed by *Sigebrita*, a cunning old Woman Mother to *Duveche* whom he kept as a Mistress, and partly by his putting the Governor of *Copenhagen* to Death unjustly.

He obtains the Crown of SWEDEN, but is afterwards driven from thence. A Difference arising about this Time in *Sweden*, betwixt *Steen Sture* the younger and *Gustavus Trolle* Archbishop of *Upsal*, whose Castle had been plundered by *Steen*, *Christian* came to the Archbishop's Assistance and carried him for Safety into *Denmark*. An Expedition was soon after concerted by these two against *Sweden*; and they obtained a Decree from the Pope, condemning the *Swedes* to condign Punishment for the Outrage done to *Gustavus*. *Steen Sture* being slain in his first Battle with the Troops which *Christian* sent to carry this Decree into Execution, the Affairs of *Sweden* were thrown into such Confusion, that upon *Christian's* going in Person the Gates of *Stockholm* were opened to him by *Christiana* Widow of *Steen*. Having given his Word for pardoning all past Transactions he was declared King: But when the *Swedes* thought themselves quite secure, he caused some of the Chief amongst them to be seized and put to Death by the common Hangman, and many other Acts of Cruelty were exercised. His Tyranny however did not last long; for *Gustavus Erickson* who had been sent Prisoner into *Denmark* made his Escape from thence; and putting himself at the Head of the *Dalecarlians* drove *Christian* out of *Sweden*: Which has ever since bravely maintained its Independence of *Denmark*.

He flies into the NETHERLANDS.

The Hatred of his own Subjects having in the mean Time encreased against *Christian*, a Rebellion broke out in the Year 1523 amongst the *Futlanders*. This so terrified him that he fled with his Wife and Children into the *Netherlands*; and the *Danes* chose *Frederick* Duke of *Holslein* his paternal Uncle for their King.

Christian

Christian afterwards raised some Troops; but these **FREDERICK** were soon dispersed; nor could the Emperor *Charles V.* I. 1523. his Brother-in-law give *Christian* any Assistance, because he had a War with *France* upon his Hands. In the Year 1532 *Christian* landed in *Norway*: But upon a Promise that his Person should be safe, he soon surrendered himself Prisoner to *Canut Gilderstern*; and he was confined by the Order of *Frederick* in the Castle of *Sundenburg*. In the Year 1546 he was forced to give up all his Pretensions to the Crown: And being conducted to *Cullenburg* was as he justly deserved confined there untill his Death in the Year 1559. *Frederick* in order to strengthen himself had entered into an Alliance with *Gustavus* King of *Sweden* and the *Hans Towns*, and he also granted great Privileges to the Nobility. He died in the Year 1533.

Christian the Son of *Frederick* was in the Beginning **CHRISTIAN** of his Reign greatly disturbed by the Intrigues of *Christ-III.* 1533. *topper Count Oldenburg* and the *Lubeckers* in Favour of *Christian II.* and some Provinces had declared for this deposed Prince. By the Assistance however of *Gustavus* King of *Sweden* he triumphed over all his Enemies; and in the Year 1536 made himself Master of *Copenhagen*.

As the Bishops had been remarkably active against *The Protestant Christian*, they were not included in the Agreement after-*Religion is* wards come to; and being deprived of their Sees the Pro-*established in* testant Religion was established in *Denmark* and *Nor-DENMARK.* *way.* *Christian* reigned peaceably from this Time to the Day of his Death in the Year 1558, and was succeeded by his Son *Frederick*.

This Prince after subduing the Province of *Ditmarsh* **FREDERICK** entered into a War against *Eric* King of *Sweden*: II. 1558. Which having continued with great Losses on both Sides nine Years, it was ended by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of their Imperial, *Christian* and *Polish* Ma-*Treaty of STE-* **TIN.** *jesties* at *Stetin* in the Year 1570.

From the Accession of *Christian IV.* who in the Year **CHRISTIAN** 1558 succeeded his Father, the Kingdom enjoyed a most **IV.** 1558. profound Tranquillity till the Year 1611. A War *War with* breaking out at this Time with *Charles IX* of *Sweden* **SWEDEN.** *Christian* took *Calmar* and *Elseburg*: But by a Treaty concluded

concluded with *Gustavus* the Son of *Charles* in the Year 1613, these Places were both delivered up for a Sum of Money.

Battle of
KONINGS-
LUTERN.
Treaty of
LUBEC,
1629.

Christian engaged in the civil War of *Germany*, and was made General of the Circle of *Lower Saxony*; but it cost him dear: For being routed near *Konings-Lutern* he was forced to quit *Germany*. The Emperor's Troops afterwards over-run *Holstein* and *Jutland*; but both these Provinces a few Places excepted were restored to *Christian* by the Treaty of *Lubec* in the Year 1629.

War with
SWEDEN.

When *Gustavus* of *Sweden* entered into the War against the Emperor *Christian* offered his Mediation, hoping thereby to recover what he had lost, and to prevent the *Swedes* from getting a Footing in *Germany*: Which being refused he endeavoured to put a Stop to the Progress of the *Swedes*; and in order to distress them seized and confiscated many of their Merchant Ships in their Passage through the *Sound*. As the frequent Complaints hereupon made were disregarded, the *Swedes* who could no longer bear these Injuries invaded *Holstein* and *Jutland*. In the Course of the War that ensued the *Danes* sustained great Losses both by Sea and Land: And for the sake of Peace, which was obtained in the Year 1645 by the Interposition of the *French* Court, were forced to give up *Gothland*, *Osel* and *Femperland*. They moreover put the *Swedes* into the Possession of *Holland*; which Province was to be kept as a Pledge for their observing this Treaty for the Space of thirty Years: And the *Dutch* took this Opportunity of fixing the Toll for passing the *Sound* at a much lower Rate than had been usually paid. *Christian* died in the Year 1649.

1645.

FREDERICK
III. 1649.

Frederick his Son and Successor, imagining that *Charles Gustavus* of *Sweden* had exhausted his Strength by a War with *Poland*, and being thereto instigated by the *Dutch*, declared War against *Sweden* in the Year 1657. In this he found himself mistaken; for *Charles* attacked him with great Vigour in *Holstein* and *Jutland*; and amongst other Places took the Fortrefs of *Frederickstad* by Storm. The Winter being in the Beginning of the next Year very severe, *Charles* marched his Army over the Ice to *Funen*, and having surprized the *Danish* Troops in this Island made the best of his Way through the Islands

War with
SWEDEN,
1657.

Surprising
Progress of the
SWEDES.

Islands of *Langeland, Lolland and Falster* into *Zeland*.

As this surprizing Progress laid *Frederick* under a Necessity of making Peace at any rate, he by the Treaty of *Roschild* ceded the Provinces of *Holland, Bleking* and *ROSCHILD*. *Scania*, the Island of *Bornholm*, and *Babus* and *Drontheim* in *Norway* to the *Swedes*.

Being informed that the *Danes* had at the Solicitation *War with* of the *Emperor*, the *Elector of Brandenburg* and the *SWEDEN*. *States General* engaged to renew the *War*, as soon as his being engaged with *Poland* or *Germany* should give them an Opportunity, *Charles* resolved to be before-hand with them; and passing again over into *Zeland*, he took *Cronenburg* and besieged *Copenhagen* both by *Sea* and *Land*.

A *Dutch Fleet* was sent to the Relief of *Copenhagen* in *Battle of Co-* the Year 1658, and a very sharp Action ensued betwixt *PENHAGEN*, this Fleet and that of *Sweden*; in which the *Swedes* who 1658. behaved with great Bravery were worsted. The Attempt in the next Year to take *Copenhagen* by Storm failed, and the *Swedes* lost a Battle in the Island of *Funen*. About the same Time the Island of *Bornholm* revolted, and *Drontheim* was taken: Which Advantages, together with the Death of *Charles*, gave the *Danes* Hopes of recovering their former Losses; but a Plan of Peace being settled by *France, England* and *Holland*, a Treaty was shortly *Treaty of Co-* after signed at *Copenhagen*. By this, which in other *PENHAGEN*. Respects confirmed the Treaty of *Roschild*, the *Danes* were to keep *Drontheim* and the Island of *Bornholm*; and to give the *Swedes* in Lieu thereof some Lands in *Scania*.

This War being ended the States of the Kingdom, in *The Crown* a Diet held at *Copenhagen* in the Year 1660, conferred *made absolute*, upon *Frederick* the absolute Sovereignty of the King- 1660. dom; and made it hereditary. Hereby the Power and Privileges long enjoyed by the Nobility were put an End to; and a new Form of Government by which the King could do what he pleased without any Controul was introduced.

To *Frederick* who died in the Year 1670 succeeded *CHRISTIAN* *Christian* his Son. Having put his own Affairs into a good *V. 1670*. Posture, and entered into an Alliance with the *Emperor* and *Holland*

Holland and their Allies, this Prince thought no Time so proper to break with the *Swedes* as when they had been unsuccessful in *Brandenburg*.

War with
SWEDEN,
1675.

With a View to this he in the Year 1675 forced the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp*, who having no Suspicion gave him a Meeting, to renounce all the Advantages he had gained by the Treaty of *Roschild*; and to consent to the Demolition of the Fortres of *Toningen*. *Christian* afterwards made himself Master of *Wisnar*, and having in the following Year made a Descent upon *Scania*, he took without much Trouble *Helsingburg*, *Landscroon*, *Christianstadt* and the greatest Part of *Gotbland*: But the Troops detached to invest *Helmstadt* were surprized by *Charles XI* of *Sweden*, and all cut to Pieces or made Prisoners; and not long after the *Danish* Army was routed in a bloody Battle fought near *Lunden*. In the Year 1677 *Christian* laid Siege to *Malmoe*: But having sustained great Loss in making an Assault upon this Place, he retired and was soon after defeated by *Charles* near *Landscroon*. In the following Year the *Danes* were repulsed from before *Babus*, and being in Want of Provisions they were forced to surrender *Christianstadt*: But they gained considerable Advantages at Sea. By a Treaty shortly after concluded, all except a few Places in *Germany* that had been taken from the *Swedes* was restored.

1676.
Battle of
LUNDEN,
1677.

Battle of
LAND-
SCROON.

Treaty with
SWEDEN.

HOLSTEIN
invaded, 1683.

A fresh Misunderstanding arising betwixt *Christian* and the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp*, *Christian* in the Year 1683 invaded *Holstein*, and at the same Time seized *Fevern* which belonged to the House of *Anhalt Zerbst*. He afterwards made himself Master of the Island of *Heiligenland*: But by the Interposition of the Emperor and the maritime Powers, a Treaty was concluded at *Altena* in the Year 1689. By this the Duke was reestablished in his Dominions; and the House of *Anhalt* retook upon certain Conditions Possession of *Fevern*.

Treaty of AL-
TENA, 1689.

HAMBURG
attacked,
1686.

In the Year 1686 *Christian*, who had for some Time formed Pretensions to this Town, attacked *Hamburg*: But after reducing it to the greatest Extremity, which was in a great Measure owing to the Discord amongst the Magistrates, the Fears and Danger of the Inhabitants

tants were removed by the Accommodation of *Pinnenburg*.

A Difference arose in the Year 1693 betwixt *Christian* Dispute concerning the House of *Lunenburg* concerning *Ratzburg*, whose Fortifications the Princes of this House had encreased: *BURG*, 1693. Which ended in an Agreement that all the new Fortifications should be demolished.

On the Death of the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* in *HOLSTEIN* the Year 1694, the Court of *Copenhagen* insisted upon it invaded, as a Thing agreed by a Treaty; that the Troops of this Dutchy should be disbanded; that no new ones should be raised without the King of *Denmark's* Consent; and that a Stop should be immediately put to the fortifying of Forts and Citadels. Consent to these Demands being refused, the *Danes* seized the Forts *Holmer* and *Soreker*, and the Fortrefs of *Crimpen*; and as soon as they were in their Hands began to destroy the Fortifications. The Courts of *Vienna*, *London* and *Sweden* interposed, and prevailed upon the new Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* to agree, that his Troops should go into the Emperor's Service in *Hungary*; and that no new ones should be raised: But nothing less than a formal Renunciation of the Duke's Right to arm himself would satisfy *Denmark*. The Duke having in the mean Time married the King of *Sweden's* eldest Daughter, the latter resolved to assert the Rights of his Son-in-law; and Troops were ordered to march for the support of him. 1694.

Frederick who in the Year 1699 succeeded *Christian* his *FREDERICK* Father, would abate nothing of his Father's Demands: And *IV.* 1699. not content with demolishing the new Works he made himself Master of several Places in *Holstein*. The Siege however of *Tonningen* was raised by the united Troops of the Circle and *Sweden*; and *Frederick* soon found himself attacked in his Capital by the combined Fleet of *England*, *Holland* and *Sweden*.

By a Treaty, which this obstinate Prince was under a Treaty of Necessity of concluding at *Trawendall* in the Year 1700, *TRAWEN-* it was stipulated, that the House of *Holstein* should be *DALL*, 1700. absolutely at Liberty to raise Troops, build Forts and enter into Alliances; that the Convention betwixt this House and the Chapter of *Lubeck* for its Succession to the Bishoprick of *Lubeck* should continue in full Force; that the

the King of *Denmark* should pay the Duke 260,000 Crowns; and that neither Power should erect a Fort within two Miles of any Fort belonging to the other, or within a Mile of the other's Territory. Some Difficulties were started as to the Payment of the Money, and these were increased by the Diffusions in the Chapter of *Lubec*: Some of whom in the Year 1701 chose *Christian Brothet* to the Duke of *Holslein Gottorp* Coadjutor to the Bishop of *Lubec*; others the hereditary Prince of *Denmark*.

LUBEC attacked, 1705. Upon the Death of the Bishop in the Year 1705, the Court of *Copenhagen* resolved to make good the Prince of *Denmark* Election by Force: But this Matter was compromised; and a Sum of Money being paid him by *Great-Britain* he quitted the Places he had taken Possession of.

Missionaries sent to the EAST-INDIES. About this Time the King of *Denmark* sent some Persons to propagate Christianity on the *Malabar Coast*: And the Success of these Missionaries fully answered his Expectations.

War with SWEDEN, 1709. *Sweden* being almost ruined by the fatal Battle of *Pultawa*, *Frederick*, pursuant to a Resolution formed at an Interview with the Kings of *Prussia* and *Poland* at *Berlin*, declared War in the Year 1709 against *Sweden*, and made a Descent upon *Scania*: But being in the Year following about to invest *Idelshsburg*, the *Swedes* fell upon him with such Vigour that he was forced to repass the Sea. In *October* the same Year there was an Engagement at Sea; in which although the Loss was great on both Sides the Fleet of *Sweden* suffered most. *Frederick* having in Concert with *Poland* attacked *Swedish Pomerania* in the Year 1711, he took *Danzgarten*: But his Attempts upon *Wismar* and *Stralsund* both failed. In the Year 1712 he invaded the Dutchy of *Bremen*, and made himself Master of *Stade*. This Advantage was however dearly paid for by the Loss his Troops sustained near *Gadebusch*: Which was followed with the burning

FREDERICK is repulsed from SCANIA, 1710. of *Altena*. In the next Campaign *Frederick* seized some Places in *Holslein*; and obliged Count *Steinbock* to surrender himself Prisoner with all his Troops. The Congress held at *Brunswick* being unsuccessful, *Frederick* became in the Year 1714 Master of *Toninguan*. In the

ALTENA burnt, 1713.

1714.

the Year 1715 the *Swedish Fleet* was defeated by 1715.
 that of *Denmark*; and which was of more Consequence the united Troops of *Denmark* and *Prussia*, SWEDISH Fleet worsted.
 commanded by the two Kings in Person, forced the
 Town of *Stralsund* to capitulate. The next Year was 1716.
 equally successful to the *Dans*; the *Swedes* being driven
 out of *Norway* by *Frederick*, and *Wismar* in *Pomerania*
 being taken. After the taking of this last Place the
 Vigour of *Frederick* in pushing the War abated visibly:
 Which was generally imputed to the Opposition made
 by his own Allies, to a Design he had formed of con-
 quering *Scania*.

Upon the Death of *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* his *Britan- Treaty of*
nick Majesty offered his Mediation: Which being readily STOCKHOLM,
 accepted by *Frederick*, a Treaty of Peace was signed in 1720.
 June 1720 at *Stockholm*.

In the following Year *Louisa* of the House of *Meck- FREDERICK*
lenburg Gustrow Wife of *Frederick* died; and he mar- maries the
 ried the *Dutchess* of *Sleswick*, Daughter of the late Dutchess of
 Count *Reventlau* Grand Chancellor of the Kingdom. SLESWICK.
 Having the Misfortune two Years before to see *Copen-*
bagen his Capital reduced to Ashes, *Frederick* died at
Odensee in the Year 1730, and was succeeded by *Chris-*
tian Frederick his Son: Who was born in the Year
 1699, and married in the Year 1721 to *Sophia Madeleine*
 of the House of *Brandenburgh Culmbach*.

This Prince in the Year 1732 acceded to the Alliance CHRISTIAN
 concluded betwixt the Courts of *Vienna* and *Petersburg*: VI. 1732,
 Of which the principal Conditions were: That the con- Alliance with
 tracting Powers should guaranty each other's Possessions; the Courts of
 that all Treaties contradictory directly or indirectly to VIENNA and
 this Alliance should be revoked; that in Case either of PETERS-
 the contracting Powers should be attacked the others BURG.
 should endeavour by good Offices to procure Satisfac-
 tion; and if these were insufficient should furnish the
 Succours stipulated, and not lay down their Arms till the
 Power injured had ample Justice; and that any Power
 should be at Liberty to enter into this Alliance. Some
 Things moreover which concerned Trade were regu-
 lated; and the King of *Denmark* undertook for him-
 self and his Heirs the Guaranty of the *Pragmatick*
Sanction.

In

Difference
with the
BURGERS,
1734.

In Consequence of this Treaty *Christian* sent in the Year 1734 Six Thousand Men to the Emperor's Assistance, in the War which broke out on Account of the *Polish* Election. Upon the Marching of these Troops very near *Hamburg*, the Inhabitants, betwixt whom and the Court of *Denmark* there had for some Years been a Misunderstanding, feared they might be intended to surprize this Place; and the King of *Prussia* at their Request wrote as Director of the Circle to *Christian* concerning this Affair. The latter in his Answer, declared that he had no Design upon the Town of *Hamburg*: Yet at the same Time hinted, that he did not look upon it as dependent upon the Empire, but as a Place which absolutely belonged to him. When the *Hamburgers* afterwards sent Deputies to *Christian* with Presents at *Altona*, whither he went to review his Troops, he refused to see them: And instead of suffering the *Hamburgers* to trade as they desired with *France* during the War, he seized some of their Ships. The *Hamburgers* having afterwards agreed to disannul their Bank, and to take on all Occasions the current Coin of *Denmark*, which they had for some Years refused, this Quarrel was ended in *April* 1736 by a Convention; whereby every Thing was put upon the same Footing it had been before the Year 1710.

Commerce encouraged.

From this Time *Christian* applied himself with great Diligence to the encouraging of Trade, and a Council of Economy and Commerce was established, for the examining of all Plans offered for the Benefit of the Nation. Artificers of divers kinds were likewise sent for from *Holland*; and in order to encourage *Danish* Manufactures as much as possible, the importing of foreign ones was prohibited. For the sake moreover of preventing the Exportation of Money a Royal Bank was erected.

Difference
with his
TANNICK
Majesty, 1731.

After the Courts of *Great-Britain* and *France*, jealous of each other, had each for some Time endeavoured to attach the Crown of *Denmark* to it by a Treaty of Subsidy, the Endeavours of the former had like to have been frustrated by the following Accident. His *Britannick* Majesty, who was in Possession of the Dutchy of *Lawenburg*, having in the Year 1738 obtained from the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* a Cession of all his Pretensions

tensions to the Lordship of *Steinhorst*, which had formerly been mortgaged by the Dukes of *Lawenburg* to his House, the Regency of *Hanover* declared by a publick Act that they intended to take Possession thereof. A Detachment of Soldiers being hereupon sent by the King of *Denmark* who also laid Claim to it into this Lordship, the Regency of *Hanover* after protesting against this Step ordered some Troops that Way, and a Skirmish in which some were killed on both Sides ensued. It was at first thought this would have had bad Consequences; but the Matter being compromised *Christian* gave up his Pretensions to *Steinhorst*, and a Treaty of Subsidy, by which he engaged to keep up six thousand Men for the Service of his *Britanick* Majesty, was shortly after signed at *Copenhagen*.

In the Year 1740 some *Dutch* Ships fishing upon the DUTCH VES- Coast of *Iceland*, which belongs to the Kingdom of *Nor-* SELS SEIZED ON way, were seized by the *Danish* Guard ships and carried THE COAST OF into *Copenhagen*. This was resented by the *States Gene-* ICELAND. 1740. ral, and every thing looked very much like a Rupture betwixt the two Nations; but by the Mediation of *Sweden* the Affair was amicably determined.

It is evident from History that the *Danes* have formerly been a brave warlike People; but their Glory is at this Day greatly diminished: Which may in some Measure be imputed to their having been very little engaged in War since the *Swedes* shook off their Yoke. As their Country is moreover neither very large nor very populous the *Danes* when they have had Occasion for Troops have commonly hired *German* Troops; and by this Means military Skill has been much neglected amongst them. Since the making of the King absolute Attempts have indeed been made to augment the Forces of this Nation; they are however at present inconsiderable: Nor would any King perhaps choose to see a martial Spirit revived in the Nobility, lest they should endeavour to regain their lost Privileges. The *Norwegians* are naturally brave and their Climate inures them to Hardship; but since *Norway* has been subject to the *Danes* they have made it a point to keep the *Norwegians* from exerting their Valour. There are at this Time very few of the ancient Nobility of *Norway* left. The *Norwegians* being very

good Seamen many of them are in the Service of the *Dutch*: Nay most of the Inhabitants of *North Holland* who generally employ themselves in the Herring and other Fisheries are of *Norwegian* Extract.

Soil and Commodities of DENMARK and NORWAY.

Denmark is not very extensive; yet as the Soil is exceeding good for Pasture as well as Tillage many Horses and Oxen are annually exported, and a considerable Quantity of Corn is sent from hence into *Norway* and *Iceland*. The Coast of this Kingdom is well stored with Fish; but the People are so indolent that no more are caught than are sufficient to serve themselves. Wine, Salt and Strong-Beer the *Danish* are forced to have from other Countries, and they used formerly to be supplied with woolen Cloths and Spices by Foreigners; but since the Encouragement given by *Christian VI.* to Trade and Manufactures they make the former and the latter are imported from their own Settlements in the *East Indies*. One of the principal Branches of his *Danish* Majesty's Revenue is the Toll paid in ready Money by all foreign Vessels, for the Subjects of *Sweden* who used to be exempt now pay it, that pass the *Sound*. *Norway* wants many of the Necessaries of Life: But it has some Things in great Plenty as Fish, Timber, Masts, Tar and Pitch, and its Situation is vastly convenient for exporting these. Here are likewise Copper, Iron and some Silver Mines. *Iceland* abounds with dried Fish, salted Flesh and fine Down. These are exchanged by the Inhabitants for such Necessaries of Life as they are in Want of.

Interest of DENMARK with Regard to GERMANY.

As the Forces of *Denmark* bear no Proportion to those of *Germany* her Dominions upon the Continent are always liable to Insults from the Empire: But the Islands of which the Kingdom is in Part composed are in no Danger except which very seldom happens the greater and lesser Belt should be both frozen over, because the Empire has no naval Strength. It is not however probable that these two States should be embroiled unless the King of *Denmark* should make an Attempt upon *Hamburg*: Which besides that he has some Pretension thereto is indeed morsel delicious enough to tempt any Prince. If he were to do this it would not be likely to succeed without some Division or Treachery in the Town; for as it is of great Consequence to many *German* Princes that this

important

important Place does not come under Subjection to him they would undoubtedly interpose. It would moreover be highly imprudent in *Denmark* to draw upon herself the Resentment of the Empire: Because it is from thence that she must at all Times draw the chief Part of her Forces to defend herself against *Sweden*.

As the *Danes* have frequently endeavoured to reduce *SWEDEN*. *Sweden* again under Subjection to them, and have since they found this impracticable constantly disturbed the Trade of *Sweden* and upon all Occasions opposed its Aggrandisement, it is natural to suppose that there is a great Animosity betwixt the two Nations. If at the same Time the Conquests made of late Years upon *Denmark* by the *Swedes* be considered it will appear that *Sweden* is a most formidable Enemy: Yet it is not probable that she should attack *Denmark*; because it is obvious that *France* and the *Maritime Powers* whose Interest it is to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt the two Kingdoms would interpose. On the contrary as the *Swedes* are now so powerful that no Acquisition could be made from them by the *Danes* it would be imprudent in the latter to break with *Sweden*. Upon the whole it is for the mutual Interest of the two Kingdoms to forget all past Differences and support each other against the neighbouring States, and especially against the *Russians* whose great Encrease of Power has rendered them quite formidable.

The *Danes* may in all extreme Cases depend upon *The Maritime* the Assistance of the *Maritime Powers*; because their *TIME POWER* Trade in the *Baltick* would be endangered by the Ruin *ERS*. of this Kingdom: Yet neither of these would like to see *Denmark* too powerful lest she should raise the Toll paid for passing the *Sound*. As this Kingdom on the other Hand cannot possibly get any Thing by a War with *Great-Britain* or *Holland*, and may as the naval Strength of both is infinitely superior to hers lose a great deal thereby, it is not to be supposed that she should choose to break with either of these Powers.

Denmark is at present in no Danger from *Russia*; be-*RUSSIA*. cause the *Swedes* would be glad of the Opportunity of a Quarrel betwixt *Denmark* and *Russia* to endeavour the Recovery of what has in this Century been taken from them

them by the *Russians*. It cannot on the contrary be of any Use for *Denmark* to break with *Russia*, and it is undoubtedly of *Consequence* to her that the Jealousy betwixt *Sweden* and *Russia* should continue; yet she should be cautious of being cajoled by the latter into an Alliance against or an Indifference concerning *Sweden*; for if *Russia* should once become Mistress of *Sweden* *Denmark* would in all Probability soon lose her Independency.

POLAND.

Although this Kingdom has nothing to fear from *Poland* it is for her Interest to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Poles*: Who may be serviceable Allies to her in Case of a War with *Russia*, *Sweden* or *Germany*.

FRANCE.

France can scarce have any Interest of her own to quarrel with *Denmark*, nor is it probable that she would like to see this Kingdom ruined: Yet as *France* has been for many Years in Alliance with *Sweden* it has been a Maxim and a very prudent one of the Court of *Copenhagen* to side with the Enemies of *France*.

SPAIN and
other Powers.

Denmark has nothing to fear from *Spain* or such other Powers of *Europe* as are at a great Distance and have no considerable Maritime Force: Nor has she any Concern as to these further than what concerns the Preservation of the Balance of Power in general.

197

C H A P. IX.

Of S W E D E N.

IT seems clear from the Records of Antiquity that *Sweden* is a very ancient Kingdom. The *Swedish* History of the Swedes says that it was sooner peopled after the Deluge than any other Part of *Europe*. One of these *Johannes Magnus* relates that *Magog* Son of *Japhet* and Grandson of *Noah* was the Founder of the *Swedish* and *Gotbic* Nations; and that they took their Names from *Sweno* and *Gethar* or *Gog* two of his Sons: And after tracing the History of the *Gotbs* to their settling themselves near the *Black-Sea*, he goes on to shew how they made an Irruption into the *Roman* Empire and erected one Kingdom in *Italy* and another in *Spain*.

This Account of Things is indeed contradicted by *Johannes Messenius* in his *Scandinavia Illustrata*: Who says that *Magnus* has outdone the *Danish* Historian *Saxo Grammaticus* in extravagant Relations; and that as the Transactions of the earliest Times are only handed down by Tradition, ancient Songs or fabulous Legends nothing concerning these can with any Certainty be relied upon. He likewise rejects the List given by *Magnus* of the Kings who reigned before the Birth of *JESUS CHRIST*, and says there is no authentick Account of those Times extant. As moreover the History of the Kings who reigned for several Centuries after the Birth of *JESUS CHRIST* is much interrupted and very uncertain, we shall as best suiting with the Design of this Introduction just mention a few Things which are with some Degree of Certainty handed down, and descend to the Times whereof there is a better Account.

The famous *Othin* or *Woden* having been about sixty Years before the Birth of *JESUS CHRIST* driven by *Pompey*

with a great Number of People out of *Asa* he subdued the *Ruffians*, *Saxons* and *Danes*; and afterwards made himself Master of *Norway* and *Sweden*. He did indeed only keep *Sweden* for himself; but all the *Scandinavian* Princes were obliged to do him Homage: And hence came a Custom which lasted many Years, that at an Assembly of the *States General* of *Scandinavia* the King of *Denmark* held the Bridle and the King of *Norway* the Stirrup while the King of *Sweden* mounted his Horse.

FROTHO. In the Reign of *Frotho* surnamed *Ingo* the Church at *Upsal* was as it is said surrounded with a Chain of Gold of immense Value.

VISLUR. *Vislur* one of the antient Kings of *Sweden* was burnt by his Children; *Damadar* another of them was sacrificed by his Subjects to the Idol at *Upsal*: And another of them *Agnius* was hanged by his Wife.

HACQUIN I. The famous Battle of *Brovalla* in which the *Danes* *Battle of* lost 30,000 Men and the *Swedes* only 12,000 was *BROVALLA.* fought in the Time of *Hacquin* surnamed *King*. This Prince sacrificed nine of his Children to the Idol at *Upsal*; and would have served the tenth named *Egillus*, who was the only one left, in the same Manner if his Subjects had not interposed.

INGELLUS. *Ingellus* Successor of *Hiro*t caused seven petty Princes his Vassals to be burnt in their Apartments the Night after his Coronation; and he afterwards caused five more to suffer the same cruel Death. *Asa* his Daughter, who was married to *Gudrot* Prince of *Scania*, being of her Father's barbarous Disposition murdered her Husband and his Brother; and delivered up this Province to the *Swedes*.

SWEDEN in- Being sheltered by her Father *Ivan* Son of *Regner* **DANES.** King of *Denmark* invaded *Sweden*, and put all the Country to Fire and Sword. *Ingellus* finding himself reduced to the last Extremity by the Advice of his Daughter burnt himself with her and all his other Children, except *Olaus* who saved himself and fled into *Wermaland*, in his own Palace.

BERO. After the Death of *Ingellus* a *Swedish* Nobleman named *Charles* seized the Crown; but he was slain by *Regner* King of *Denmark*, and *Bero* or *Biern* Son of *Regner* was raised to the Throne.

Under

Of S W E D E N.

Under the Reign of this Prince and about the Year *Christianity* of CHRIST 829 *Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen* was sent introduced, by the Emperor *Lewis* the *Pious* to propagate the 829. Christian Religion in *Sweden*: And because *Bero* would not embrace it he was dethroned and banished by his Subjects.

His Successor *Asmund* reigned but a short Time; for *ASMUND I.* being a Persecutor of the *Christians* he was forced to quit the Kingdom, and *Olaus* was called from his Retirement in *Wermaland* and raised to the Throne.

This Prince in order to secure himself thereupon *OLAUS I.* married his Son *Ingo* to a Daughter of *Regner*. In the Year 853 *Ansgarius* came again into *Sweden*; and *Olaus* who resided at *Birca* at that Time a populous City was converted by this Bishop to the Christian Faith.

He afterwards marched an Army against *Denmark*, He conquers and having subdued this Kingdom appointed his Son *DENMARK.* *Ennegruus* to administer the Affairs thereof. Upon his return home he was sacrificed by his Heathen Subjects to the Idol at *Upsal*.

Ingo his Son and Successor was slain in the Year 890 *INGO I.* while he was at War with the *Russians*.

Eric his Son, surnamed *Weatherhat*, the next Suc-*ERIC I.* cessor is said to have been well skilled in Magick. 890.

The Son and Successor of this Prince was *ERIC II.* *Eric* surnamed *Seghersel*. He conquered the Provinces of *Finland*, *Courland*, *Livonia* and *Esthonia*. He afterwards took *Halland* and *Scania* from the King of *Denmark*, and obliged him to abandon all the rest of his Dominions; nor did he return to them until his Enemy was dead.

Stenchild the Son and Successor of *Eric* after being *STENCHILD I.* baptized caused the Idol at *Upsal* to be pulled down, and forbid his Subjects on Pain of Death to worship Idols; which so enraged his *Heathens* Subjects that they slew him and two Christian Priests whom he had obtained from the Bishop of *Hamburg*.

This did not deter *Olaus* his Brother and Successor *OLAUS II.* from sending for other Christian Priests to *Ethelred* King of *England*: And he was baptized with great Numbers

Of S W E D E N.

bers of his Subjects at a Spring, which is from the Name of the Priest who baptized them to this Day called *St. Sigifred's Well*. He was surnamed *Skatkonung* or *Tributary*: Because at the Sollicitation of some Priests he consented to pay the Pope an annual Tribute called *Romskot* for carrying on the War against the *Saracens*.

GOTHLAND united to SWEDEN.

This Prince took the Kingdom of *Norway* from *Oluf Trygeson*; but the latter recovered it again: And he it was that perfectly united the Kingdom of the *Goths*, betwixt whom and the *Swedens* there had been frequent Wars, to that of the *Swedens*.

ASMUND II.

In the Reign of *Asmund* his Son Christianity made vast Progress in *Sweden*: And Justice was administered with great Impartiality.

ASMUND III. He is routed by the DANES.

Asmund surnamed the *Slemme* his Brother and Successor, who took no Care about the Affairs of Religion or Government, was slain, and his Army was cut to Pieces by *Canute* King of *Denmark* near *Strange-pelle-Bridge*.

HACQUIN II.

A Difference arising after his Death betwixt the *Swedens* and *Goths* the former chose *Hacquin* surnamed the *Red*; the latter *Stenchild* surnamed the *Younger*: But the Matter was compromised by an Agreement that *Hacquin* who was far advanced in Years should enjoy the Crown during Life, and that the other should succeed thereto.

STENCHILD II.

Stenchild who pursuant to this Agreement succeeded *Hacquin* defeated the *Danes* in three considerable Actions.

INGO II.

Ingo the next King surnamed the *Pious* endeavoured to put an End to Idolatry; but he failed in doing this, and being forced to quit the Kingdom was afterwards assassinated in *Scania*.

HALSTAN, 1086.

Halstan his Brother who succeeded in the Year 1086 reigned with great Wisdom and Prudence.

PHILLIP.

The Reign of *Phillip* Son of *Halstan* was happy and glorious for *Sweden*. He was in the Year 1138 succeeded by his Son *Ingo*.

INGO III. 1138.

Ingo was a Prince of great Piety; and his Queen *Raguild* was so extraordinary for her Virtues that she was after her Death canonized and her Tomb at *Telga* was visited. He was poisoned by the *Ostro Goths*: Who were

were grown quite weary of the *Swedish* Government. *Christianity*
Under the Reigns of the five last Kings the Christian *makes great*
Religion had spread itself greatly in *Sweden*. *Progress.*

After the Death of *Ingo* the *Ostro Goths* without con-^{RAGWALD:}
sulting the other *Goths* chose *Ragwald Knaphofde* for their
King; but he was slain by the *Visgoths*.

In his Stead the *Ostro Goths* chose *Swercher* a very ^{SWERCHER I.}
good Prince for their King, who was afterwards mur-
dered by one of his *Domesticks*.

They afterwards elected *Charles* his Son: But as ^{ERIC III.}
the States of *Sweden* had chosen *Eric* surnamed the
Saint, who had married *Christina* Daughter of *Ingo III.*
the *Goths* finding an Union of the two Kingdoms neces-
sary consented to have him for their King also. It was
however at the same Time agreed betwixt the *Swedes*
and *Goths* that *Charles* should succeed at the Death of
Eric; and that the Descendants of these two Princes
should reign alternately.

Eric after reducing the *Finlanders* who had revolted *The Christian*
to Obedience obliged them to receive the *Christian Religion* intro-
Religion. He also caused all the ancient Laws of *duced into Fin-*
the Kingdom to be collected into one Book which *land.*
was called *St. Eric's Law*. He was slain in the Year
1160 near *Upsal* by *Magnus* Son of *Scatiler* of
Denmark: Who thereupon caused himself to be pro-
claimed.

His Reign was very short; for the *Swedes* and ^{MAGNUS I.}
Goths being informed of the Death of *Eric* fell upon *1160.*
the *Danes* with such Fury that *Scatiler* and his Son
Magnus with their whole Army were cut to Pieces.
The Booty taken after this Action was applied to the *Battle of*
building of a Church on the Field of Battle which was ^{UPSAL, 1160.}
very near *Upsal*; to which Church the Name of *Den-*
mark was given.

Charles the Son of *Swercher*, who was in the Year ^{CHARLES,}
1168 acknowledged as King of the *Swedes* and *Goths*, *1168.*
reigned with great Applause untill the Return of *Canute*
the Son of *Eric* who had retired into *Norway*. Being
surprized by this Prince and put to Death, because he
was suspected of having been accessary to *Eric's* Death,
his Wife fled with her Children into *Denmark*.

Some

CANUTE.

Some Danish Succours being at her Request granted they took the Field in Concert with the *Goths*: But their General *Kol* Brother of *Charles* was slain and this Army was entirely defeated by *Canute*. He afterwards reigned peaceably for the space of twenty-three Years.

SWERCHER
II.

After his Death *Swercher* Son of *Charles* was raised to the Throne: But he had for a Competitor *Eric* Son of the late King. The Difference being at Length composed by an Agreement that *Eric* should succeed, *Swercher* in order to make this void and secure the Kingdom to his own Family caused all the Sons of *Canute*, except *Eric* who fled into *Norway*, to be put to Death. Upon the Return of *Eric* with an Army the *Swedes* who detested this perfidious Behaviour flocked to him; and *Swercher* after being defeated fled for Shelter into *West Gothland*. Having obtained from *Waldemar* of *Denmark* a Body of Troops to the Number of 16,000 Men he attempted to regain the Crown; but a compleat Victory was gained over him in the Year 1208 by *Eric* and he was very near being made Prisoner. Two Years after he made another Effort in *West Gothland*; he was however again worsted and fell in the Action.

He flies into
GOTHLAND.ERIC IV.
1210.

Eric Son of *Canute* being thus established upon the Throne the ancient Treaty betwixt the two Families was renewed, and he declared *John* the Son of *Swercher* II. his Successor. He afterwards married *Rickot* Sister of *Waldemar*; and died at *Wisingsoe* in the Year 1219.

JOHN, 1219.

John, who pursuant to the Appointment of *Eric* succeeded, after reigning three Years died also at *Wisingsoe* at that Time the usual Residence of the *Swedish* Kings.

ERIC V.
1222.

Eric surnamed from an Impediment in his Speech the *Stammerer* Son of *Eric Canutson* was next raised to the Throne. In order to secure himself from the ambitious Designs of the House of *Folckunger*, which was very powerful, he married three of his Sisters to three of the principal Persons of this House, and was himself married to *Catherine* Daughter of *Sweyn Folckunger*. This did not answer his Expectations; for the Influence of these Lords being thereby encreased one of them named *Canute* took Arms against *Eric* and obliged him to flee into *Denmark*.

He

He returned with a powerful Army; and having de-He overcomes
 feated *Canute*, who together with his Son *Halinger* FOLCKUN-
 were put to Death, Peace was restored in the Kingdom. GER.
 Having afterwards suppressed a Rebellion in *Finland* *Eric*
 in order to awe the Inhabitants built Fortresses on the
 Frontiers of this Province.

Waldemar the Son of *Birger* by *Eric's* Sister being at WALDEMAR,
 the Death of *Eric* proclaimed King the Administration 1250.
 of Affairs was during his Minority lodged in his Father's
 Hands. *Birger* enacted some good Laws and by his
 prudent Conduct so won the Affections of the People,
 that he who before had only the Title of *Jerl*, which
 signifies Earl, was at the unanimous Desire of the States
 made a Duke. He however met with great Opposition The FOLCK-
 from the Heads of the House of *Folckunger*, which UNGERS are
 came in the End to an open Rupture: But having beheaded.
 prevailed upon them to give him a Meeting for accom-
 modating Matters he contrary to his Promise caused
 them to be seized, and all of them except *Charles* who
 escaped and fled into *Prussia* were beheaded. The
Folckungers being thus entirely got rid of *Birger* married
 his Son to *Sophia* Daughter of *Eric* of *Denmark*; and STOCKHOLM
 in the Year 1263 laid the Foundation of *Stockholm*. founded, 1263.
 Notwithstanding his Son was arrived at Man's Estate
Birger kept the Reins of Government in his own Hands
 untill his Death in the Year 1266.

Waldemar having while he went a Pilgrimage to *Je- A Querrel be-*
rusalem left his Brother *Magnus* Regent he upon his *t-wixt* WAL-
 Return accused *Magnus* of having aspired at the Crown. DEMAR and
 As the States of *Sweden* who assembled for this Pur- his Brothers,
 pose in the Year 1275 at *Strengness* could not recon-
 cile the two Brothers *Magnus* with another Brother
 named *Eric* went into *Denmark*. Having upon their
 Return with an Army made *Waldemar* Prisoner it was
 resolved by the States, that *Magnus* whose Administration
 they liked best should have all the Kingdoms except
East and *West Gothland* and the Provinces of *Smaland*
 and *Dalia*, which were to be reserved for the King.
 A War was hereupon commenced by *Waldemar*;
 and the *Danes* whom *Magnus* had disgusted by with-
 holding the Subsidy he had promised joined with him,
 The Event was for some Time doubtful; But *Waldemar*
 mar

mar being at Length deserted by the *Danes*, to whom *Magnus* had paid what was in Arrear, he was forced to resign the Government in an Assembly of the States.

MAGNUS II. The Throne being now vacant *Magnus* was crowned at *Upsal* in the Year 1279; and took the Title of King of the *Swedes* and *Goths*. This Title which had not been before made use of since the Time of *Olaus II.* has been ever since retained by the *Swedish* Kings.

The FOLCKUNGERS renewed their Intrigues. The Intrigues of the *Folckungers* being in this Reign recommenced, they after gaining over good Part of the Nobility caused *Ingemar* a Favourite of the King's to be put to Death; and *Girard* Count of *Holstein* the King's Father-in-law was thrown into Prison. The *Folckungers* having laid Siege to *Jencoping* *Magnus* so wrought upon them by fair Promises that they gave it over, and set *Girard* at Liberty; but they were afterwards condemned to die for High Treason, and all of them except *Philip* of *Runki* who bought off the Sentence for a large Sum of Money were beheaded: Nor has this Family been since able to make any Figure.

WALDEMAR His Affairs being in this manner established *Magnus* caused his Wife *Hedwig* to be crowned at *Sudercoping*; and by the Advice of the Senate confined *Waldemar* in the Castle of *Nicoping* where he died in the Year 1288. Having appointed *Torkel Canutson* Grand Marshal to be Regent during the Minority of *Birger* his Son, *Magnus* died himself two Years after at *Wisingsoe* and was buried at *Stockholm*.

BIRGER, 1290. *Torkel Canutson*, who administered the Affairs of the Kingdom thirteen Years with great Reputation, having secured the Sons of *Waldemar* in Prison sent an Army into *Carelia*. After subduing Part of this Province he obliged the Inhabitants to receive the Christian Religion; and built the Fortrefs of *Wiburg* upon their Frontier. He also took *Kexholm* from the *Russians*. *Birger* who after he came of Age married *Mareta* of *Denmark* extended his Dominions in *Carelia* and *Ingermania*, and built *Nordburg* on the Frontiers of *Russia*: But this Fortrefs was some Years after destroyed by the *Russians*. In the Year 1298 he appointed *Magnus* his Son then only three Years of Age his Successor; and this Appointment

pointment was in the Year 1303 confirmed by the Nobility and his two Brothers.

A Misunderstanding arising afterwards betwixt the *A Misunder-* King and his Brothers, the latter distrusting him and *standing be-* *Torkel* fled into *Denmark* and from thence into *Norway*. *twixt the King* Being furnished with an Army by *Hacquin* of *Norway* and his *Bro-* they soon after penetrated into *Go:bland* and defeated *thers.* the *Swedish* Troops sent against them. Hereupon *Birger* went in Person; but on coming up with them the Difference was by the Interposition of some *Senators* composed, and the two Brothers were put into Possession of their Estates. Being accused of spiriting up the Quarrel betwixt the Brothers, and other Things being laid to his Charge, *Torkel* was in the Year 1305 beheaded at *Stockholm*: But the Death of this prudent old Man cost the King dear; for he was soon after surprized by his Brothers at *Hatuna*, and after being obliged to abdicate the Crown in Favour of his Brother *Eric* was committed Prisoner to the Castle of *Nicoping*. During these Troubles the young Prince *Magnus* had been conveyed by one of his *Domesticks* into *Denmark*. After three fruitless Attempts made by the King of *Denmark* to restore his Brother-in-law it was agreed to refer the Matter to the Senate. In this which met at *Arboga* it was resolved, that if *Birger* would pardon all that was past and be content with such Part of the Kingdom as should be assigned him he should be set at Liberty. Consenting to this his Brothers and the Senate renewed their Oaths of Allegiance to him and Tranquility seemed so be re-established: But another Storm soon arose.

Eric of *Denmark* having first concluded an Alli-SWEDEN in-
ance with *Hacquin* of *Norway* entered *Sweden* with an *vaded by the*
Army of 60,000 Men to assist *Birger* in reducing his *DANES.*
Brothers to Obedience. The Success was at first such
as might be expected from so large an Army, *Fincoping*
being taken and the Troops of the two Brothers being
forced to retire: But the *Danes* were soon obliged to re-
turn home for Want of Provisions. Another Interview
being now had by the Brothers at *Hilsirburg* the Treaty
of *Arboga* was confirmed: By which *Eric* was to have
for his Share *West Gotbland* with the Provinces of *Dalia*,
Halland, *Wermaland* and *Smaland*; and *Waldemar* the
other

other Brother *Upland*, the Island of *Oeland* and Part of *Finland*.

BIRGER seizes his Brothers and throws them into a Prison where they are starved.

As all Animosity was now supposed to be at an End *Waldemar* in the Year 1317 made *Birger* a Visit at *Nicoping*. He was entertained with great Civility and at his going away *Birger* pressed him very much to come again and bring his Brother with him; for that he should be glad to have the Ground of their Quarrel entirely removed. Deceived by these fair Speeches *Waldemar* prevailed upon *Eric* who was at first quite averse thereto to go with him. They were received with all Marks of Affection and entertained with great Magnificence: But as soon as they were laid in their Beds they were seized, and after being loaded with Irons and otherwise ill used they were confined in the Castle of *Nicoping*. *Birger* having next caused all their Attendants to be murdered or imprisoned he made the best of his Way for *Stockholm* with an intent to surprize this City: The News however of this villainous Action having arrived there the Inhabitants who were prepared for him drove him back to *Nicoping*. Apprehending they would besiege this Place *Birger* after securing the Prison where his Brothers were confined as much as possible threw the Keys thereof into a River; and having ordered that the Doors should not upon Pain of Death be opened till his Return retired to *Stegburg*. The Castle of *Nicoping* was immediately invested: But the two Brothers were before it could be taken starved to Death.

He flies into DENMARK and MAGNUS the Son of ERIC is proclaimed.

Some Troops sent by the King of *Denmark* to the Assistance of *Birger* were soon dispersed; and after skulking from Place to Place he to avoid the Fury of his Subjects, who could not bear the Thoughts of his having so perfidiously broke through the Laws of Hospitality, went into the Island of *Gothland*. *Stegburg* being taken in the Year 1319 his Son *Magnus* whom the *Swedes* found there was sent Prisoner to *Stockholm*, and *Matthew Ketelmundson* was declared Regent. Hereupon *Birger* seeing his Affairs quite ruined fled for Shelter to *Denmark*, and *Magnus* an Infant Son of *Eric* was proclaimed King.

MAGNUS the Son of BIRGER is beheaded.

Not long after *Magnus* the Son of *Birger*, who had been before acknowledged by the States as Successor to the

the Throne, was beheaded at *Stockholm*; the News of which being carried to his Parents at *Denmark* it broke their Hearts.

During the Administration of *Ketelmundson* Things MAGNUS III. were conducted with great Discretion: But the People 1319. after his Death found themselves disappointed in the Hopes they had conceived of the young King. Being arrived at full Age he married *Blanch* Daughter of the Count of *Namur*; and having dismissed the old Counsellors was entirely governed by some young Favourites, amongst whom *Bengt* a Native of *West-Gotland* was the Chief. The Inhabitants of *Scania* who had long groaned under the Oppressions of the *Holsteiners* submitted to this Prince, and the Possession of this Province was confirmed to him by *Waldemar* of *Denmark*.

Engaging about the Year 1348 in a War against *Russia* it succeeded so ill that *Magnus* for the sake of War with DENMARK. Peace gave up Part of *Caralia*. Having in this War exhausted his Coffers he mortgaged the Crown Lands, and greatly disgusted the People by imposing some heavy Taxes. He was about the same Time excommunicated by Pope *Clement VI.* for not paying the Tribute granted in the Time of *Olaus II.* to the Holy See. At length *Magnus* being grown quite odious did at the Request of the Senate resign the Crown: And his Dominions being divided betwixt his two Sons *Eric* had *Sweden* and *Hacquin* *Norway*.

Bengt his Favourite being soon after put to Death ERIC VI. *Magnus* repented of quitting the Throne; and having obtained Succours from *Denmark* a bloody War ensued betwixt him and his Son *Eric*.

In order to put an End thereto a Division was in the ERIC is Year 1357 made of the Kingdom; by which the Fa- poisoned. ther had *Upland*, *Gotland*, *Wermland*, *West-Gotland*, *Oeland* and Part of *Holland*; and the Son the Remainder of the *Swedish* Dominions. As *Magnus* was however still jealous of *Eric* he prevailed upon him under the Pretence of having something of Importance to communicate to come to his Court; where he was poisoned by the Queen his Mother.

Magnus

MAGNUS re-
assumes the
Crown. *Magnus* now sole Master of the Kingdom determined to revenge himself upon the Nobility who had all along been against him; and in order to do it the more effectually he by a secret Treaty gave up *Scania* to the King of *Denmark*. This Prince after taking Possession thereof in the Year 1361 fell pursuant to his Agreement with *Magnus* into *Gotland* and *Oeland*: And after cutting many Peasants in Pieces and plundering the Country demolished *Bornholm*.

HACQUIN of
NORWAY is
called to the
Assistance of
his Subj. &c. The Protection of *Hacquin* being hereupon begged by the *Swedes*, who in this Distress scarce knew what to do, he marched against his Father and confined him in the Castle of *Calmar*. *Magnus* being afterwards set at Liberty he banished some *Swedish* Noblemen in the Year 1363. These repaired to the Court of *Holstein* and would have persuaded *Henry* Count thereof to accept the Crown of *Sweden*. He refused it on the Account of his great Age; but advised them to apply to the Duke of *Mecklenburg* who was the Son of *Magnus's* Sister; and the second Son of this Prince named *Albert* set out with them. After making themselves Masters of the Island of *Gotland* they came before *Stockholm*; which as they had a strong Party therein soon submitted and *Albert* was in the Year 1364 proclaimed King.

ALBERT,
1364. *Magnus* and his Son *Hacquin*, who was now married to *Margaret* of *Denmark*, assembled all the Troops they could in *Norway* and *Denmark* and marched against *Albert*. Coming up with him near *Lincoping* a desperate Action ensued: In which *Magnus* was taken Prisoner and *Hacquin* who was wounded saved himself with great Difficulty. The War being continued *Hacquin*, who was from Time to Time reinforced with fresh Troops from *Denmark* and *Norway*, became at last Master of the Field and *Sweden* was brought into a most deplorable Condition.

MAGNUS re-
nounces the
Crown, 1371. Upon the sitting down of *Hacquin* in the Year 1371 before *Stockholm* this City agreed to give *Magnus* his Liberty, in case he would pay 12,000 Marks and renounce his Right to the Crown in Favour of *Albert*. These Conditions being agreed to *Magnus* retired into *Norway*; where he was shortly after drowned by Accident. *Hacquin* did not long survive his Father, and

As *Olaus* his Son died very young the Crowns of *Norway* and *Denmark* were united under *Margaret* Daughter of *Waldemar*. By the Death of this young Prince the Race of *Swedish* Kings which began with *Eric III.* and had continued above 200 Years ended.

Albert who now thought himself securely fixed on the Throne soon began to slight the *Swedish* Nobility; and all Offices of great Profit or Trust were conferred upon *Germans*. As his Coffers were quite exhausted he endeavoured to obtain the Consent of the States for annexing Part of the Revenues of the Church and some Lands which belonged to the Nobility to the Crown: Which being refused he resolved to do it by Force. Some of desperate Fortunes and others of corrupt Minds came into his Views: But the Majority of the People implored the Assistance of *Margaret* of *Denmark*; and on their promising to acknowledge her as Queen in Case they were delivered from the Oppressions of *Albert* it was granted.

This was the Source of infinite Misfortunes; for as the Country had been before exhausted all Sorts of Injuries and Ravages were committed by both Parties. In the Year 1588 *Albert* mortgaged the Island of *Gothland* to the Knights of the *Teutonic* Order for 20,000 Nobles. As these however were insufficient to support the Expences of the War long he offered to give the Army of *Margaret* Battle in the Plain of *Fal'oping*. The Offer being accepted a Battle ensued upon the Day fixed, and it was fought with great Obstinacy on both Sides; but the Queen's Troops being in the End victorious *Albert* and his Sons were made Prisoners. This did not put an End to the Miseries of *Sweden*; for as the Duke of *Mecklenburg*, the Count of *Holstein* and the *Hans* Towns had declared for *Albert*, *Stockholm*, *Calmar* and some other strong Places in the Hands of his Party were supplied from the Ports of *Rostock* and *Wismar*. The *German* Garrisons who made frequent Sallies from these Places committed great Havock; and the *Swedish* Coast being at the same Time infested with Privateers Trade was quite ruined. Negotiations being entered into at *Aleholm* in the Year 1595 it was agreed to set *Albert*, his Son, and all Prisoners of Distinction

at Liberty; but it was upon Condition that *Albert* should within the Space of three Years cede all Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden* to *Margaret* or return back to Prison; and on his Failure in both the *Hans Towns* engaged to pay her the Sum of 60,000 Marks of Silver.

He retires to
MECKLEN-
BURG.

MARGARET.

He complied with the first of these Conditions; and after having reigned above twenty Years spent the Remainder of his Days in *Mecklenburg*.

Margaret being now Mistress of the three Northern Kingdoms her next Care was to unite them for the Time to come under one Head. With a View to this she caused her Sister's Son *Henry Duke of Pomerania*, who in order to please the *Swedes* took the Name of *Eric*, to be proclaimed King. In the Year 1396 he was crowned in an Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms at *Calmar*; and an Union, which if it had been preserved would undoubtedly have been of Service to the three Nations, was agreed upon and confirmed in the most solemn Manner.

ERIC VII.
1396.

MARGARET
has the Ma-
nagement of
Affairs.

Eric being very young the Administration of Affairs was during his Minority committed by the States to *Margaret*. Her Partiality to the *Danes* was soon perceived by the *Swedes* and *Norwegians*, nor could they bear to see the Revenues of *Sweden* and *Norway* spent in *Denmark* her ordinary Residence. She made an Attempt in the Year 1408 to recover the Island of *Gotland* without paying any of the Money lent thereupon by the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*; but it failed and in order to get Possession of this Island she was forced to pay 10,000 Nobles.

ERIC takes the
Government
into his own
Hands.

Upon the Death of *Margaret* in the Year 1412 *Eric*, who had two Years before married *Phillippa* Daughter of *Henry IV.* of *England*, took the Management of Affairs into his own Hands. Being soon after engaged in a War with the Dukes of *Holstein* and *Mecklenburg* and the *Hans Towns* concerning the Dutchy of *Sleswick*, he in Order to defray the Expence thereof notwithstanding it was an Affair in which *Denmark* alone was interested laid heavy Taxes upon the *Swedes*: And their Trade with the *Hans Towns* was at the same Time greatly interrupted. The Discontent, which the sending of the
Swedish

Swedish Records to Denmark and other Proceedings contrary to the Articles of the Union had occasioned, being hereby greatly encreased the Dalecarlians headed by a Nobleman named Engelbrecht Engelbrechtson took up Arms.

As the Dalecarlians were joined by the North-Hallan-Rebellion in ders under Eric Puck they bore down all Opposition; and DALECAR- after massacring all Foreigners and pulling down their LIA. Houses, for being irritated to the last Degree their Rage knew no Bounds, they obliged the Senate of Sweden assembled at Wadstena to renounce their Oaths of Allegiance to Eric. A Peace was hereupon clapped up with the Powers he was at War with by Eric and he went in Person to Stockholm: But finding himself unable to cope with Engelbrecht, to whom Numbers flock- ed in daily, he concluded a Truce for twelve Months, and having left a Garrison of 600 Men in the Castle of this City retired to Denmark. Negotiations were now entered into for compromising this Affair, and these were in a fair Way of succeeding had not the King given evident Marks of Insincerity: Upon which in a Meeting of the Nobility and Deputies from every Town at Arboga it was resolved to desist from Trea- ties with him, and Charles Canutson Grand Mar- shal was declared Governour and General of the King- dom.

Engelbrecht, who looked upon himself to be injured CHARLES by the Preference of Charles to him, being shortly after CANUTSON assassinated his intimate Friend Eric Puck resolved is made Govern- to revenge his Death. The Troops of Eric Puck de- nour of the- feated those of Charles; but being prevailed upon for the Kingdom. sake of putting an End to all Differences to give Charles a Meeting he was seized, and contrary to the safe Conduct promised he was beheaded. As many of the principal Nobility soon began to dislike the Proceed- ings of Charles and to grow jealous of his Power, they ordered Matters so as to have a general Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms held at Calmar. The King's Commissary met them: But as he refused to comply with their Demands nothing was agreed upon.

ERIC is de-
posed by the
DANES.

Not long after the *Danes*, who as well as the *Swedes* were disgusted with *Eric*, taking the Advantage of his Absence, for he spent most of his Time in the Island of *Gothland*, invited *Christopher* Duke of *Bavaria* the Son of *Eric's* Sister to the *Danish* Throne. Upon his Arrival in the Year 1439 in *Denmark* Ambassadors were sent to inform the *Swedish* Senate thereof, and to exhort them as the only Means to preserve the Peace and Union of the North to acknowledge him for their King. *Charles* and his Friends were hereat greatly surpris'd; but finding the Majority were for acknowledging *Christopher* they also came into it and he was crowned at *Upsal*.

CHRISTOPHER, 1439.

This Solemnity being over *Christopher* returned into *Denmark* and four Years after married *Dorothy* of *Brandenburg*. As the Island of *Gothland* remained still in the Hands of *Eric* *Christopher* made great Preparations for reducing it, but he soon after to the Surprize of every Body clapped up a Peace with *Eric* and left him in Possession of this Island. *Christopher* died in the Year 1448.

Assembly at
STOCKHOLM.

The States of *Sweden* which assembled at *Stockholm* being divided some were for deferring the Election of a new King untill an Assembly of the States of the three Kingdoms could pursuant to the Articles of the Union be held: But others were for having a King of their own without any Regard to the Union. The Disputes on this Subject ran very high and continued many Days: But the Party of *Charles* at length prevailed and he was himself chosen King.

CHARLES I.

Immediately upon his Accession he besieged *Eric* in the Castle of *Wisbi*; and had not his Generals suffered themselves to be amused by a Suspension of Arms *Eric* must have fallen into his Hands. As this gave *Christian*, whom the *Danes* had chosen for their King, Time to send a Fleet to the Assistance of *Eric* he was conveyed into *Pomerania*; where he ended his Days without making any further Attempt to regain his lost Dominions.

Death of
ERIC.

War with the
DANES.

Charles being afterwards acknowledged for King by the Majority of the *Norwegian* Lords a War was commenced against him by *Denmark*. In the Beginning thereof the Troops of *Charles* were successful: But after the Death of *Thord Bende* his General who was barbarously murdered

dered it was otherwise. Being moreover deserted by the Archbishop of *Upsal* and many other *Swedish* Lords *Charles* after having been shut up and reduced to the greatest Extremity in *Stockholm* retired to *Dantzick*. Having thus in the tenth Year of his Reign quitted the Kingdom *Christian* of *Denmark* was invited into *Sweden* and crowned in the Year 1458.

The Government of *Christian* at first gave general CHRISTIAN I. Satisfaction; but his loading the People with Taxes and 1458. putting many Lords to the most cruel Deaths upon a Suspicion of their corresponding with *Charles* rendered him quite odious. Having moreover sent the Archbishop of *Upsal* Prisoner into *Denmark* the People headed by *Catil* Bishop of *Lincoping* took up Arms; and forced him to quit the Kingdom. *Christian* reentered *Sweden*; but his Troops being defeated by those of the Bishop he was a second Time obliged to retire and went into *Denmark*.

Upon the Arrival of *Charles*, whom the Bishop had CHARLES re- called to his Assistance, *Stockholm* in which *Christian* 1464. *stored*, had left a Garrison surrendered; and he was reinstated in the Throne. The Joy of *Charles* on this Account was however very short-lived: For a Difference arising betwixt him and *Catil*, who wanted to have the *Arch-bishop* discharged from his Confinement in *Denmark*, the latter made his Peace with *Christian*. The Archbishop who was hereupon set at Liberty being met upon the Frontiers of *Sweden* by *Catil* they united in levying Forces against *Charles*; and having defeated him in a Battle fought upon the Ice near *Stockholm* forced him Battle of to renounce all Pretensions to the Crown. The STOCKHOLM. Archbishop became afterwards with very little Difficulty Master of all the strong Fortresses in the Kingdom: But a Party being formed by *Nils Sture* and *Eric Alex-* son things were so managed as to have the latter who had married *Charles's* Daughter declared in the Year ERIC ALEX- 1466 Regent; and the Archbishop was obliged to SON is made abandon *Stockholm* and several other Places. Both Parties Regent. did for some Time after commit great Ravages; but that of the Archbishop, who thereupon died with Grief, being in the End overpowered the People in Order to put an End to their Miseries once more restored *Charles* to the Throne.

CHARLES is
once more re-
stored to the
Throne.

As *Eric Nilson* however together with *Eric Carelson* and some other Chiefs of the Archbishop's Faction continued in Arms, they surpris'd the Army of *Charles* in the Year 1468 and forced him to retire into *Dalia*. He was followed by *Eric Carelson*; but the latter being notwithstanding his Forces were superior defeated he fled into *Denmark*. In the Year 1470 *Charles* returned to *Stockholm*; and having a little before his Death recommended his Sister's Son *Steen Sture* for Regent died there in the same Year.

STEEN STURE
made Regent,
1471.

A strong Party for restoring *Christian* being now formed *Sweden* was for the Space of a whole Year in the utmost Confusion and without any Head; but the Party of *Sture* at length prevailed and he was declared Regent. *Sture* having gained a compleat Victory over *Christian* near *Stockholm* the latter was glad to retire by Sea to *Denmark*; and although Factions were several Times formed for restoring him to the Throne he never after dared to come to an open Rupture with *Sture*. The Administration of *Sture* was for many Years happy and prosperous: But the States of *Sweden* having after the Death of *Christian* acknowledged upon certain Conditions his Son *John* the Kingdom was again expos'd to infinite Calamities. *Sture* from Time to Time for the Space of fourteen Years found some Pretence to put off the Resignation of his Power: But being at last defeated by *John* near *Stockholm* he in the Year 1497 consented to do it and *John* was crowned.

JOHN I. 1497. Under the Pretence that the Revenues of the Crown had been diminished this Prince seized some Fiefs which *Steen Sture* and others were possessed of; and great Violences were committed by his Governors in their respective Provinces. Being not long after shamefully repuls'd by the *Ditmarsians* the People, who wish'd for such an Opportunity to revenge his repeated Infractions of the Conditions agreed to in the most solemn Manner at his Coronation, met at *Wadstena*; and having openly renounced their Allegiance to *John* again put the Reins of Government into the Hands of *Steen Sture*.

J. bn.

John, who at hearing this News was quite Thun-STEENSTURE derstruck, made the best of his Way having first put again made a strong Garrison into *Stockholm* for *Denmark*. This Regent. City wherein he left the Queen and several other Cities soon submitted to *Sture*; and although great Progress was made afterwards by *Christian* his Son in *Gothland* *John* was glad for the sake of having the Queen set at Liberty to accommodate Matters with *Sture*. In the Year 1503 *Steen Sture* died suddenly as he was upon his Return from Escorting the Queen to *John*. His Death being for some Time concealed it was suspected to have been by Poison given him as it was supposed by a Woman named *Mareta*, who was upon the Point of marrying *Suante Sture*, in order to make Way for his Accession to the Regency.

It became now a Question in the Dyet whether *John* SUANTE should be restored or the Administration of Affairs be STURE made lodged in the Hands of *Suante Sture*; but the latter Regent, 1503. being resolved upon *Sture* in the Year 1504 took it upon himself. War with *Denmark* being hereupon re-War with kindled *John*, who had taken Care to engage the Em-DENMARK peror, the Pope and *Russia* on his Side, at first annoyed the rekindled. *Suedes* greatly: By the Prudence however and Courage of *Sture* their Affairs took afterwards a much better Turn. Having brought about a Peace with *Russia* and engaged the *Lubeckers* in his Interest *Sture* retook *Calmar* and *Bornholm*; and if Death had not put a Stop thereto in the eighth Year of his Regency he would in all Probability have made Conquests upon the *Danes*.

On the Death of *Suante Sture* the younger Part of STEENSTURE the Senate proposed *Steen Sture* Son of *Steen Sture* as a the younger proper Person to succeed to the Regency. The Bishops made Regent, and ancient Lords objected thereto and recommended 1511. *Gustavus Trolle* a Man of Sense, full of Years, and of great Experience; but after frequent Debates the former for whom out of Regard to his Father's Memory the People had a vast Esteem was chosen. Upon the Death of *John* in the Year 1513 the States of *Norway* and *Denmark* proclaimed *Christian* his Son, and Ambassadors were sent to prevail upon the *Suedes* to take him for their King also: Which being refused, for they remembered his Cruelties when he commanded in *Gothland*, he

resolved after waiting four Years in vain to attempt the Conquest of Sweden.

GUSTAVUS
TROLLE,
fidis with
CHRISTIAN.

Having engaged Pope *Leo X.* and the new Archbishop *Gustavus Trolle* in his Interest *Christian* persuaded the *Russians* to invade *Finland*. The Regent being timely informed of the Archbishop's Treachery offered him the Oaths of Allegiance: And upon his refusing to take them besieged him in his Castle of *Stecka*. *Christian* who came to his Assistance seized some Vessels which belonged to *Sture*: But being unable to raise the Siege the Archbishop was forced to surrender and was deprived of his See. A Bull of Excommunication was hereupon obtained from the Pope against *Sture*; and a fine of 100,000 Ducats was set upon the *Swedes*. *Sture* regardless thereof advanced to meet *Christian* and gave him Battle in *Gothland*: But being mortally wounded in the Action his Army retired and dispersed. The Archbishop immediately reassumed his Function; and having in Concert with some other Lords proclaimed *Christian* he was after passing an Act of Oblivion crowned in the Year 1520 at *Upsal*.

Death of
STURE.

CHRISTIAN
II. 1520.

Christian at first carried it handsomely to the People: But Satisfaction for the Affront done to the Holy See in the Outrage committed against the Archbishop was soon demanded; and in order to give some Colour for the cruel Proceedings which followed it was given out that a Design had been formed of blowing up the King in his Castle with Gun-powder.

He is very
cruel.

Fourscore and fourteen Persons of Consequence were on this Account beheaded and all their Servants were hanged. The Body of *Steen Sture* was dug up; and after being exposed with the Bodies of the executed Persons quartered. His Mother and Widow did indeed buy off the Sentence pronounced against them: But it cost them their whole Fortunes and they were nevertheless kept with divers other Ladies in Prison.

An Insurrec-
tion headed by
GUSTAVUS
ERICSON.

While *Christian* was wholly taken up in these and other monstrous Acts of Cruelty *Gustavus Ericson*, whose Father had been beheaded by the Tyrant's Order and whose Mother was amongst the confined Ladies, prevailed upon the *Dalecarlians* to take up Arms. Their Example being followed by other Provinces he was declared

declared Protector of the Kingdom: And the Hatred to the King so spread itself through all Ranks of People that only the Archbishop and a few others continued in his Interest. For the sake of revenging himself upon *Gustavus Christian* sent his Mother and both his Sisters from *Stockholm* to *Copenhagen* where they all perished in Prison: And he ordered that no Quarter should be given to any of the *Swedish* Nobility. As the *Swedes* were equally cruel to the *Danes* it is easy to conceive that this wretched Kingdom became a Scene of perfect Butchery. While *Gustavus* was in the Year 1523 in Conjunction with the *Lubeckers* before *Stockholm* News came of the Revolt of the *Futlanders*; which so discouraged *Christian's* Party that they every where fled before the Troops of *Gustavus* and *Stockholm* soon fell into his Hands.

Christian, who was moreover grown detestable to the CHRISTIAN *Danes*, being obliged to retire into the *Netherlands* they flies into the elected in his room *Frederick* his Uncle, and would have NETHER-persuaded the *Swedes* to acknowledge him for their King: LANDS. But as the Union had by dear bought Experience been found so hurtful to *Sweden* they refused to do this and *Gustavus* was raised to the Throne.

This Prince finding the Royal Treasury quite exhaust-GUSTAVUS ed, and being largely indebted to the *Lubeckers* for the I. 1523. Assistance they had given him, laid a Tax upon the Clergy and seized some of the superfluous Ornaments of the Churches. Complaint was hereupon made by *Brask* Bishop of *Lincoping* to the Pope's Legate; *Peter* Bishop of *Westeras* endeavoured to stir up an Insurrection in *Dalecarlia*; and the Clergy seemed every where resolved to assert at all Events their Privilege of being exempt from Taxes.

About the same Time the Doctrine of *Luther*, at The Doctrine first introduced by some *German* Soldiers and some of LUTHER Natives of *Sweden* who had studied at *Wittenberg*, be-reads in gan to spread itself in the Kingdom: And *Olaus Peter* DEN. who had been a Pupil to *Luther* himself defended it in the Publick Schools. The King who well knew in what manner some *German* Princes had appropriated to themselves the Revenues of the Church was hereat greatly pleased: Yet he resolved to act with Caution until

until he could see what the Bishops would do. During these Transactions the Pope sent a Legate on Purpose to stop the Progress of the *Protestant* Religion: But as *Olaus* defended the *Protestant* Cause well this did not hinder the King from making him Minister of the *Great Church* in *Stockholm*. Other vacant Benefices were disposed of to those who had been educated at *Wittenberg*; and the King plainly told Bishop *Brask* that he could not refuse his Protection to the *Lutherans* until they were convicted of some Heresy or Immorality.

Quarrel with
DENMARK,
concerning
GOTHLAND.

As *Soren Norby*, who had all along adhered to the Interest of *Christian*, still kept Possession of the Island of *Gothland*, and from thence greatly annoyed the Merchant Ships of *Sweden*, *Gustavus* sent *Barnard Van Melen* to reduce this Island. *Norby* knowing himself unable to withstand the Forces of *Sweden* immediately put himself under the Protection of *Denmark*; and hence arose a Quarrel betwixt the two Crowns.

OLAUS disputes several
Times with
PETER
GALLE.

The King being informed that *Olaus*, who had a little before married publicly, was employed in translating the *New Testament* into *Swedish* he gave Orders to the Archbishop to have the same done by some *Catholic*. A Dispute being likewise ordered to be publicly held betwixt Dr. *Peter Galle* and *Olaus* upon the controverted Points the latter had greatly the Advantage, and his Translation of the *New Testament* was allowed to be much the best. As the Clergy still refused to comply with the King's Demand this Matter was moreover ordered to be canvassed by these two Disputants; and it was in a Dispute publicly held proved from holy Scripture that the Clergy had no Divine Right to the Privilege they claimed of being exempt from all Taxes. A Diet being shortly after called at *Wesleras* it was resolved that the Clergy were liable to Taxes; and to get rid of the Archbishop who grew very refractory he was sent Ambassador into *Poland*.

The Clergy set
up a Pretender
to the Throne,
1527.

In order to remove all Suspicion of his being partial a second Dispute was ordered by *Gustavus* to be held upon the controverted Points: But Bishop *Brask* and the rest of the Clergy opposed this although it was the most proper Way to come at Truth and set up a Pretender to the Throne. This Person, who was only a Peasant's Son,

Son, having given it out that he was the Son of *Steen Sture* a considerable Party was formed in the Year 1527 in *Dalecarlia*; and being supported by the King of *Denmark* and the *Swedish* Clergy he threatned Fire and Sword to all the *Lutherans*, and particularly to the City of *Stockholm* whose Inhabitants were most zealous for the Reformation.

As the Pope was about the same Time besieged by *GUSTAVUS Charlequint* in the Castle of *St. Angelo* *Gustavus* think-^{seizes some}ing it a convenient Time to declare himself convened ^{Church Reven-}a Diet at *Westeras*. After representing to this Diet that ^{ues.}the Clamour of the Clergy against him was only because he would not suffer them to oppress the Laity, he proposed the annexing of some Revenues of the Church to the Crown, and that all Lands which had been given to the Church since the Year 1454 should be restored to the lawful Heirs of the Donors. To bring the common People the more easily into his Views *Gustavus* promised to apply these Revenues to the easing them of Taxes; and for the sake of cajoling the Senators he made a publick Entertainment, and ordered that they should take Place of the Bishops who were before used to sit next the King. Being hereat greatly provoked the Clergy came to a Resolution of not giving up any of their Revenues, and Bishop *Brask* plainly told the King in an Assembly of the States, "That it was not in the Power of the Clergy to give up any Part of their Revenues or to admit of any Change in Religion without the Pope's Consent."

This Speech being applauded by all the Clergy and ^{He offers to}some Temporal Lords the King, who rose from his Seat ^{resign the}in a great Passion, said that he was ready if the States ^{Crown.}would reimburse him the Expence he had been at for the Defence of the Kingdom to resign the Crown; and to shew that he was in earnest he retired with some of his Officers into the Castle. As the States hereat surprized found that the City of *Stockholm* adhered to *Gustavus*, and that *Galle* had been worsted in a second Dispute with *Olaus*, they thought proper to ask his Pardon and begged of him not to quit the Throne. He at length complied with their Request: And after obliging several Bishops to surrender their Castles into his Hands they were

were all forced to sign an Act for the Regulation of Ecclesiastical Affairs.

His Reign The Clergy endeavoured after this to disturb his
much disturbed Reign; but as the *Dalecarlians* frightened into Submission
by the Intrigues had sent away their Leader the pretended *Sture*, and
of Churchmen. *Sigismund* of Poland had refused the Crown of Sweden
which the Malecontents offered to him, all their Efforts
signified nothing; and Bishop *Brask* despairing of the Suc-
cess of the Catholick Cause under the Pretence of going
a Journey to *Dantzick* retired.

The Protestant After being solemnly crowned at *Upsal* in the Year
Religion esta 1528 *Gustavus* called a general Assembly of the Clergy
blished. at *Orrebro*. In this wherein the King's Chancellor pre-
sided the Protestant Religion was established and many
of the inferior Clergy embraced it; but by the Intrigues
of the Bishops and some Lords Insurrections were stirred
up in divers Provinces.

The Insurrec- The Design of these was to dethrone *Gustavus*, who
tions hereupon was accused of Heresy and other Crimes, and to make
formed are *Magnus Brynteson* King: But by the Prudence of *Gusta-*
happily quelled. *vus* they were all happily quelled. *Magnus* Bishop of
Skara and *Thuro Johanson* Grand Marshal, who were
two of the Ringleaders, fled into *Denmark*. Two others
Magnus Brynteson and *Nils Oluffson* were condemned for
High-Treason and executed; and *Thuro Ericson* who re-
ceived Sentence of Death with these two bought it off for
a large Sum of Money. Another Insurrection was formed
in *Dalecarlia* on Account of the taking of some Bells
from the Churches; but as *Gustavus* marched thither at
the Head of a large Army and ordered his Soldiers to
fire amongst the Mutineers, they fell upon their Knees
and promised to be more obedient for the future.

He repulses An End being pretty well put to these domestick
CHRISTIAN Troubles *Gustavus* in the Year 1532 married *Catherine*
from NOR- Daughter of *Magnus* Duke of *Saxe Lawenburg*. He
WAY. soon after sent an Army under *Lars Sigeson* against *Christi-*
an King of *Denmark* who had landed in *Norway*. This
General being joined by some *Danish* Troops obliged
Christian, who had been greatly concerned in exciting
the Insurrections against *Gustavus*, to give over the Siege
of *Babus*. *Christian* afterwards surrendered himself to
the

the Danes; and being committed to Prison by *Frederick* his Rival he spent the remainder of his Days therein.

Another Storm soon threatened Sweden from the Side *War with the* of *Lubeck*; whose Inhabitants because they were re-LUBECKERS-
fused the exclusive right of trading to the northern Parts of the Kingdom joined with many Refugees of the Party of *Christian*. Being headed by *John* Count of *Hoya* Brother-in-Law of *Gustavus* they proposed no less than the conquering of the three northern Kingdoms; and by promising to make this City a Hans Town they prevailed upon some Burghers at *Stockholm* to enter into a Conspiracy against *Gustavus*. The Divisions which arose in *Denmark* upon the Death of *Frederick* gave the *Lubeckers* some Advantage against the Danes: But by the Succours of Ships and Money sent by *Gustavus* to *Christian III.* of *Denmark* the Fleet of *Lubeck* was defeated and quite ruined. Being jealous that the Emperor *Charles V.* intended to put *Frederick* Count *Palatine* Son-in-Law of *Christian II.* into Possession of the northern Kingdoms *Gustavus* in the Year 1542 entered into a Defensive Alliance with *France*.

In a Diet held at *Westeras* in the Year 1544 the *The Catholic* Crown was declared hereditary; and after appointing *Religion is* *Eric Gustavus* his eldest Son then but eleven Years of *prohibited,* Age to succeed *Gustavus* the States took a solemn Oath ¹⁵⁴⁴ to maintain the Protestant Religion, and the Exercise of the Catholic Religion was entirely prohibited.

The Remainder of this Reign was undisturbed except *The RUSSIANS* by an Irruption of the *Russians* into *Finland*. A Treaty *invade LIVO-* with *Russia* being concluded *Gustavus* in the Year 1559 ^{NIA.} made a Will; by which some Parts of his Dominions were given to *John*, *Magnus* and *Charles* his younger Sons, on Condition however that these were to be held as Fiefs of the Crown. He died in the Year 1559 while his eldest Son was preparing for a Voyage into *England* with a Design to marry *Elizabeth* Queen thereof.

Eric who succeeded being jealous of his Brothers *ERIC VIII.* put off his intended Voyage; and in order to support ^{1559.} himself obliged them although much against their Will to subscribe to certain Articles which were agreed upon in a Diet held at *Arboga*. In the Beginning of this Reign

Reign the Titles of *Count* and *Baron* were introduced into *Sweden* and made hereditary.

Part of *LIVONIA* submitted to him.

Troubles arising in *Livonia* Part of the People submitted to *Denmark*; Part to the King of *Poland*: And others who bordered upon *Sweden* begged the Protection of *Eric*. Hereupon *Eric* sent an Army under *Nicholas Horn* into this Province and the Town of *Revel* opened its Gates to the *Swedes*: But as the *Poles* insisted upon the Restitution thereof it created ill Blood betwixt the two Nations.

He gives over all Thoughts of going into ENGLAND to marry ELIZABETH.

Pursuant to the Resolution he had taken of marrying *Elizabeth Eric* embarked for *England*: But meeting with a violent Tempest he was forced to put back; and being of a superstitious Turn he looked upon this as an ill Omen and gave over all Thoughts of attempting this Voyage again. He afterwards made one Offer of Marriage to *Mary Queen of Scots*, another to a Princess of *Lorraine*, and another to *Katherine* Daughter of the Landgrave of *Hesse*: But all these came to nothing.

He makes his Brother JOHN Prisoner.

John his Brother having in the mean Time married without consulting him to *Katherine of Poland Eric* besieged *John* in his Castle of *Abo*: And having made him Prisoner he was sentenced to die. The Sentence was indeed changed to perpetual Imprisonment: But this did not screen *Eric* from the Resentment of the *Polish* Court; and the *Danes* and *Lubeckers* were prevailed upon to join in revenging this Injustice done to *John*. *Eric* defended himself with such Bravery that the Loss was equal on both Sides: But his Subjects took the Opportunity of his being thus attacked on all Sides to discover their Dissatisfaction at his Conduct.

The imprudent Conduct of ERIC.

After abandoning himself for some Time to a Seraglio of Mistresses *Eric* grew fond of one of very low Birth named *Katherine*; and thereby quite lost the Esteem of the Nobility. Being moreover governed entirely by a Favourite named *Joran Pearson* and by *Dennis Beurri* who had been formerly his Tutor, these two stirred up in him a Jealousy of the House of *Sture* which proved fatal to this House. False Witnesses being suborned against them *Suante Sture* with *Eric* his Son and many of his Relations were seized and suffered most

Sufferings of the House of STURE.

most cruel Deaths : And *Eric* stabbed *Nils Sture* with his own Hands. He afterwards repented of these cruel Actions and caused *Beurré* who had put him upon them to be slain by his own Guards. Fearing however the ill Consequences, for the People were hereat exasperated to the highest Degree, he upon certain Conditions set his Brother *John* at Liberty ; and in order to appease the People threw *Joran Peerfon* on whom he laid all the Blame into Prison. Being afterwards successful against the *Danes* who came to the Assistance of his Subjects he not only released *Peerfon*, but declared that he was quite innocent of all that was laid to his Charge and that the *Stures* were justly punished.

By the Advice of *Peerfon* *Eric* also proposed to his Brothers the giving up of what their Father had left them in Exchange for some Territories in *Livonia* : And because they would not consent thereto he resolved to have them assassinated at the Celebration of his Nuptials with his Mistress *Katherine*. Being advertised of this cruel Design they instead of going to the Wedding entered into a Conspiracy with the Relations of the *Stures* for dethroning him : And in order to do it more effectually a Truce was by the Interposition of the King of *Poland*, who was privy to the Design, concluded with *Denmark*.

Having assembled all the Forces they could gain ed over some *German* Troops in the Pay of *Eric* the Conspirators seized the Castles of *Steckburg*, *Leckoo* and *Wadstena* ; in the last of which they found a considerable Treasure. A Manifesto was now published containing their Reasons for taking up Arms ; and marching directly to *Stockholm* they besieged this City on the Side of *Brunkenberg*. *Eric* defended himself for some Time with great Vigour and made frequent Sallies on the Besiegers ; but at length the Senate who had all along been secretly in the Interest of his Brothers opened the Gates whilst *Eric* was at Church, and he had much ado to save himself by flying into the Castle. Being forced to surrender he was committed to Prison, where he was cruelly treated by the Relations of the *Stures* who had the Charge of him.

John,

JOHN II.
1568.

Treaty with
DENMARK.

He cedes some
Provinces to
his Brother
CHARLES.

War with
MUSCOVY.

John, who was upon his Brother's Deposition in the Year 1566 proclaimed King, after causing some of his personal Enemies and others that had been concerned in the Massacre of the *Stures* to be executed sent Ambassadors to the King of *Denmark* at *Koschild* with Instructions to conclude a Peace; or if that could not be done a Prolongation of the Truce. The Terms agreed upon being very disadvantageous to *Sweden* the Treaty made by these Ambassadors, who were accused of having exceeded their Orders, was declared void in an Assembly of the States; and other Ambassadors were sent to get if possible better Terms.

As *John* had always promised that his Brother *Charles*, who had had a great Share in bringing about this Revolution, should share with him in the Government, he ceded to him pursuant to the Tenour of their Father's Will the Provinces of *Sundermania*, *Nericia* and *Wermeland*.

Being informed that the Czar of *Russia* was advancing with Design to put *Magnus Duke of Holstein* into Possession of *Livonia*, *John* for the Sake of preventing this ratified the disadvantageous Peace made with *Denmark*. The Operations of the *Russians* were retarded by the *Tartars*, who at the Instigation of the Court of *Warsaw* invaded *Russia* and after setting Fire to *Moscow* put 30,000 Men to the Sword: But a Treaty being concluded betwixt the *Russians* and the *Poles* the former entered *Livonia* with an Army of 80,000 Men. They for some Time carried every thing before them and committed great Ravages: But a Body of 16,000 of them being defeated by about 1600 *Swedes* the Czar astonished at this Blow, for not less than 7000 of the *Russians* were left upon the Field, proposed to enter into Negotiations for a Peace at *Newgarte*. This Place being objected to by *John* and the War being continued the *Swedes* were repulsed from before *Wesenberg*, and again at the Siege of *Tolzburg*: And another Accident which was more fatal to their Affairs happened in their own Camp. A Quarrel arising betwixt the *German Cavalry* and the *Scotch Infantry* it came to Blows, and the latter were so roughly handled that

that not above fourscore out of 1600 escaped being killed on the Spot. The *Russians* having not long after surprized the *Swedes* at a Time when they were drunk in their Camp and cut to Pieces a great Number of them *Truce with* a Truce for ten Years was concluded. It has been *RUSSIA.* thought that *John* might have carried on this War to much greater Advantage, if he had not been more intent about making a Change in Religion than in pushing it.

Having at the Persuasion of the Queen resolved not-*JOHN attempt* withstanding that he was himself educated in the Pro-*to reestablish* testant to reestablish the Catholick Religion, *John* encour-*the Catholick* aged some Jesuits to come in Disguise into the King-*Religi.n.* dom, that they might assist his Secretary *Peter Tretenius* to whom the Management of this Affair was committed. An Assembly of the Bishops and Clergy being convened by this Minister, he in Imitation of what had been attempted in *Germany* proposed the compromising of all religious Differences; and a new Liturgy which ordained the Celebration of Mass, the Consecration of Bishops and the Administration of the Sacraments, agreeably to the Manner of the Church of *Rome* was composed. This Liturgy, called *the Liturgy of the Church of Sweden conformable to the Catholick and Orthodox Church*, being signed by the new Archbishop, some Bishops and a few of the inferior Clergy, the *Catholick* Doctrines began to be publicly preached; and great Pains were used to prevail upon *Charles* to admit these in his Dominions.

His Answer was that according to their Father's Will *CHARLES reas* it was neither in his nor in the King's Power to make *fuses to admit* any Alteration in Religion. The Clergy of *Stockholm* *this into his* were also solicited to receive the new Liturgy; but they *Dominions.* plainly told *John* that it was calculated to introduce Popery, and in order to justify their Refusal appealed to a general Assembly of the Clergy. One was called in the Year 1577: But the Majority of the Clergy who too! too! oft attend to the Dictates of Interest came into the King's Views. The Liturgy was moreover confirmed by the temporal Estates of the Kingdom; and it was declared that all who should for the Time to come oppose the same should be adjudged guilty of High Treason.

The Protestants are hardly used. Many of the Clergy who did oppose this Liturgy were imprisoned: Yet the honest Part of them were not deterred from exposing the Artifices of their Adversaries; and their Cause which from a Conscioufness of its Justice they defended with great Boldness was espoused by the Protestant Universities abroad. As several Stratagems to set *Eric* at Liberty had during his Confinement of nine Years been tried, and *John* could not tell what turn these intestine Divisions which he knew to be secretly encouraged by his Brother *Charles* might take, he in order to make sure of *Eric* caused him to be poisoned by his Secretary. *John* afterwards founded a new University at *Stockholm* whose Professors were all to be Catholics; and an Ambassador being sent to the Pope he in Return sent a Nuncio into *Sweden*, and the Protestants were every where rigorously used.

ERIC is poisoned.

War with RUSSIA.

While these Things were doing the War with *Russia* had been renewed: But no considerable Advantage was gained until *Stephen* of *Poland* did attack the *Russians* on the Side of *Poland*. The Diversion hereby made enabled the *Swedens* under their General *Pontus de la Gard'e* to take *Leckholm*, *Poden* and *Narva*, at which last Place 7000 *Russians* were slain, and some other Places of Consequence: But a Peace being concluded in the Year 1582 by the *Poles* who began to grow jealous of the Progress of the *Swedens*, the latter did likewise find it necessary to make a Truce with the *Russians*.

The two Brothers are reconciled.

Not long after the Difference which had for some Time subsisted betwixt the two Brothers was made up by the Interposition of some Senators; the new Liturgy was however still rejected in the Dominions of *Charles* by the Clergy to whom this Matter was referred.

Fresh Jealousies arise.

On the Death of *Stephen* of *Poland* in the Year 1587, *Ann* his Wife prevailed upon the Nobility of *Poland* to choose *Sigismund* her Nephew the Son of *John* in his Stead: The Conditions however of his accepting of this Crown were quite disagreeable to the *Swedish* Nation, and he afterwards repented thereof. After this *John* again tried to introduce the new Liturgy into the Dominions of his Brother: But finding that the Clergy who relicked on the Protection of their Prince would never consent

sent thereto he gave over all Thoughts of it. The Marriage of *Charles* in the Year 1592 with *Cristina* Daughter of *Adolph* Count of *Holstein* revived *John's* Jealousy of him: But the Death of *John* a few Months after put an End thereto.

The Death of *John* was concealed until the Arrival of *Sigismund*, rival of *Charles* at *Stockholm*. He immediately dispatched an Express to *Sigismund* his Nephew in *Poland*; and in the mean Time took upon himself with the Consent of the Senate the Administration of Affairs. Being confirmed in the Regency by *Sigismund* he caused an Assembly of the Clergy at which those of *Finland* refused to be present to be held at *Upsal*. It being herein resolved to restore the Confession of *Lugsburg* and lay aside the new Liturgy the States of the Kingdom confirmed this Resolution; and they declared by another Resolution that no Appeal should be carried to the King in *Poland*. It was moreover agreed that *Sigismund* should before his Coronation confirm both these Resolutions: But instead of doing this he insisted that being an hereditary Prince no Persons had a Right to prescribe Terms to him; and he declared moreover that the Resolutions which had been come to without his Knowledge were *ipso facto* void.

This Conduct of *Sigismund* displeased the People, and their Fears for the Protestant Religion increased when upon his coming into *Sweden* he demanded a Church in every Town for the Exercise of the Catholic, and declared that the Crown should be set upon his Head by the Pope's Nuncio who accompanied him from *Poland*. Deputies were hereupon sent to *Charles* to beg his Interposition: And he did all he could to prevail upon *Sigismund* to confirm the Resolutions of the States. Finding him deaf to all he urged on this Occasion he entered into a League with the States for the Defence of the Protestant Religion; and Troops were assembled in the Neighbourhood of *Upsal*. Hereupon *Sigismund*, who did not think it proper to come just then to Extremities, complied with most of the Demands of the States and was crowned by the Bishop of *Strengness*: But being returned to *Stockholm* he resolved to break

through the Engagements he had entered into; and in order to intimidate the States sent for Troops out of *Poland*. When he found that the States whom *Charles* assisted would not be frightened, he hoping the confused State Things were in would make it easy for him to force them into his Terms by the Advice of some *Poles* quitted the Kingdom.

Vigorous Resolutions come to by the States.

Being apprized of his embarking for *Dantzick* the States in Conjunction with *Charles* took the Government out of the Hands of the Person he had left Regent who was a Papist; and forbid the Exercise of the Catholick Religion. Having in a Diet soon after held at *Sudercoping* justified their Conduct in a Letter to *Sigismund* the States established the Confession of *Augsburg*, and declared all Papists incapable of Offices. They moreover passed several Acts for securing the Liberties of the People: And having declared Prince *Charles* Regent vested the whole Power during the King's Absence in him and the Senate. The Proceedings of this Diet were for the Satisfaction of the World afterwards published in *Latin*, *Swedish* and *German*.

SIGISMUND endeavours to sow Discord betwixt his Uncle and the Senate.

Hereupon *Sigismund* sent some Persons to persuade *Charles* to alter his Conduct. As nothing could be done with him *Sigismund* in order to cajole the States wrote to them that he was willing to leave every thing to the Management of the Senate, provided *Charles* was excluded therefrom. This last Artifice had such an Effect that some Senators, who wanted to curry Favour with the King or were disgusted with *Charles*, did not repair to the Diet held at *Arboga*: Nevertheless all that had been agreed upon in the Diet of *Sudercoping* was confirmed therein, all Allegiance to *Sigismund* was renounced and *Charles* was declared sole Regent.

CHARLES repulses Sigismund's Forces.

Having now assembled all the Troops he could *Charles* gained great Advantages over *Nicholas Fleming Sigismund's* General: And the Governors appointed by him together with the disaffected Lords every where fled before the Troops of *Charles*. All *Sweden* being soon lost to *Sigismund* he, hoping his Presence might do something, resolved to put himself at the Head of 6000 Men and make the best of his Way thither.

Being

Being thereof informed *Charles* in the Year 1598 assembled the States at *Wadstena*; and having acquainted them with the King's Design it was unanimously resolved to meet him at *Calmar*: But while *Charles* was busy in reducing the *Finlanders* who had declared for *Sigismund* to Obedience the latter landed without any Opposition at *Calmar*. Overtures for accommodating Matters were made whilst he was there: Which having no Effect Recourse was had to Arms.

In the first Engagement near *Strengness* the Army of *Charles* was routed; but he soon after surprized a considerable Body of the King's Troops at *Stangbro* and with very little Loss on his Side cut off above 2000 of them. After this Defeat *Sigismund* pretended to be reconciled to *Charles*; and promised to go to *Stockholm* and leave every thing to be settled by the States. As he instead of keeping his Word returned to *Dantzick* the States assembled at *Stockholm* and once more appointed *Charles* Regent; and their Oath of Allegiance to *Sigismund* was for the second Time renounced. It was also resolved to offer the Crown to his Son *Uladislaus*, provided he would within the Space of one Year come into *Sweden* and be instructed in the Protestant Religion: And it was at the same Time agreed that if he failed in either of these he and his Descendants should be for ever excluded from the Throne.

Charles having in the Year 1600 entered into a strict Alliance with *Russia* he in the following Year called a Diet at *Lincoping*: In which many Lords who had adhered to the King were declared guilty of High Treason and put to Death. It was moreover declared that *Sigismund* had forfeited all his Right to the Crown; and that *Uladislaus* his Son should for want of coming into the Kingdom within the Time prescribed be excluded from the Throne. Being informed that the *Poles* were intent on raising *Demetrius* a Pretender to the Throne of *Russia*, *Charles* seeming to be afraid of the Union of *Russia* and *Poland* against *Sweden* desired to resign the Government; and the Crown was offered to *John* Brother to *Sigismund*. On his Refusal the States in Consideration of his being the only remaining Son of *Gustavus* and of his own great Services did in the Year 1604

Q 3

confer

confer the Crown upon *Charles*; and declared that his Heirs not excepting even Females should succeed thereto.

CHARLES,
1604.

Charles was no sooner in Possession of the Crown than he undertook an Expedition into *Livonia*: But the *Poles* worsted him and had it not been for the Divisions which arose in *Poland* his ill Success there might have had fatal Consequences. He soon after sent Succours to the Assistance of the *Russians* who had raised *Basilus Suski* to the Throne; yet this did not hinder the *Poles* from obliging the *Russians* to deliver *Basilus* into their Hands.

The Progress
of the DANES
is stopped by
the Prince

GUSTAVUS,
1611.

Uladislaus Son of *Sigismund* being hereupon made Czar of *Russia*, the *Danes* took the Opportunity of their being at War with *Russia* and *Poland*, to attack the *Suedes*; and the Affairs of *Sweden* would in all Probability have went on very ill had it not been for the uncommon Bravery and prudent Conduct of *Gustavus Adolphus* Heir Apparent to the Crown. While the *Danes* were in the Year 1611 before *Calmar* he with 1500 Horse surprized their Magazines at *Blekingen*, which Place is now called *Christianstadt*; and took from them the Island of *Oeland* and the Castle of *Bornholm*. In the following Winter *Charles* died at *Nicoping* in the 61st Year of his Age.

GUSTAVUS
II. 1611.

As *Gustavus Adolphus* was a Minor his Father had appointed *Christiana* the Queen, Duke *John* and some Senators to be his Guardians: But it was resolved in the Diet, great Expectations being raised of him from his prudent and brave Conduct, that he should although no more than 18 Years of Age immediately take the Management of Affairs into his own Hands.

Truce with
DENMARK,
1613.

Being unsuccessful in the War with the *Danes* whose Fleet was greatly superior, *Gustavus* for the Sake of carrying on his Designs in *Russia* in the Year 1613 made a Truce with them; and agreed to pay 1,000,000 Crowns for the Restitution of *Calmar*, *Fort-Risbi* and *Elzburg*.

CHARLES
Brother of
GUSTAVUS is
invited to the
Throne of
RUSSIA.

James de la Gardie his General in *Russia* managed so well there that the *Russians* invited *Gustavus* and *Charles* his Brother, to whom they offered the Crown, to come to *Moscow*: But as *Gustavus* had a greater Mind to unite the *Russian* Crown to the *Swedish* than that his Brother should have it, he in his Answer which was some time deferred

deferred only spoke of coming himself. As the *Russians* hereupon grew jealous of his intending to make *Russia* a Province to *Sweden* they raised one from amongst themselves named *Michael Feederowitz* to the Throne; so that before *Charles* did go into *Russia* the Party of *Michael* was grown so much too powerful for him that he was soon forced to retire. In Revenge the *Swedes* fell vigorously upon the *Russians*; and after defeating them in several Engagements took many frontier Places from them. A Treaty of Peace with the *Russians* was concluded under the Mediation of *England* at *Stolbova* STOLBOVA, in the Year 1617; by which *Ke:holm* and the Province of *Ingermania* were ceded to the *Swedes*. 1617.

The Truce which had been concluded with *Poland* being now near expiring *Gustavus* resolved to re- POLAND. commence the War against the *Poles*. That he might in this meet with no Interruption he caused the Remainder of the Sum due to *Christian* of *Denmark* to be paid; and married *Mary Eleanor* Daughter of *John Sigismund* Elector of *Brandenburgh*. After taking *Riga* which was defended for six Months with great Bravery the Truce was renewed for two Years; and during this Proposals of Peace were made: But *Sigismund* although it was quite against the Inclination of the *Poles* persisted in his Resolution of continuing the War. Hereupon *Gustavus* GUSTAVUS marched into *Livonia* and after defeating OVERRUNS LI- 3000 *Lithuanians* commanded by *Stanislaus Sapieha*, VONIA. who attempted to oppose his Passage into this Dutchy, made himself Master of all thereof except *Dunaburg*: Yet being encouraged by the Emperor whom Fortune favoured in *Germany* *Sigismund* would hear nothing of Peace.

Being now resolved to make one grand Push against *He lands at* the *Poles* *Gustavus* landed in the Year 1626 with the PILLAW. Consent of the Elector of *Brandenburgh* at *Pillaw* with 1626. 26,000 Men; which being quite unexpected he easily became Master of *Braunsberg* and *Frawenberg*, and *Elbing* submitted upon his appearing before it. He also before the *Poles* could send any Forces against him took *Marienberg*, *Mewe* and several other Places in *Prussia*. The *Poles* in vain attempted to surprize the former of these Places; nor did they succeed better in

the Siege of *Mewe*: But some Troops raised by *Gustavus* in *Germany* were dispersed by the *Podolians* under *Stanislaus Kanicspolski*.

1617.

He attacks th:
POLES in
their Camp.

Having early in the next Year received a Reinforcement from *Sweden* *Gustavus* laid Siege to *Dantzick*; but being wounded in attacking an Outwork he gave over this Siege for the present. After taking *Mewe* the *Poles* encamped near *Dirshaw* within Sight of the Army of *Gustavus*. As there was a Morale between the two Armies he did not think proper to attack them: But when they retreated he cut off many of their Rear-Guard. A few Days after he fell upon them in their Camp: Being however himself wounded by a Musket Ball in the Beginning of the Action no great Advantage was gained. Towards the End of this Year Negotiations were again entered into; and they were in a fair Way of succeeding if the Emperor had not promised to send a Body of 12,000 Men to the Assistance of *Sigismund*.

1628.

The POLES
are defeated.

In the Beginning of the ensuing Campaign the *Poles* were defeated with the Loss of 3000 Men, 40 Pieces of Cannon and some Standards; yet the Action being very obstinate the Loss was considerable on the Side of *Gustavus*. In order to favour an Attempt upon *Dantzick* he sent eight Ships of War to block up the Harbour; but an Engagement ensuing in which the *Swedish* Admiral was killed these were forced to retire. Having towards the End of this Year conveyed a thousand Foot over the *Vistula* in Boats they surprized *Newburg* where the *Poles* had a large Magazine; and besides other Plunder carried away 600,000 Crowns in Specie.

1629.

Battle of
BRODNITZ.

In the Year 1629 the *Swedish* General *Herman Wrangel* came up with the *Poles* who were before *Brodnitz*; and defeated them with the Loss of 3000 killed on the Spot, 1000 made Prisoners, 50 Pieces of Cannon and all their Baggage. The Courage of the *Poles* was in some Measure revived by the coming up of a Reinforcement of 7000 *Germans*: Yet *Gustavus* although his Army was inferior did not decline a Battle. The two Armies met near *Stum* and a bloody Action ensued, in which the King who exposed his Person

Battle of
SIVM.

100

too much was twice very near being taken Prisoner; but the *Poles* sustained much the greatest Loss. Being afterwards worsted in another Engagement they began to suspect the Fidelity of *Arnheim* the Imperial General, who was a Vassal of the Elector of *Brandenburg*.

A Plague moreover breaking out in their Army, which had already suffered much from Famine, the *Poles* resolved to accommodate Matters with *Sweden*; and a Truce for six Years was concluded under the Mediation of *France*, *Brandenburg* and the *Maritime Powers*. By this Pillaw, *Memel*, *Braunsburg* and *Elbing* together with all he had conquered in *Livonia* were ceded to *Gustavus*; and it was agreed that *Marienburg* should be put into the Hands of the Elector of *Brandenburg*. The Wars with *Russia* and *Poland* being thus ended with great Glory to *Gustavus* and vast Advantage to the *Swedish* Nation he went into *Germany*, and performed such Things there as surprized all *Europe*.

The Protestants had in the Beginning of the Troubles in *Germany* invited *Gustavus* to enter into the League against the Catholics; but while the *Polish* War continued he did not although he wished well to their Cause think proper to do this. After the Defeat of *Christians* of *Denmark* who was proud of being at the Head of this League, which was followed with the Conquest of all *Lower-Saxony* by the Imperialists, *Gustavus* fearing the Consequences of their getting Footing on the *Baltick* Coast was more than ever desirous of a Peace with *Poland*. Before the Conclusion thereof he did send some Succours to the Inhabitants of *Stralsund*, which prevented the Imperialists from taking this important Place; but being now quite at Liberty he represented to the States of *Sweden* the Necessity of acting vigorously in *Germany*. After making great Preparation he sent *Alexander Lesly* in the Year 1630 with a Body of Troops to drive the Imperialists from the Island of *Rugen*, which was happily executed; and landed himself with a considerable Army upon the Island of *Usedom*.

As the Imperialists quitted this Island on his Arrival and also abandoned *Wollin* *Gustavus* caused his Troops to re-imbark and made the best of his Way for *Stetin*. Appearing before this Place the Duke of *Pomerania* admitted

Truce with
POLAND.

GUSTAVUS
resolves to
assist the GER-
MAN Prote-
stants.

He lands in
POMERANIA,
1630.

admitted, his Troops and entered into a defensive Alliance with him. *Gustavus* afterwards took *Stargard*, *Anclam*, *Unkermande* and *Wolgast*; nor did the taking of these Places hinder his sending a Body of Troops under *Dideric* of *Falkenburg*, to assist in reestablishing the Affairs of *Christian William* Administrator of *Magdeburg* whom the Emperor had deposed. Upon the coming up of some Reinforcements commanded by *Gustavus Horn* from *Finland*, *Livonia* and *Prussia*, *Gustavus* set out with a Body of Troops with a Design to penetrate into *Mecklenburg*. After his Departure an Attempt was made by the Imperialists to force the *Swedish* Camp at *Stetin*: But they were repulsed with great Loss; and being about the same Time driven by *Gustavus* from *Grieff-nhagen* and *Gartz* they were forced to abandon all the *Lower Pomerania*.

Some GERMAN Princes enter into an Alliance with him.

Encouraged by this vast Success the Archbishop of *Bremen*, *George Duke* of *Lunenburg* and *William Landgrave* of *Hesse*, entered into an Alliance with *Gustavus*; and the Protestants all over *Germany* began to flatter themselves with the Hopes of being delivered from the Oppression of the Catholics. Towards the End of the same Year the Treaty of Subsidy, whereby *France* engaged to pay *Sweden* 400,000 Crowns per Annum, which had been long upon the Tapis was signed.

1631.

As this Money enabled *Gustavus* to take the Field very early in the next Year he notwithstanding the Severity of the Season made himself Master of *Lokenitz*, *Prentlow*, *Brandenburg*, *Clempenow*, *Crautaw* and *Leitz*. *Demmin* likewise of which the Duke of *Savell* was Governor surrendered in three Days Time; and the Town of *Colberg* after having been blocked up five Months was taken. Finding that his own Generals were by no Means a Match for *Gustavus* the Emperor had given the Command of his Forces to *Tilly* the *Bavarian* General, a Man of great Bravery and great Experience. This General was marching to the Relief of *Demmin*; but hearing in the Way of its having surrendered he attacked *Brandenburg*. *Kniphausen* the Governor defended this Place with great Bravery; but as it was ill fortified and the Garrison small he was forced to give Way to Numbers. Afterwards *Tilly* finding

TILLY appointed to command the Imperialists.

finding the Army of *Gustavus* strongly intrenched went towards *Magdeburg*; hoping thereby to draw him into the open Field. Hereupon *Gustavus* made a forced March to *Frankfort* upon the *Oder*; and after carrying this Place by Storm on the third Day of the Siege detached some Troops to drive the Imperialists from *Lansberg*.

An Assembly being at this Time held by the Protestant Princes at *Leipsick*, for concerting proper Measures to render the Emperor's Edict for restoring Church-Lands ineffectual, *Gustavus* sent Deputies thither to exhort them to Union and to request Supplies of Men and Money. The Elector of *Saxony* put off under divers Pretences the declaring himself as to this Matter: But his real Design was to make himself the Head of the League; and to embrace the present Opportunity of putting the Affairs of the Protestants into such a Condition, that they might be able to preserve the Balance of Power betwixt the Emperor and the King of *Sweden*.

Shortly after *Gustavus* marched towards *Magdeburg* which was hard pressed: But he would not attempt the Relief thereof, until the Elector of *Brandenburg* had in order to secure a Retreat in case of Need put into his Hands *Spandaw* and *Custrin*. Having gained this Point he earnestly solicited the Elector of *Saxony* to join him with his Forces, that he might attempt the raising of the Siege of *Magdeburg*; but the latter trifled so long that *Tilly* took this Place by Storm and it was after being plundered set on Fire; nor did above 400 of the many thousand Inhabitants which were therein escape. Lest the loss of this Place should be imputed to *Gustavus* he made publick the Reasons which prevented his going Time enough to the Relief thereof. After sending Part of his Army to the Assistance of the Duke of *Mecklenburg* *Gustavus* now went and encamped with the Remainder at *Werben* upon the *Elbe*. *Tilly* being informed thereof advanced with the main Body of his Army and offered Battle to *Gustavus*: But as the Design of the latter was only to gain Time, the former who did not think proper to attack him in his Camp was soon forced to retire for Want of Forage to his old Camp at *Wölmerstadt*.

The Imperialists lose
Ground in
MECKLEN-
BURG.

During these Transactions the Imperialists were with the Help of the *Swedish* Auxiliaries driven from every Thing in *Mecklenburg* except *Domitz*, *Wismar* and *Rostock*, and these Places were all closely blocked up. About the same Time the Marquis of *Hamilton* having under his Command 6000 *English* and *Scotch* Troops landed in *Pomerania*; but the Sickness which broke out amongst these Troops carried off so many Men that they did the Allies very little Service.

TILLY penetrates into
SAXONY.

Finding he could not attack *Gustavus* without great Disadvantage *Tilly* decamped, and marching into *Saxony* made himself Master of *Leipsick*. His Army which consisted of at least 40,000 Men being greatly superior to that of the Elector of *Saxony*, the latter was under a Necessity of soliciting *Gustavus* to come to his Assistance. *Gustavus* foreseeing what would happen had already advanced as far as *Brandenburg*; but as he was not a little pleased to see the Elector of *Saxony* forced to beg now what he a little before would not accept of, he refused to join him until he had consented to certain Conditions. These being complied with *Gustavus* passed the *Elbe* with 13000 Foot and 9000 Horse; and having joined the Troops of the Elector of *Saxony* near *Dieben* a Council of War at which the Elector of *Brandenburg* assisted was held. *Gustavus* who knew *Tilly's* Experience was for acting with great Caution: But as the other Generals and especially the Elector of *Saxony* were for coming to a decisive Battle, he thought it best to attack *Tilly* before he was joined by the Generals *Aitringer* and *Tieffenback*; the former of whom was arrived at *Erfurt* and the latter was in full March through *Silesia*.

Battle of
BRAITEN-
FIELD.

Upon receiving Advice of their Intention to attack him *Tilly* strengthened his Camp near *Leipsick*, with a Design to wait for the Allies there: But the Advice of *Papenheim* and other Generals, who relied too much on the Goodness of the imperial Troops and despised the Enemy because the Troops of the Electors were new raised and those of *Gustavus* fatigued with a long March, was followed, and he resolved to give them Battle in the Plain of *Braitenfield*. *Tilly* had taken Care to post himself upon a rising Ground and to have the Advan-
tage

tage of the Wind; but by the prudent Disposition of *Gustavus* who commanded the right Wing of the Allies he was forced to change the Position of his Army, and by so doing lost the Wind. As the great Effort of the Imperialists was upon the left Wing of the allied Army, of which the Electors of *Brandenburg* and *Saxony* had the Command, the *Saxon* Infantry and Part of the Cavalry of this Wing gave Way. *Gustavus* who had already routed the left Wing of the Enemy perceiving this, he attacked the right Wing of the Imperialists which was pursuing the *Saxons* and soon threw the Cavalry into Disorder. Still the Imperial Infantry stood firm; but being attacked by *Gustavus* who had made himself Master of their Artillery in Flank the Victory soon became compleat. 7600 of the Imperialists were left upon the Field, 5000 of them were made Prisoners, and they lost a hundred Colours and Standards. *Tilly* himself, who was here all at once robbed of the Laurels he had been long gathering, refusing to ask Quarter had certainly been slain by a Captain of Horse, if the Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg* had not come up in the very Nick of Time and shot this Captain through the Head. *Leipsick* was soon after retaken by the *Saxons*, and *Gustavus* made himself Master of *Merseburg*.

It being now after some Debate agreed that *Gusta-GUSTAVUS* *us* should, while the *Saxons* invaded the Emperor's makes great hereditary Dominions, march into *Franconia*, he with Progress in out much Difficulty took *Koningshofen* and *Zweinfurt*, FRANCONIA. and the Castle of *Wurtzburg* submitted to him. *Tilly* having in the mean Time rallied his Forces and received some Reinforcements, he was advancing towards the Banks of the *Tauber* in order to cover the Emperor's Dominions and *Bavaria*: But being unexpectedly attacked in the Way by the *Swedes* his Rear-Guard consisting of four Regiments was entirely cut off. An Alliance with the Margrave of *Anspach* being at this Time concluded by *Gustavus* he marched towards the *Rhine*; and after subduing the *Rhingau* resolved to turn his Arms against the *Spaniards* who had entered the *Palatinote*. Having passed the *Rhine* at *Stockstadt* and defeated them *Mentz* submitted to him; the

the Garrison of *Oppenheim* was cut to Pieces; and *Landau*, *Spire* and *Germerheim* soon fell into his Hands.

ROSTOCK, The Towns of *Rostock* and *Wismar* were about
WISMAR and the same Time taken from the Imperialists; and they
PRAGUE are were quite driven from the *Baltick* Coast. In the mean
 taken. Time the Troops of *Saxony* under *Arnheim* had made

themselves Masters of *Prague* and many other Places in *Bohemia*; but the Elector growing jealous that *Gustavus* was aiming at the Imperial Dignity would not let his Troops penetrate either into *Moravia* or *Austria*. As *Tilly* had been so unsuccessful in this Campaign it was resolved to give the Command of the Imperial Troops to *Wallstein*, a favourite General of the Soldiers and so rich that he was able to support an Army at his own Expence. He at first refused to take this: but being prevailed upon to accept it Preparations were made for having a large Army on Foot in the following Spring.

1632.
TILLY
 is killed by a
 Cannon-Ball.

Having very early in the Year 1632 obtained another Victory over the *Spaniards*, and taken *Crutzenach* and several other Places in the *Palatinate*, *Gustavus* left the Command there to *Axel Oxenstern*; and went in Search of *Tilly* who still commanded the *Bavarians*. Upon the Approach of *Gustavus* *Tilly* abandoned *Suabia*; and all on that Side of the *Danube* quite as far as *Ulm* fell into the Hands of *Gustavus*. Advancing to the Banks of the *Lech* where *Tilly* had intrenched himself in a Wood, the latter received a Wound from a Cannon-Ball of which he died a few Days after. Dismayed at the Loss of their General the *Bavarians* fled in great Disorder; and left the whole Country open to *Gustavus*. *Rain*, *Newburg* and *Ausburg* made very little Resistance; but the Attempts of *Gustavus* upon *Ingolstadt* and *Ratisben* failed. At the former of these Places he had a Horse shot under him and the Marquis of *Baden* was killed by his Side; and the Elector of *Bavaria* had taken Care to put a strong Garrison into the latter. He afterwards laid all *Bavaria* under Contribution, and coming before *Munich* the Gates of this City were thrown open to him.

In

In the mean Time the Saxons had been driven out of Bohemia, and great Ravages had been committed by the Imperialists in Lower-Saxony; but the ill Success of the Saxons was a good deal owing to the Treachery of Arnheim their General, who had the utmost Hatred to Gustavus. Papenheim being now left to command in Lower-Saxony, it was agreed by Wallstein and the Elector of Bavaria to join their Forces and fall upon Gustavus in Bavaria. The latter made a forced March to prevent this Junction; but being unable to do it he encamped near Naumburg. In order to make him quit this advantageous Post Wallstein made a Feint March as if he intended to go into Saxony. Finding this would not do he advanced towards Gustavus, and endeavoured to force him to a Battle by straitning him in his Camp. Being afterwards reinforced by Troops from divers Parts of Germany Gustavus resolved to attack Wallstein: But the latter had entrenched himself so strongly, that notwithstanding its Superiority in Number the allied Army was repulsed with considerable Loss. During these Transactions Papenheim had worsted the Hessians near Volkmarshen; obliged the Duke of Luneburg to give over the Siege of Calenberg; and defeated General Bauditz twice; and he was upon the March to join Wallstein. It was hereupon resolved by Gustavus, who found there was no trusting to the Saxon General Arnheim, to march with the Flower of his Army towards the Lech. Whilst he was making Conquests there he received a Letter from the Elector of Saxony, begging him to come immediately to his Assistance against Wallstein, who had entered Misnia with all his Forces. Gustavus had been for some Time dissatisfied with this Elector's Conduct; yet fearing that he might be forced to make a separate Peace with the Emperor, he left the Command in Bavaria and Suabia to Christian Birckenfeld Count Palatine, and went with a considerable Body of Troops.

Hearing upon his Arrival at Naumburg that Wallstein had detached a large Body of Troops under Papenheim, Gustavus resolved not to wait for the Duke of Lunenburg who was at Wittenberg; but to come to an Engagement before Papenheim could rejoin the Imperial Army. With a View

a View to this he advanced into the Plain of *Lutzel* and an obstinate Battle ensued. The *Swedish* Infantry began the Attack with such Intrepidity that the Imperialists were forced to retire and leave their Cannon. The Cavalry who pursued them being stopped by a Ditch, *Gustavus* in order to encourage the rest put himself at the Head of the *Smaland* Horse and passed it: But advancing too far he lost his Life. Concerning the Manner of his Death there are various Conjectures. The most probable is that the Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg*, who with two Grooms were the only Persons in his Company, bribed by the Imperialists was the Occasion thereof. Instead of being dismayed at his Death the *Swedes* fought more desperately, and routed the Enemy on all Sides. The Imperialists being rejoined by *Pappenheim* did indeed rally; but this General being slain they were a second Time routed and the Victory became compleat: Yet as it cost the *Swedes* the Life of so great a King it was a dear bought one.

Death of
GUSTAVUS.

CHRISTIANA-
BA, 1633.

Christiana Daughter and Successor of *Gustavus* being only six Years of Age at his Death, it was resolved in the Dyet that the Regency should be in the Hands of the principal Officers of State; and that the Care of Affairs in *Germany* should be committed to the Chancellor, *Oxenstern*.

OXENSTERN
continues the
War in GER-
MANY.

This Minister foresaw the Divisions that would arise amongst the Protestant Princes upon his Matter's Death; yet as the abandoning of what had been conquered in *Germany* would have been giving up the Protestant Cause and hurtful to *Sweden*, he judged it proper to carry on the War vigorously until a good Peace could be obtained. Thinking it best to divide the Army 14000 Men were sent by him to join *George* Duke of *Lunenbourg* in *Westphalia*; and he sent a large Body of Troops into *Silesia*. These last being deserted by the *Saxons*, whose General held a secret Correspondence with *Wallenstein*, they were routed with considerable Loss: But the Troops of the Allies were successful in *Franconia*, in the *Palatinate* and upon the *Lower Rhine*. The Duke of *Lunenbourg* did also make great Progress in *Westphalia*; and after defeating Count *Mansfield* had laid Siege to *Hamel*. A Body of 15,000
Impe-

Imperialists was sent to the Relief of this important *Battle of Hal-*
face; but these being defeated with the Loss of 2000 MEL.
 ain on the Field and as many more made Prisoners
 capitulated. Notwithstanding the allied Army was
 everywhere except in *Silisia* victorious the *Swedes*
 and the War grow more and more burthensome;
 and that their Allies were grown quite weary thereof.
 About this Time the Imperial General *Wallstein* was WALLSTEIN
 disgraced; and he was shortly after assassinated by the is assassinated.
 Order of his Master. 1634.

The King of *Hungary* Son of the Emperor being
 thereupon appointed to command his Father's Troops,
 he in the Year 1634 after being joined by some Troops
 of *Spain* which were passing into the *Low-Countries* laid
 Siege to *Nordlinguen*. An Attempt being made by the *Battle of*
 Allies to possess themselves of an advanced Post near NORDLIN-
 this Town a Skirmish ensued betwixt the advanced GUEN.
 Guard of the two Armies, which by Degrees drew on
 a general Engagement. In this Action the *Swedes*
 who were entirely routed lost 6000 Men, 130 Colours
 and all their Artillery and Baggage; and amongst the
 many made Prisoners was *Gustavus Horn*. As it was
 followed with the Loss of all *Upper-Germany* and the
 Elector of *Saxony* had made a separate Peace the Affairs of
Sweden looked black, and they would have been glad of
 Peace: But as this could not be had on any tolerable
 Terms they for the Sake of prolonging the Truce with the
Poles gave up *Prussia*; and in Order to secure the As-
 sistance of *France* put her into Possession of *Philipsburg*.

The *Swedes* having thus reestablished their Affairs, The Elector of
 they would not accept the Sum of Money offered by SAXONY goes
 the Elector of *Saxony* for the Archbishoprick of *Magde-*
burg; upon which he in the Year 1635 went over to Emperor.
 the Emperor's Side. This cost the *Saxons* dear; for they Battle of AL-
 were soon after defeated in the *Battle of Altenburg* with TENBURG.
 the Loss of above 3000 Men.

The *Swedes* were moreover deserted by others of their 1635.
 Allies; yet being now at Liberty to act without any The SWEDES,
 Restraint they could although the Number of their Army are deserted by
 was lessened act with greater Vigour. other Allies,

In the next Campaign *Magdeburg* was taken by the
English; but they were soon after attacked in their Camp
 VOL. II. R near

Battle of PERLEBERG. near *Perleburg* by *Banier* the *Swedish* General. After this signal Action, in which above 5000 of the *Saxons* were notwithstanding their great Superiority in Number and advantageous Situation slain upon the Field, the *Swedes* retook *Erfurt*, and obliged the *Imperialists* to retire through the *Landgraviate* of *Hess* into *Westphalia*.

1637. In the Beginning of the Year 1637 *Banier* gains some Advantages over the *Imperialists* and *Saxons*: But he was afterwards in Danger of being surrounded with his whole Army near *Custrin*; and although he had the Address to extricate himself he could not prevent the Loss of some Places in *Pomerania*. About this Time *George* Duke of *Lunenbourg* declared against the *Swedes* and they began to be jealous of the *Electors* of *Brandenburgh*, who upon the Death of *Bogislaus* XIV. the last Duke of *Pomerania* laid Claim to this Duchy. But having renewed their Alliance with *France* they determined to assert their Right thereto.

1638. The Losses sustained by the *Swedes* in the last Campaign were amply repaired by the Successes of the Year 1638. *Banier* drove the *Imperial* General *Gallas* quite into the *Emperors*' hereditary Dominions: But the *Rhin* where *Bernard* Duke of *Weimar* commanded became the principal Theatre of Action.

Great Success of **BERNARD** Duke of **WEIMAR.** This General after repulsing the *Imperialists*, who twice attempted to relieve this Place, made himself Master of *Rhinfield*: And *Rothelin* and *Friburg* in the *Brigade* submitted to him. He afterwards laid Siege to *Brissach* and the *Imperialists* who came to the Relief thereof with 12000 Men were received so warmly by him that not above 2500 of them escaped. Another Attempt was made by the Duke of *Lorraine* to raise the Siege of this important Place; but his Army being likewise cut to Pieces it surrendered.

1639. It being resolved by these two victorious Generals to carry the War in the next Campaign into the *Emperors*' hereditary Dominions, *Banier* after gaining some Advantages over the *Imperialists* and *Saxons* had actually penetrated into *Bohemia*; and would undoubtedly have made great Progress there if the Death of the Duke of *Weimar* had not interrupted him.

had not disconcerted his Measures. As this Duke had refused to comply with the Solicitations of the *French*, who wanted him to put *Brisack* into their Hands, it was suspected, his Death being very sudden, that they poisoned him: And this Suspicion was confirmed by the Entrance of the Troops of *Weimar* into the Service of *France*. Hereupon *Banier* who found himself unable to withstand the Imperial Forces alone retired into *Misnia* and *Thuringia*.

Being joined in the Spring of the Year 1640 by the Duke of *Longueville*, who had succeeded the Duke of *Wei-*
mar in his Command, and by the Troops of *Hesse* and *Lunen-^{LUNENBURG}burg*, whose Duke disgusted at the Emperor had again declared for the *Swedes*, *Banier* would fain have come to an Engagement: But not being able to draw the Imperial General out of his Intrenchments this Campaign was spent in observing each others Motions.

Banier had in the Beginning of the next Year laid a Scheme to surprize *Ratisbon* where the Emperor and Diet were assembled; and it would in all Probability have succeeded if the Ice had not prevented his making use of a Bridge of Boats. Failing in this *Banier* determined to penetrate into *Moravia*, *Bohemia* and *Silesia*. He thereby hoped to put an End to the War: But for want of being supported by *Longueville* the *French* General he found himself so hard pressed by the *Imperialists*, that he had nothing else for it but to retreat through the *Bohemian* Forest. This he effected by leaving three Regiments under Colonel *Slang* to stop the *Imperialists*: Who notwithstanding the brave Resistance made by these came up to the Pass of *Preitznitz* within half an Hour after the *Swedes* had secured it. The Death of *Banier* shortly after was a great Misfortune to the *Swedes*: Yet they had the better in two Skirmishes which happened in this Campaign near *Wol-*
senbuttel.

*Torsten*son who succeeded that brave General *Banier* in his Command opened the Campaign of the Year 1642 by taking *Glogau* in *Silesia* Sword in Hand. Having afterwards besieged *Sweidnitz* the *Imperialists* under the

Battle of
BRAITEN-
FIELD.

Duke of *Saxe-Lawenburg*, who fell in the Action, attempted to relieve it: But they were defeated with great Loss. After taking this and several other Places he sat down before *Brieg*; the *Imperialists* however who were now superior in Number obliged him to retire: And finding himself unable to pursue his Intention of penetrating into *Bohemia* he passed the River *Elbe* and laid Siege to *Leipsick*. The whole *Imperial Army* under the joint Command of the Archduke and *Picolomini* advanced to succour this Place, and a bloody Battle ensued in the same Plain near *Braitenfield* where *Gustavus Adolphus* had formerly obtained a signal Victory. In this the left Wing of each Army was thrown into Disorder; but that of the *Swedes* rallying and taking the Right of the *Imperialists* in Flank the latter were entirely routed. Five thousand of these were left upon the Field, and near as many of them were made Prisoners. The Loss on the Side of the *Swedes* was not more than 2000 Men, and *Leipsick* soon surrendered to them.

1643.
The SWEDES
are repulsed
from FRI-
BURG.

The Siege of *Friburg* undertaken in the next Year was raised by the Imperial General *Picolomini* with some Loss to the *Swedes*; and during this Campaign the Troops under *Guebriant* the *French* General were almost ruined by the *Bavarians*.

War with
DENMARK,
1644.

Towards the End of this Year *Torstenson* on receiving Orders for this Purpose from his Court, which was resolved to bear no longer the Insults of the *Danes*, threw himself into the Dutchy of *Holstein*. His Intention to march thither was kept so secret that before the *Danes* had any Suspicion thereof he had overrun the greatest Part of this Dutchy. The *Danes* were afterwards defeated both in *Jutland* and *Scania*; and the *Swedes* having worsted their Fleet made themselves Masters of the Bishoprick of *Bremen* and of the Island of *Bornholm*. As this rapid Progress laid *Denmark* under a Necessity of making Peace at any Rate a Treaty was concluded at *Bromsebroo* early in the Year 1645: By which, besides other advantageous Terms, *Femterland* and *Horn-dale* with the Islands of *Gotbland* and *Oeland* were ceded to *Sweden*.

Treaty of
BROMSE-
BROO.

1645.
Truce with
SAXONY.

A Truce being likewise concluded with the Elector of *Saxony* *Torstenson* made the best of his Way into *Bohemia*;

Bohemia; and a Battle ensuing near *Janowitz* the *Impe-* Battle of JA-
rialists lost 4000 Men upon the Field and as many were *NOWITZ*.
 taken Prisoners.

The *Swedes* meeting now with no Opposition passed *TORSTEN-*
 through *Bohemia* and *Moravia*; and having joined the *SON penetrates*
 Forces of *Ragotzki* in *Austria* would have brought the *into AUS-*
 Emperor to their own Terms, if *Ragotzki* had not upon *TRIA.*
 receiving Satisfaction from the Emperor retired with
 his Troops. The French General *Turenne* being more-
 over defeated in *Bavaria* *Torsten* found it necessary
 to return into *Bohemia*. The latter shortly after re-
 signed the Command of the *Swedes*, for which his Infir-
 mities rendered him quite unfit, and *Wrangel* was ap-
 pointed to command in his stead.

This General having in the Spring following joined 1646.
Turenne they laid Siege to *Augsburg*; but upon the *WRANGEL*
 Approach of the *Imperialists* they were forced to give over *commands in*
 this Siege. *GERMANY.*

In order to act more vigorously against the Empe-
 ror, whose Troops had in the last Campaign recovered
 a good deal in his hereditary Dominions, *Wrangel* con-
 cluded in the Year 1647 a Truce with the Elector of *Truce with*
Bavaria: But this Prince at the Persuasion of the Em- *BAVARIA*
 peror broke the Truce a few Months after and sent *which is soon*
 some Troops to the Imperial Army. *broke.*

Wrangel took the Field early in the next Campaign,
 and being joined by *Turenne* they drove the Elector of
Bavaria who fled before them quite to *Saltzburg*; and 1648.
 put his Country to Fire and Sword, because the Inhabi- *BAVARIA put*
 tants did not pay the Contributions laid upon them. *to Fire and*
Koningsmark, who commanded a flying Camp and had *Sword.*
 during the War greatly annoyed the *Imperialists*, at the
 same Time surprized that Part of *Prague* where the Em-
 peror's and some other grand Palaces were; and his
 Troops carried off a vast Booty.

Towards the End of this Campaign two Treaties of *Treaties of*
 Peace, which had been long negotiating, were signed *OSNABRUG*
 at *Osnabrug* and *Munster*. As the Courage and Con- *and MUNS-*
 ficiency of the *Swedes* did soon after the fatal Battle of *TER.*
Nordlinguen reestablish their Affairs in *Germany* the
Imperialists used their utmost Endeavours to bring
 them

them into a separate Peace: Which being refused as dishonourable and unsafe Preliminaries for a general one were at length agreed upon. The Ministers of the Protestant Princes met those of the Emperor at *Osnabrug*; and Negotiations were at the same Time carried on betwixt the Ministers of the Catholick Powers and some other Imperial Ministers at *Munster*. By the Treaty of *Osnabrug* the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*, the greatest Part of *Pomerania*, the Isle of *Rugen* and the City of *Wismar*, to be held however as Fiefs of the Empire, were ceded to the *Swedes*; and five Millions of Crowns were to be paid them. Besides these advantageous Terms to themselves the *Swedes* had the Pleasure of reflecting upon the great Share they had in preserving the Liberties of the *Germanick* Body; and in the Establishment of the *Protestant* Religion in the Empire. The *German* War being thus gloriously ended *Christiana*, who had resolved to resign the Crown in Favour of *Charles Gustavus* her Nephew, took great Pains to adjust the Differences still subsisting with *Poland*; which it was feared would on the Expiration of the Truce involve the two Nations in another War: But the *Poles* being quite intractable nothing could be done. Having reserved to herself a Pension sufficient to support her Dignity this Princess resigned the Crown on the 6th of *June* 1654. in an Assembly of the States at *Upsal*; and *Charles Gustavus* Count *Palatine* her Nephew was the same Day crowned.

CHRISTIANA
resigns the
Crown.

CHARLES X.
1654.

War with
POLAND.

After reannexing with the Consent of the Senate to the Crown the fourth Part of what had been granted away since the Death of *Gustavus Adolphus*, for he found the Treasury quite exhausted, this Prince resolved to put himself at the Head of his Forces and march into *Poland*. His Success was such that *John Casimir* King of *Poland* was forced to fly into *Silesia*, and the *Poles* took an Oath of Allegiance to *Charles*: But upon his going into *Prussia* they soon revolted, and falling upon the *Swedes* every where and especially in *Lithuania* they slew many of them. The Dispute betwixt *Charles* and the Elector of *Brandenburg* concerning *Prussia* being amicably ended these two Princes joined their

their Forces, and marching towards *Warsaw* obtained a *Battle of* compleat Victory over the *Poles* and *Tartars*. WARSAW.

In the Year 1656 *Bogislaus Radziwil* Prince of *Transylvania* entered into an Alliance with the *Swedes*; and they would undoubtedly have humbled the *Poles* if the *Danes* had not taken this Opportunity to declare War against them. Having drawn the Main of his Army *Surprizing* thither *Charles* in the Year 1658 not only made great *Progress* of Progress in *Holstein*; but which was so surprizing that *CHARLES a-* Posterity will scarce give Credit thereto he marched *gainst the* his Troops from *Holstein* into the Island of *Funen* over *DANES, 1558.* the Ice, and from thence over the Ice into the Island of *Zealand*.

Hereupon the King of *Denmark*, who began to tremble for his Capital, by a Treaty clapped up at *Ros-Treaty of Ros-* child consented to give up the Provinces of *Scania, Hal-* land and *Blekingen*, together with the Island of *Born-* holm and several Places in *Norway*. CHILD.

Growing afterwards suspicious that the *Danes* would *Hospitalities re-* break this Peace *Charles* embarked his Troops that *commenced.* were in *Holstein*; but instead of Sailing as he pretended to *Dantzick* he landed in *Zealand*: And whilst *Wrangel* attacked *Cronenburgh* sat down himself before *Copen-* bagen. The *Danes* defended themselves with great Bravery, and the Siege was pushed vigorously both by Sea and Land till the Arrival of a *Dutch Fleet*; which *Battle of the* having defeated that of *Sweden* *Charles* was obliged to *SOUND.* raise it. Not long after the united Forces of the *Empe-* ror, *Brandenburg, Poland* and *Denmark* fell upon and entirely routed the *Swedish Army* near *Nyburg* in the *Battle of* Island of *Funen*: All their Infantry being cut off or *NYBURG.* made Prisoners. Whilst *Charles* was busy in making Preparation to revenge this Loss he was seized with a Fever; and died on the 23d of *February* in the Year 1660.

As *Charles* his Successor was not five Years of Age *CHARLES XI,* at his Father's Death the *Swedes* wholly intent on *1660.* Peace concluded in the *May* following a Treaty with *Treaties with* *Poland* at *Oliva*; by which *John Casimir* quitted all *POLAND and* Pretensions to the Crown of *Sweden*, and the *Poles* re-*DENMARK;* nounced their Claims upon *Livonia*. In the same Month a Treaty was concluded with *Denmark*; Of which the

Conditions were the same as those of *Roschild*, except that the *Swedes* were to give up the Island of *Bornholm* and *Drontheim* in *Norway*.

War with
BRANDEN-
BURG and
DENMARK.

The *Swedes* afterwards entered into the Triple Alliance with *England* and *Holland*: But on the Commencement of the War in the Year 1674 they broke through their Engagements with the *Maritime Powers*; and in order to cause a Diversion in Favour of *France* sent an Army into *Brandenburg*. This Proceeding involved the young King in a War which had fatal Consequences. The Elector of *Brandenburg* after defeating them made himself Master of all that belonged to the *Swedes* in *Pomerania*; the Duke of *Lunenburg* overran the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*; and *Wismar* together with several Places in *Scania* were taken by the *Danes*. The *Danes* were indeed afterwards worsted in two Battles fought in *Scania*; and by a Treaty signed at *St. Germain*, which followed that of *Nimeguen*, all the *Swedes* had lost in this War except a little in *Germany* was restored to them. Having afterwards in order to cement the Alliance with *Denmark* married *Ulrica Eleonor* Sister to the reigning King *Charles* applied himself to the putting of his Fleet and Army into a good Condition.

Treaty of St.
GERMAINS.

CHARLES
establishes the
Grand Com-
mission.

In order to fill his Coffers he revoked many Grants of his Predecessors; and having established a grand Commission for enquiring into the Conduct of such as had any Share in the Management of Affairs during his Minority heavy Fines were set upon all who had been guilty of the least Fraud. By these rigorous Proceedings many noble Families, together with some Senators, Admirals and Generals, were reduced from affluent Circumstances to great Want: But they durst not repine; for as he had for some Time trampled upon the Authority of the Senate the Power of *Charles* was become almost absolute.

Treaties with
RUSSIA
and HOL-
LAND.

In the Year 1682 a Treaty of Alliance was concluded with *John* Czar of *Russia*; and in the preceding Year *Charles* had entered into a defensive Treaty with the *States General*, to which the Emperor and his Catholic Majesty did afterwards accede.

He raises the
Value of Mo-
ney.

In the Year 1685 *Charles* published an Edict for doubling the Value of Money. By this the Capital of

of the publick Creditors was diminished one half, and a Calculation being moreover made of all the Interest they had received, for which they were to account according to this encreased Value of Money, many of them by so strange a Way of reckoning instead of being Creditors became Debtors to the Crown. This Project, nor could any Thing less be expected from it, besides entirely ruining many Families was very prejudicial to Commerce in general. Two Years after the Exercise of any Religion except it was agreeable to the Confession of *Augsburg* was prohibited under severe Penalties: But by the Intercession of the *States General* a Dispensation was obtained in Favour of the *Calvinists*.

A Difference arising between the King of *Denmark* He resolves to and the Duke of *Holstein* the former made himself assist the Duke Master of *Holstein*. As it was not for the Interest of *Swe-*of *HOLSTEIN*. *den* that he should keep Possession of this Dutchy Preparation was made by *Charles* for War; but the Duke being reinstated in the Possession of his Dominions by the Treaty of *Altena*, concluded in the Year 1689 under the Mediation of the Emperor and the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg*, no Hostilities were committed. In the *February* following a defensive Treaty was con-Treaties with cluded betwixt *Sweden* and *Denmark*: And this was DENMARK, soon followed by another for regulating all that concerned Trade and Navigation. *Charles*, who took great Pains to bring about a Peace betwixt *France* and the *Allies*, had the Pleasure before his Death in *April* 1697 to see the Negotiations for a Treaty in great Forwardness: 1690.

Charles his Successor being a Minor the Regency CHARLES was committed by the Will of his Father to his Grand-XII. 1697. mother until he should arrive at the Age of eighteen Years: But by the unanimous Consent of the Senate he was although not quite sixteen declared Major in the *November* following. He had the Pleasure of seeing the Treaty of *Ryfwick* concluded under his Mediation in the *September* following; and his Coronation was solemnized in *December*. New Differences arising betwixt the Courts of *Denmark* and *Holstein* Conferences War with were opened at *Pinenburg*: But as the Matters in Dis-DENMARK pute and POLAND.

pute could not although the Conferences lasted two Years be adjusted the Duke of *Holstein* judged it proper to fortify some Places; and *Charles* thought himself bound to support this Prince who had married his Sister *Edwiga Eleonora*. *Frederick IV.* of *Denmark* hereupon entered into an Alliance with *Augustus* of *Poland* and the *Czar*: Which was kept very secret; and the latter for some Time seemed disposed to observe a Neutrality. While *Frederick* overran *Holstein* *Augustus* under the Pretence that he had bound himself by his Coronation Oath to reunite to the Republick of *Poland* all that had been taken from it attacked *Livonia*: But the *Swedish* Fleet being joined by thirty Sail of *English* and *Dutch* Men of War the Fleet of *Denmark* unable to keep the Sea retired into Port. *Copenhagen* was soon after attacked on the Land Side by *Charles*, and it was at the same Time bombarded by the combined Fleet. This together with the Check his Troops met with before *Tanningen* obliged the King of *Denmark* to sue for Peace, and a Treaty was concluded in *August* 1700 at *Trawendall*.

Treaty of
TRAWEN-
DALL,

1700.

The RUS-
SIANS are sur-
prized in their
Camp at NAR-
VA.

Charles after quitting the Island of *Zealand* had disposed every Thing for acting against the *Poles* in the next Spring; but in the mean Time News came that the *Russians* were to the Number of 100,000 Men before *Narva*. He marched immediately, and coming up with them on the 30th of *November* when they apprehended nothing of it the *Russians* were surprized in their Camp and totally routed.

1701.
AUGUSTUS
flies before
CHARLES.

Early in the following Spring *Charles* obliged the Troops of *Augustus* to give over the Blockade of *Riga*, and took *Mittau* in *Courland* at which Place the *Polish* Magazines were. *Augustus* discouraged at this ill Success retired into *Poland* and would now have been glad of Peace at any Rate; but instead of listening to his Overtures *Charles* made the best of his Way to *Warsaw*. The *Primate* of *Poland* who had opposed the Election of *Augustus* wanted to have an Interview with *Charles*; yet he did not Care to render himself suspected by his Prince. Having amused *Augustus* with a Notion that *Charles* was disposed to accommodate Matters, the
Primate

Primate and Count *Leczinski* had leave to give him a Meeting.

The Project of dethroning *Augustus* having been in this Meeting agreed upon the *Swedes*, in order to pave the Way for doing this by driving the *Saxons* out of *Poland*, advanced in the next Campaign towards *Cracaw*. *Augustus*, who was there, finding it must come to Extremities resolved to risk a Battle before the Reinforcements expected by the *Swedes* came up; and one was fought near *Glissow*. Being worsted in this Action he retired to *Leopol*; from whence fresh Proposals were made and the *Republick* offered her Mediation: But *Charles* insisted that as some of her Troops had fought at *Glissow* she was a Party concerned; and consequently that it was not reasonable to admit her Mediation. While Detachments were sent against such Palatines as had entered into an Agreement for the supporting of *Augustus* *Charles* continued with the main Body of his Army at *Lublin*.

1702.

Battle of
GLISSOW.

In *February* 1703 the Primate called a Diet at *Warsaw*: In which as few repaired thereto no Resolution was come to. An Assembly of the States being about the same Time held by the King at *Thorn*, and another afterwards at *Marienburg*, the Members of this took a solemn Oath to maintain their Laws and Constitution; and the Diet held at *Warsaw* was declared to be illegal. In *April* *Charles* declared by a publick Act that he intended nothing more than to cultivate a good Understanding with the *Republick*; but that in order to this it was necessary for the *Saxons* to evacuate the Kingdom. He afterwards surprized *Bug* whose Garrison composed of *Saxon* Troops was very near being made Prisoners; and he made himself Master of *Thorn* which was also garrisoned by *Saxon* Troops.

Diet of WAR-
SAW.

A Confederacy was moreover formed with the King sent of *Augustus*, who knew nothing of his real Design, is deposed. by the Primate; and the Nobility who imagined this was intended to promote the Interest of the King and *Republick* did in the general come into it. A Meeting of the Confederates being hereupon held at *Warsaw* some Persons were deputed to treat with Count *Horn* the *Swedish* Minister; but he gave them to understand that the King his Master insisted upon it as a Preliminary that

that *Augustus* should be deposed; and added that the Republick ought to make no Difficulty of deposing him since he had offered to treat without her Knowledge. This was a sufficient Handle for the Primate; and he managed so artfully that it was resolved on the 14th of *February* to depose *Augustus*. and to proceed to the Election of a new King. A Day being fixed for this Purpose *Charles* was requested to send Ministers to assist thereat.

STANISLAUS *Augustus* in an Assembly of his Friends declared every
is elected King Thing done by the Confederates void; but as the *Swedes*
of POLAND, drove him from Place to Place and he was once very
1704. near being taken Prisoner this made no Alteration in
their Measures. A Diet for the Election of a new
King, at which *Charles* in order to make every thing
sure was present, was opened in the 19th of *June*. In the
Beginning thereof the Princes *James* and *Alexander*
Sobieski had some Votes; but as the Majority of the
Nuncio's were for *Stanislaus Leczinski* Son of the Grand
Treasurer of the Crown the rest came over to them;
and he was declared King about the Middle of *July*.
After entering into close Engagements with this Prince
Charles endeavoured to surprize *Augustus* near *Jaroslow*.
Failing in this he marched towards *Leopol*; and took it
by Storm. In the mean Time *Augustus*, who had been
joined by Prince *Gallitzen* at the Head of twenty thou-
sand *Russians*, was marching towards *Warsaw*. The
new Queen, the Primate and some others, on the first
News of his making forced Marches this Way retired
into *Prussia*; and *Stanislaus* with others of his Friends
went to join the King of *Sweden* at *Leopol*. The Event
discovered the Prudence of this Step: For *Warsaw* being
taken on the 4th of *September* Count *Horn* was made
Prisoner, and the Affairs of *Augustus* began to put on a
better Aspect. By a Treaty at the same Time concluded
the Czar engaged to keep up at his own Expence a large
Body of Troops for the Service of the Republick; to
pay her an annual Subsidy; and to leave her in Possession
of all that should be conquered in *Livonia*.

AUGUSTUS
retakes WAR-
SAW and en-
ters into an
Alliance with
the CZAR.

He retires into
SAXONY.

On the Return of *Charles*, who struck Terror where-
ever he came, this Prospect so pleasing to *Augustus*
began to vanish. After besieging *Pesna* ten Weeks
his

his Troops were forced to retire; and the main Body of his Army composed of *Russians* and *Saxons* being driven into and defeated by *Charles* in *Silesia* his Party in *Poland* diminished daily. Apprehending that this victorious Prince would next make an Irruption into *Saxony* he secretly retired thither to guard against it: But as his sudden Departure looked like giving up the *Polish* Crown the Palatines of *Siradia*, *Pesuania* and *Carlitz*, and others of the Nobility who had all along adhered to *Augustus* acknowledged *Stanislaus*; and many Advantages were gained by the *Swedes* over such of the *Poles* as still appeared in Arms for *Augustus*.

An Irruption being made into *Saxony* in the Year *Treaty of* 1706, and the Country being laid under Contributions, ALT-RAN-
Augustus in order to deliver his Electorate from the STADT,
 Oppressions of the *Swedes* was forced to conclude a separate 1706.
Treaty at *Alt-Ranstadt*. By this *Treaty* he agreed to abdicate the Crown of *Poland*; to acknowledge *Stanislaus*; and to deliver Count *Patkul* into the Hands of *Charles*.

This Nobleman, a *Livonian* by Birth, had been *History of*
 formerly one of the five Deputies sent to represent to Count PAT-
Charles XI. that the Proceedings of the Grand Com- KUL.
 mission for resuming the Grants of his Predecessors were quite inconsistent with the Privileges of the *Livonians*. As this Representation had no Effect it was resolved in an Assembly of the States of this Province to present a Memorial setting forth their Rights to his Majesty. Therein was contained a lively Representation of the extreme Misery to which many noble Families were reduced: But instead of procuring Redress all privy thereto were looked upon as guilty of High Treason; and *Patkul* who had been principally concerned in drawing it up was condemned to have his right Hand cut off, and to be deprived of his Estate, Honour and Life. In order to avoid this cruel Sentence he fled into *Russia*, and after having been raised to the highest Dignities was employed by the Czar in negotiating the last *Treaty* with *Augustus*. All of a sudden when he seemed to be in the highest Confidence with both these Monarchs he was arrested by the latter at *Dresden*; and kept Prisoner until the Conclusion of the *Treaty* of *Alt-Ranstadt*. What-
 ever

ever might be the Reason for confining him it is certain that *Augustus* to whom he had done most important Services was unwilling to deliver *Potkul* up; and the Czar whose Ambassador he was protested against it: But as the *Swedes* were in the Heart of his Country and nothing less would satisfy *Charles*, *Augustus* was forced to do it. The unhappy *Potkul* being conducted to the *Swedish* Camp, he shortly after, notwithstanding the Intercession made for him by several Powers, suffered that ignominious and cruel Death of being broke alive upon the Wheel and quartered.

CHARLES
procures some
Advantages
for the Prote-
stants in Si-
LESIA.

He resolves to
turn his whole
Force against
the RUSSIANS.

Battle of Ho-
LOWESIN,
1708.
Defeat of
LEUWEN-
HAUPT.

Before *Charles* quitted *Germany* he procured some Advantages for the *Protestants* in *Silesia*: For the Emperor, fearing that he might being an Ally and Pensioner of *Lewis XIV.* declare for *France*, durst not refuse him any Thing; and the Duke of *Marlborough* made him a Visit in his Camp on Purpose to prevent this which would have been fatal to the Allies. *Charles* imagined that the making of a separate Peace would produce an irreconcilable Difference betwixt *Augustus* and the Czar; and consequently that he should now have only the latter to deal with: But he found himself mistaken for the Zeal of *Peter*, who knew very well that as things were circumstanced he could not refuse any Thing, for the Cause of *Augustus* did not in the least abate; and it was moreover for his own Interest that *Charles* should not carry his Point in *Poland*. Taking it for granted, *Augustus* being as he thought not at all to be feared, that *Stanislaus* would be able to support himself *Charles* in the Year 1708 resolved to turn his whole Forces against the *Russians*. He gained one Victory over them in a Battle fought in *July* near *Holowesin*, and he had the better in several Skirmishes; but while he was advancing towards the *Ukraine* the *Russians* fell upon General *Leuwenhaupt*, who was following with a Convoy of Ammunition and Provision, and handled him so roughly that of 15,000 Men under his Command not above 4000 escaped. In the mean Time *Moxeppa* General of the *Cossacks* had revolted and joined *Charles*; and the *Swedes* had had the Advantage in several inconsiderable Actions; yet as these were not decisive *Charles* had really the worst of it, because while fresh Troops were coming

coming up every Day to the *Russians* his Army could not be at all recruited. The severe Winter which followed carried off many of his Men; nevertheless *Charles* instead of returning home as he might have then done full of Laurels conceived a Design of penetrating into the Heart of the Czar's Dominions.

CHARLES attempts to penetrate into RUSSIA, 1709.

With a View to this he endeavoured to make himself Master of *Pultawa*; but meeting with such a Resistance here as he had not been accustomed to *Peter* who wanted no Men had Time to bring his Numbers down. *Charles* soon found himself so surrounded by the *Russian* Army that he had no other Way to extricate himself than by a Battle. In this the good Fortune which had all along attended him quite deserted *Charles*: For the *Swedes* being entirely defeated 8619 of them were left upon the Field; 2978 of them amongst whom were Count *Piper* and General *Reinschild* were made Prisoners; and all the Baggage, Archives, and Artillery together with the Military Chest of the *Swedes* fell into the Hands of the *Russians*. *Charles* retired with about 18,000 Men; but these went not far: For Provisions failing above 16,000 of them surrendered soon after in one Day to the *Russians*. After these Misfortunes, which from the sitting down before *Pultawa* had cost him above 27,000 Men, *Charles* accompanied by only a Handful of Men passed the *Borystenes* and sheltered himself at *Oczakow*; from whence he went to *Bender* a Frontier Town belonging to the Sultan. In the mean Time the *Swedish* Army unable to support itself had quit-
ted *Poland*; and with it went *Stanislaus*.

Battle of PULTAWA.

He retires to BENDER.

The Way thereto being now open *Augustus* re-mounted the *Polish* Throne, having first declared by a Manifesto that he did not look upon himself to be bound by the Abdication which had been extorted from him.

AUGUSTUS remounts the Throne of POLAND.

The King of *Denmark* who was unwilling to lose this favourable Opportunity did at the same Time make a Descent upon *Scania*; and thus the *Swedes* found themselves all at once attacked by *Denmark*, *Poland* and *Russia*.

DENMARK declares against the SWEDES.

The Czar made himself Master of *Riga*, *Dunamunde*, *Pernau* and *Reuel* in *Livonia*; of *Wiburg* and *Kexholm* in *Carolia*; and of the Island of *Oesel*; to which Sue-

1710. Conquests of the CZAR.

cesses

cesses a Plague and Famine that had carried off a 100,000 of the Inhabitants of these Provinces contributed a good deal.

The DANES
are repulsed in
SCANIA.

The Danes extended their Conquests from *Helsingburg* to *Christiansstadt* and *Carlsbaven*; but they were in the Month of *March* 1710 driven out of *Scania* by General *Steinbock*. As the Powers allied against *France* feared that the War in the North would spread itself into *Germany*, which might by causing a Diversion be prejudicial to them, a Neutrality was proposed for the Dominions of all the Northern Powers in the *Empire*. To this the States of *Sweden* whom the Absence of their King and the Misfortunes which overwhelmed them had called together consented willingly; and a Scheme was concerted for forming an Army to act against any Power who should break the Neutrality; but no Army was formed. *Charles* who looked upon this Step of the States as an Infringement of his Royal Privilege protested against it; but he lost by this ill-timed Obstinacy all that belonged to him in *Germany*.

CHARLES pro-
tests against the
Treaty of Neu-
trality for
GERMANY.

In the Year 1711 an Army of *Danes*, *Poles* and *Russians* invaded *Pomerania*; and after taking some considerable Places blocked up *Wisnar*. In the beginning of the next Campaign the *Danes* who acted by themselves conquered the Dutchy of *Bremen*; and the Principality of *Verden* was taken Possession of by the Electoral Troops of *Hanover*. Upon the Arrival of Count *Steinbock* at the Head of 16,000 *Swedes* in *Pomerania* the *Danes* joined the *Russians* and *Poles* and a Battle ensued at *Gadebusch*; in which *Steinbock* although his Loss was considerable remained Master of the Field. Having in the *January* following burnt *Altena* *Steinbock* posted his Army in *Holstein*: Whose Administrator for the Duke was a Minor put *Tonningen* into his Hands, that he might in Case of Need have a strong Place to retire to. All this Precaution was insufficient; for as the *Danes* came with their whole Force against him, and *Steinbock* had only 11,000 Men under him, he was forced to surrender with his whole Army Prisoners of War. *Tonningen*, concerning which nothing was stipulated, being soon after forced to surrender its Fortifications were immediately demolished; and while these

1711.
POMERANIA
is invaded.
1712.

Battle of Gade-
BUSCH.

1713.

Count STEIN-
BOCK made
Prisoner.

these Things were doing in *Eastland* others of the Allies had made such Progress in *Pomerania* that *Hein* was blockaded up and on the Point of surrendering: but his *Prussian* Majesty interposing it was agreed that the Duties of *Pomerania* should be sequestered in his hands until the Conclusion of a Peace. In the same Campaign the *Czar* 1714 landed with a powerful Army in *Finnland* and after defeating several Bodies of *Russians* made himself Master of *Russians* almost all this Province.

In this desperate Situation of Things the States of *Sweden* in the Year 1714 came to a Resolution that *Charles* 1714 *Erica Eleonora* Sister of *Charles*, who continued in *Turkey* and seemed quite unconcerned at all his Misfortunes, under which any Man but himself would have sunk, should take upon herself the Administration of Affairs: And a Congress was opened at *Bravisa* for restoring Peace in the North. This General *Charles* who still talked big and breathed only Vengeance to return Home at all Events. Setting out from *Turkey* in *October* he after crossing *Hungary* and *Germany* arrived when it was not in the least expected at *Stralsund*; and without paying any Regard to the Separation of the Dutchy of *Stetin* attacked some *Prussian* Posts. Hereupon the King of *Prussia* declared openly for the Allies; and the King of *Great-Britain* as Elector of *Hannover* did the same.

Towards the End of the next Year *Charles* having lost all *Pomerania* except *Stralsund* went over to *Sweden*: He arrived in *Sweden*. But his Grandmother *Edwiga Eleonora*, who died a little before his Arrival, had not the Pleasure long wished for by her of seeing him.

In the Year 1716 *Sweden* was threatened with an Invasion from *Denmark*, the *Czar* having lately been at the Court of *Copenhagen* to concert the proper Measures for this Purpose; but a Difference arising betwixt him and *Frederick IV.* of *Denmark* no Attempt to invade *Sweden* was made.

The Expedition to the Island of *Zealand* resolved upon in the next Year by *Charles* was soon laid aside: And a Scheme was formed by him of bringing about a Revolution in *Great-Britain* in Favour of the Pretender. This being discovered Count *Gillenburgh* the *Swedish* Minister was arrested at *London*; and *Baron Gortz* Minister

nister of *Holstein* charged with the Affairs of *Charles* at the *Hague* was at the Instance of the *British* Court likewise arrested: But they were both afterwards set at Liberty.

1718. As the Attempt made this Year to penetrate into *Norway* failed *Charles*, who in the next resolved to exert his utmost Efforts, put himself at the Head of his Army. His Troops had advanced as far as *Christiana* and *Fredrickshal* was invested; but he was killed before the

Death of CHARLES. latter Place on the 11th of *December* in the thirty-sixth Year of his Age. It may be justly said of *Charles* that he was the most intrepid Hero of his Age; and had his Prudence been equal to his Courage he would undoubtedly have made as glorious a Figure as any Person ever did

ULRICA ELEONORA. After some Debates, whether the Succession belonged to the Duke of *Holstein* Son of the late King's eldest Sister or to the Princess *Ulrica Eleonora*, the latter was proclaimed. An End being put to the Difference with *Great-Britain* by the Death of *Charles* the Court of *London* entered into an Alliance with the new Queen

1718. She enters into an alliance with GREAT-BRITAIN. and sent a Fleet into the *Baltick*; but as the *British* Ships being large durst not venture near the Shore this did not put a stop to the Ravages committed by the *Russian* Barks on the Coasts of *Sweden*. Negotiation for Peace being soon after the Accession of this Prince entered into one was concluded with *Denmark* and another with *Poland* in the Year 1720: And in the following Year Treaties were signed with the Czar and his *Prussian* Majesty.

Treaties with DENMARK and POLAND, 1720. By the Treaty with *Denmark* his *Danish* Majesty engaged not to assist the Czar in any Manner whatsoever and in Consideration of a Sum of Money agreed upon to give up all that had been taken from the *Swedes* in this War, except the Dutchy of *Bremen* which he had sold to the Elector of *Hanover*. On the other Side it was agreed that the Ships of *Sweden* should for the Time to come pay the same Toll for passing the *Sound* as those of other Nations; and that *Wismar* should not be fortified. The principal Articles of the Treaty with *Poland* were, that her *Swedish* Majesty should during the Life of *Augustus* acknowledge him as King of *Poland* and after his Death the Person who should be lawfully elected

ected: And that *Stanislaus* who was to retain the Name of King should not bear either the Arms or Title of King of *Poland*. *Augustus* on his Side engaged that there should be a general Amnesty for the Adherents of *Stanislaus*; that all these should be restored to their Honours and Estates in *Poland*; and that he would use his utmost Endeavours to preserve Peace in the North.

By the Treaty with *Prussia* the *Swedes*, who in Con-Treaties with sideration of so doing were to receive a large Sum of PRUSSIA and Money, agreed to quit all Claim to the City of *Stein*. RUSSIA, The greatest Difficulty was to settle Matters with the Czar: But this was at length done in August 1721 on the following Terms. *Ingermania*, *Livonia*, Part of *Carelia*, the Islands of *Oesel*, *Dræge* and *Moen*, and the Territory of *Wiburg* in *Finland* were ceded to him. 1721. The rest of *Finland* was restored to the *Swedes* and the Czar engaged to pay them 2,000,000 Crowns. The *Swedes* were however to have the Liberty of buying Corn annually without paying any Duty to the Amount of 50,000 Rubles at *Riga*, *Revel* or *Wiburg*; and the Inhabitants of the ceded Provinces were to enjoy their ancient Privileges and be allowed the free Exercise of their Religion.

In the Year 1726 *Frédéric* hereditary Prince of *FREDERICK Hesse-Cassel* Husband to the Queen, who since her raised to the Accession had been made Generalissimo of *Sweden*, was THIRTEEN, 1720. with the Consent of her and the Senate raised to the Throne. The principal Difficulty that for some time obstructed this was his having been educated in the Reformed Religion, whereas *Lutheranism* was the established Religion of the Kingdom; but upon the Queen's declaring that he would embrace *Lutheranism* he was on the 14th of *May* crowned.

In Order however to set Bounds to the Prerogative, He found which had in the two last Reigns been extended to a great absolute Power, a Capitulation was drawn up by a Committee appointed for the Purpose, and signed by *Frédéric* before his Coronation. The Articles of it were: That the King shall profess publicly the *Lutheran* Religion; that he shall employ none but such as are of the same Religion; that the Exercise of any other shall be prohibited except in the House of Foreign Ministers.

sters; that the King shall conduct himself according to the Form of Government established after the Death of the late King; that Affairs of Importance shall not be transacted in the Privy Council but in the Senate and in the respective Colleges; that the States shall always be at Liberty to demand the assembling of a Diet; that all civil Offices and all military ones from a Colonel upwards shall be at the Disposal of the Senate; that no Person shall be removed from his Office without a formal Trial; that the King shall not meddle in what concerns the Privileges of the four Colleges but leave every thing of this Kind to be adjusted amongst themselves; that the Power of levying Taxes and disposing of the publick Money shall be in the respective Colleges; that no Foreigner shall be employed in the Service of *Sweden*; that no more Officers than are absolutely necessary shall be employed in any of the *German* Provinces; that the King shall not part with any of his *German* Dominion during his Life, nor if he shall have a Child dispose of any Part thereof by Will to any one of the *Hesse* Family; that the supreme Authority shall at all Times in his Absence be in the Senate; that he shall not use any Influence to have the Succession fixed by the States, who are always to have the Liberty of electing their Monarch, in any Person during his Life except in one of his own Male Issue by the present Queen; that the Value of Gold and Silver Coins shall be the same as at the Accession of *Charles XI.* that the Right of Patronage to all the Universities shall remain as it is at present; that the King shall not revoke any Pension nor appropriate to himself any Thing given to a pious or charitable Use; and that if any Person shall dare to advise any Thing contrary to this Capitulation he shall cause such Person to be proceeded against as for High Treason.

Other Regulations in the Form of Government.

As the present Constitution of *Sweden* is founded upon this Capitulation and the Form of Government established upon the Accession of the Princess *Ulrica Eleonora*, it is proper to mention the principal Article of the latter which are not contained in the Capitulation, that the Reader may have at once a clear View thereof. These are: That no King shall be for his Time to come declared Major or take the Government

int

into his own Hands before he is 21 Years of Age; that the States shall not be bound by any Laws which shall be made without their Consent; that the King may make Peace with the Advice of the Senate only, but that War shall not be declared without the Consent of the States; that the Senators, to be approved however by the Prince upon the Throne, shall be nominated by the College of Nobles; that the King shall in all Things conduct himself according to the Advice of the Senate; that every Cause wherein the Life or Honour of any Gentleman is concerned shall be tried openly in the Court called *Hoffraten* and in no other Court; that the Presidents of the four Colleges and the Governor of *Stockholm* for the Time being shall be Senators; that all Officers in both Land and Sea Service shall take an Oath of Fidelity to the King the Kingdom and the States; that no Colonel shall upon Pain of Death march a single Soldier from the Place he is quartered in without an Order from the King given with the Consent of the Senate; that once in three Years a Diet shall be held and oftner if the publick Good requires it; that the Nobility of *Sweden* shall have the Liberty of electing their own Marshal; that the Nobility of the *German* and other Provinces subject to *Sweden* shall as soon as the War is ended be reinstated in their ancient Privileges; and that every Town shall be restored to the Enjoyment of its full Rights and Privileges. The Wisdom and Reasonableness of most of these Regulations are obvious, and although the regal Power may be too much limited by some of them, no honest Man, since Patriotism is the noblest Passion that can animate a human Breast, will blame the *Swedes*, who had suffered a great deal from the absolute Power exercised in the two last Reigns, for being jealous of their Liberties.

The Court of *Sweden* used afterwards its Endeavours to procure for the Duke of *Holstein* the Restitution of the Dutchy of *Sleswick*: But the King of *Denmark* would hear nothing of parting therewith; and the States were unwilling to plunge the Nation already exhausted by one War into a new one. As the Court of *Great-Britain* took great Pains in the Year 1726 to

prevail upon *Frederick* to accede to the Treaty of *Hannover* a Diet was called, for the King could not do it of himself, which after being continued from time to time for the Space of a Year consented thereto. By a secret Article in the Act of Accession to this Treaty *Frederick* in Consideration of the Sum of 50,000 Pound, to be paid annually for the Space of three Years by *Great Britain* and *France*, agreed to keep up a Body of 10,000 Men, besides the 5000 which as a contracting Party he was obliged to keep up. In case any of these Troops should march out of the Kingdom they were forthwith to be taken into the Pay of the *Allies*; and the States of *Sweden* reserved the Liberty of recalling them if they should be wanted for the Defence thereof.

Alliance with
the SULTAN,
1728.

An Ambassador arrived in the Year 1728 in *Sweden* to settle the Account of what had been advanced for *Charles XII.* while he was in *Turkey*. The Reception he met with and the paying what appeared to be due laid the Foundation of a strict Alliance betwixt the two Courts. The Persecution set on Foot against the Protestants in *Thorn*, which was contrary to the Treaty of *Oliva*, had like to have involved *Sweden* in another War with *Poland*; it was however prevented and the two Kings being heartily reconciled wrote in the Year 1729 most friendly Letters to each other. The Court of *Sweden* at first made great Difficulty of acknowledging the *Czar* as Emperor of *Russia*, a Title he had lately taken; but after mature Deliberation in the Senate it was resolved to give this Title to him and his Successors.

FREDERICK
succeeds to
HESSE,
1730.

In the Year 1730 *Frederick* succeeded his Father in the Landgraviate of *Hesse*; and appointed his Brother *William* Administrator of Affairs there.

EAST-INDIA
Company erected.

About the same Time a *Dutchman* named *Kar Asper*, who had proposed the same Thing at *Copenhagen*, proposed the erecting of an *East-India Company* in *Sweden*. His Proposal being approved of the King took upon himself to be the Protector of the new Company; and when the *Dutch*, who apprehended this would be as prejudicial as the *Ostend Company* had been to their Trade, complained thereof they were given to understand, that Commerce was free to all Nations and that the *Swedish* had an equal Right to it with others.

TH

The *Swedish Laws*, besides that many of them were *The Laws* in the ancient *Swedish Language* which few understood, *reformed*, being now so extensive and perplexed that the Study thereof was very difficult, Commissioners were appointed by the King in the Year 1731 to do what was necessary for making the Administration of Justice more expeditious, cheaper and more certain. By these the old Laws were put into the modern Language of *Sweden*; and the whole Body of the Law, its Superfluities, Triflingness and Tautologies being first retrenched, was methodized in a Manner so concise, yet quite clear, that a single Volume and that not a very large one contained the whole thereof. This useful Work, which cost some Years Pains, being compleated it was in the Year 1734 approved of by the Diet; and being made publick all Courts were from the first of *January* next ensuing ordered to conform strictly thereto.

Sweden notwithstanding her Vicinity to *Poland* did not openly take any Part in the War which broke out on Account of the *Polish Election*. In the Year 1734 a Treaty of mutual Defence and for the Encouragement of Trade and Navigation was signed with *Denmark*. The King whose Health had for some Time been bad in the Year 1738 solemnly resigned the Government into the Queen's Hands; but on his Recovery he again took it upon himself. A Diet being held in the same Year the Senators *Bond, Bark, Beilk, Hardt* and *Creutz*, whose Conduct had been enquired into, were removed from their Offices; because they had as it was pretended went beyond their Instructions in renewing the Treaty of *Neustadt* with *Russia*. As the Party called *Hats* who wanted nothing so much as to break with *Russia* prevailed in this Diet, it was resolved that the Forces of the Kingdom should be augmented both by Sea and Land, and that the Treaty of *Subsidy* with *France* should be renewed. In this Diet likewise, which held almost a Year, the settling of the Succession and the Form of Government which should take Place upon a Vacancy of the Throne were talked of. The Nobility seemed inclined to the Duke of *Holstein*; but the three other Orders were for restoring such a Republican Form of Government as existed before *Sweden*

was annexed to *Denmark*. As the Debates on this Subject which could not be agreeable to the King ran very high, it was in order to prevent the ill Consequences which these might have had resolved to put an End thereto by dissolving the Diet.

War with
RUSSIA,
1741.

The Conclusion of Peace betwixt *Russia* and the *Turks* occasioned its being delayed a little: Yet it was easy to see that a War with *Russia* was resolved upon whenever a favourable Opportunity should offer. The Infancy of the Prince appointed to succeed *Anne* Empress of *Russia*, the Deposition of the Regent, together with the Revolution which happened in *Russia* were thought to furnish this; and Hostilities were commenced by *Sweden* in September 1741 against *Russia*. As Baron *Sinclair* a *Swedish* Major had passed several Times betwixt the Courts of *Stockholm* and *Constantinople*, it was suspected that something prejudicial to the *Russians* was in Agitation. In the Month of June 1739 this Baron was assassinated in his Way from *Constantinople* to *Sweden* by a *Russian* Officer a *Silesian* by Birth, who lay in wait for him in a Wood in *Silesia*. The Courts of *Vienna* and *Petersburg* took great Pains to clear themselves from the Suspicion of having been privy to this Murder, and *Sweden* seemed to be satisfied with the Declarations made at that Time: But it was plain she was not; for in the Declaration of War against *Russia* in July 1741 it was amongst others mentioned as a Motive thereto.

Manners of
the SWEDES.

The *Swedes* have always been reckoned a brave People and very able to endure the Fatigues of War: Yet there was a Time when for Want of Discipline the Troops of *Sweden* were in no great Esteem. By the prudent Conduct of *Gustavus Adolphus* who employed foreign Officers, together with the frequent Wars they have been since engaged in, this Defect is now cured; and what they did under *Charles XII.* plainly shows that there are no better Soldiers than the *Swedes*. There are not in *Sweden* as in most other Countries a Number of large populous Towns; for the Peasants are a much more considerable Body of People than the *Burgers*. The Peasants in this Kingdom have the Right of sending Deputies to the Diet; nor can any new Tax be

be laid on without the Consent of their College. The Gravity so natural to the *Swedes* makes them for the most Part a reserved and disagreeable People. They are in the general suspicious and too apt to think highly of themselves and contemptibly of others. There are amongst them some who do not want Capacity; but very few of the *Swedes* have Application enough to attain to any great Degree of Perfection in the Sciences. It is also to be imputed to their want of Industry that Manufactures and the mechanick Arts are so much neglected amongst them.

Sweden, which comprehends the greater Part of the *Soil, Com-*
Peninsula Scandinavia, abounds with Rocks, Forests *modities, and*
 and Lakes; yet some Parts of it are very fruitful; and the *Strength of*
 Lakes besides being well stored with Fish are very *SWEDEN.*
 convenient for Inland Navigation. As the principal Com-
 modities of this Country are Copper, Iron, Tar, Pitch,
 Masts and Boards it is easy to see that the Balance of
 Trade must be against the *Swedes*: But in order to re-
 medy this as far as possible Trade and Navigation have
 of late Years been much encouraged. As the maintain-
 ing of Soldiers costs but little in *Sweden* and the Inhab-
 itants are naturally brave the Forces of this Kingdom
 must be respectable; especially as they have been of late
 Years put upon a very good Footing. While *Stock-*
holm was the only Port where a Fleet could be fitted
 out the Marine of *Sweden* was very inconsiderable;
 but since *Gottenburg* and *Carlshaven* have been made
 good Ports this has been greatly augmented. *Sweden*
 has a Ridge of Rocks so high as to be almost inaccessible;
 which serve as a Bulwark to it on the Side of *Nor-*
way.

Whilst the *Swedes* were superior in military Skill *Interest of*
 to the *Russians* they were so far from apprehending any *SWEDEN*
 Thing on that Side that they made Conquests upon the *with regard*
Russians: But this Matter is now quite altered; for the *to RUSSIA.*
 long War in the Time of *Charles XII.* and the great
Prizes taken by the *Czar Peter I.* have made the latter,
 who exceed them vastly in Number, such good Soldiers
 that they are now an Over-match for the *Swedes*. So
 long as this is the Case it must be for the Interest of
Sweden to be upon good Terms with *Russia*; nor can
 she

she except assisted by some powerful Ally hops to gain any Thing by a War with the *Russians*.

POLAND.

Since *Livonia* and the neighbouring Provinces have been ceded to *Russia* the Bone of Contention betwixt *Sweden* and *Poland* is in a great Measure removed; yet it is of Consequence for the former to be in Amity with the latter, because the Assistance of *Poland* in case of a War with *Russia* would be very serviceable to *Sweden*.

PRUSSIA.

The Acquisitions of the King of *Prussia* in *Pomerania* are looked upon with an evil Eye by the *Swedes*; but as this Prince is powerful and the Expence of transporting Troops to the Continent is very great it would be imprudent in them to come to a Rupture with him; and especially as he may be a very good Ally to them in Case of a War with *Denmark* or *Russia*.

HANOVER.

Sweden would undoubtedly be glad to regain the Dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden* which have been for some Time annexed to the Electorate of *Hanover*; but as the House of *Brunswick* is in Possession of the British Throne it would be impolitick in her, as the naval Force of *Great-Britain* is vastly superior to that of *Sweden*, to attempt any Thing against these Dutchies.

GERMANY.

As *Sweden* is by Virtue of her German Dominions a Member of the Germanick Body it is for her Interest to preserve the Liberties of and Balance of Power in the Empire. It is moreover although she has nothing to fear from any of the Princes of the Empire of Consequence to *Sweden* to be upon good Terms with them all; because they may in many Cases make a powerful Diversion in her Favour.

DENMARK.

Since the Sea is now become the Boundary of *Sweden* and *Denmark* it is not for the Advantage of the former to make any Conquests upon the latter; nor is it probable that *Sweden* would succeed in an Attempt to do this, since all Nations who trade up the *Baltick* are concerned to prevent her becoming Mistress of the *Sound*. Upon the whole it seems to be for the Interest of both *Swedes* and *Danes* to eradicate their mutual Animosity, to forget all ancient Quarrels, and to unite in guarding against the Designs of their powerful Neighbours the *Russians*.

The

The Alliance which has long subsisted betwixt *Sweden* and *France* was at first founded on its being their common Interest to oppose the ambitious Designs of the House of *Austria*. This Reason is now at an End; yet as the Friendship of *France* may be on many Occasions very serviceable and the Subsidy she receives from thence is considerable it would be imprudent in *Sweden* to break this Alliance.

Sweden has much more to hope for than to fear from *Great-Britain*: Because the latter is vastly concerned as a trading *Nation* to preserve the Balance of Power in the North. The Court of *Stockholm* should however take Care that it does not by too close an Attachment to *France* draw upon itself the Resentment of *Great-Britain*: Because a *British* Fleet could in such a Case greatly annoy the Coasts of *Sweden* and give vast Assistance to her Enemies.

Sweden and the Republick of the *United Provinces* have a mutual Interest in supporting each other; for it greatly concerns the latter to hinder either *Russia* or *Denmark* from becoming Mistress of the *Baltick*. On the other Hand it is of vast Consequence to the latter that the maritime Strength of *Holland* be not reduced too low, lest *Great-Britain* should be capable of lording it in the *Baltick*.

Spain, *Portugal* and the *Italian* Powers are at such a Distance from *Sweden* that, as their naval Power is inconsiderable, nothing is to be apprehended from any of these; nor is it except for the Benefit of Commerce worth her while to give herself any Trouble concerning them.

With Regard to *Turky* it is quite otherwise; for notwithstanding its great Distance it highly concerns the *Swedes* to be in Amity with the *Turks*: Because the latter are well situated for making a powerful Diversion in favour of the former in the case of an Attack from the *Russians*.

C H A P. X.

Of P R U S S I A.

*Division of
PRUSSIA.*

PRUSSIA an extensive Country is divided into two Parts: One of which from being annexed to the Crown of Poland is called royal Prussia; the other because formerly enjoyed by a Branch of the House of Brandenburg with the Title of Duke has been distinguished by the Name of ducal Prussia. The latter which in Process of Time became subject to the Elector of Brandenburg was not many Years ago erected into a Kingdom: But in Order to understand the History of this Country aright we must say something of the Knights of the Teutonic Order, who subdued, civilized and governed it for many Years.

*The TEUTO-
NICK ORDER
first established
at ACLE.*

Acle known to the Ancients by the Name of *Ptolemais* being besieged in the Year of our Lord 1190 by the Christians a Dysentery broke out in their Army; which for Want of proper Care carried off great Numbers of Soldiers. Some Merchants of *Bremen* and *Lubeck* being grieved at this Misfortune, they with a Sail made a kind of Tent capable of receiving many sick Soldiers: Who before lay upon the Ground exposed to the Air. This charitable Disposition was approved of by many Christian Princes in the Camp; and they thought it their Duty to promote it as much as possible. Hence arose a Society who made it their Business to take Care of sick Soldiers: Which was soon after erected into an Order by Pope *Celestine III.*

*Different
Names of this
Order.*

As the Persons who entered thereinto wore a particular Habit on which was a black Cross they were called Knights of the *Holy Cross*: And taking the *Virgin Mary* for their Patroness they were also called Knights of *St. Mary*. As the first Grand Master of this Order was

was a German it was from thence called also the Teutonic Order. At first it consisted only of Nobility and Priests: But in Process of Time another Class made up of Laymen of a lower Sort was added; and at length a fourth composed of Women who were called Sisters of the Teutonic Order. The three First Grand Masters Henry Walpot of Passenbeim, Otton de Karpen of Bremen, and Herman Bart of Holstein resided at Ptolemais: But upon the Decline of the Affairs of the Christians in the East Herman de Saltza the next Grand Master quitted Ptolemais and made Venice the Place of the Residence It is removed to VENICE. of the Order.

Being a prudent Man and greatly respected he made up the Differences betwixt the Emperor Frederick II. and the Popes Honorius III. and Gregory IX. to the Satisfaction of all Parties. For this Service the Pope made him a Present of a Ring: Which was preserved in the Order and put upon the Finger of every Grand Master at his Election: And the Emperor besides adding an Eagle to the Arms of the Order made Herman a Prince of the Empire, which Honour was enjoyed by all his Successors. The Design of its Institution in the East being put an End to by the Progress of the Saracens Herman, in whose Time although the Teutonic Order was not of more than 21 Years standing it consisted of above two Thousand Knights, quitted as it was before observed Ptolemais: But Work was soon cut for him in the North.

Whilst the Inhabitants of Prussia were under the The PRUSSIAN grossest Idolatry and being without any kind of GO-ANS choose vernment lived according to ancient Tradition wild in WAYDE- the Woods, an old Man named Waydowest made them WEST for sensible from the Example of Bees that a King would their King. be of service to them. Being himself pitched upon by them for King he amongst other Things ordered that every Male should have a Field; that his Wife and Family should assist him in cultivating it; and that all who by Sickness or any Accident were rendered incapable of working should be killed out of the Way. Having afterwards divided the Government betwixt his Sons he took upon himself the Office of Chief Priest; and made some Changes in the Idolatry which prevailed.

Being arrived at a great Age he voluntarily caused himself to be burnt on a funeral Pile as an Offering to the Gods of his Country.

His Sons.

His Sons were twelve *Saymo, Nydro, Sudo, Blavo, Natango, Berto, Galindo, Warmo, Oggo, Pomezo, Colma* and *Lituo*; from whom perhaps the Countries of *Samland, Nadrovia, Sudinia, Sclavonia, Natangia, Bartonia, Galindia, Warmia, Oggerland, Pomesania, Culm* and *Lithuania* had their Names.

Manners of the PRUSSIANS while Heathens.

Of these ancient Times we have very little handed down; but it is pretty certain that the Prussians while Heathens worshipped under Oaks: One of which at *Thorn* being remarkably large stood a long Time after the Conversion of the Inhabitants to Christianity. It was the ancient Custom of the Prussians to sacrifice to their Gods such as were taken Prisoners; of which there cannot be a stronger Proof than that some Persons who in later Times fell into their Hands were offered up as Victims.

The Death of ST. ADALBERT occasions a War with POLAND.

St. Adalbert Archbishop of *Prague*, who went towards the End of the tenth Century to preach the Gospel in *Prussia*, having been assassinated by the Prussians *Boleslaus* King of *Poland* put himself at the Head of an Army; and after destroying the Idol at *Romova* brought away the Body of this Prelate. The War began by *Boleslaus* was continued by three of his Successors; and *Waldemar* II. of *Denmark* marched also against the Prussians: Yet no great Advantage was gained over them.

Some Bishopricks are erected in PRUSSIA.

In the Beginning of the thirteenth Century a Monk named *Christian* being encouraged so to do by *Conrade* Duke of *Masovia* went into *Prussia* to propagate Christianity; and such was his Success that four Bishopricks were soon erected there: namely those of *Warmia, Culm, Pomesania* and *Samland*. It must not however be supposed that the Inhabitants of these Provinces were all converted; for great Opposition was made by the Heathens to the spreading of the Gospel: And had not the new Bishops been supported by the Kings of *Poland* and *Bohemia* they could not have maintained their Ground.

In Order to revenge themselves upon *Conrade* for the Assistance given by him to *Christian* afterwards Bishop of *Culm* the Prussians invaded his Dominions, and committed the utmost Ravages. Two hundred and Fifty Churches were demolished; Infants had their Brains dashed out; Nuns were ravished; and many of his Subjects were carried into Slavery. Touched at these Calamities *Christian* proposed the erecting of an Order of Knights for making War, in Imitation of the Knights of the *Sword* who had distinguished themselves against the Heathens in *Livonia*, upon the Prussians. This Proposal being approved of a new Order was erected, whose Knights from *Dobrin* the Place of their Residence took the Name of *Knights of Dobrin*; but *Conrade* soon found that these Knights were unable to make Head against the Prussians.

Being at a Loss what to do he applied for Help to the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*: Who were glad to shew at the same Time their Zeal against the Enemies of the Christian Faith. Having obtained the Leave they set out for *Culm*: Where a Treaty was concluded, the Conditions of which there being no authentic Copy of it extant have been variously represented. The Friends of the Order say it was agreed that the Knights should have all they could make themselves Masters of: But others insist that what should be conquered in *Prussia* was to be divided betwixt the Knights and *Conrade*.

However this was the Conquest of *Prussia* was begun about the Year 1230; and the Knights behaved so well that in ten Years Time a large Tract of Country which were the Towns of *Thorn*, *Culm*, *Althaus*, *Marienburg* and *Elbing*, fell into their Hands.

The *Teutonic Order* being about the Year strengthened by the Incorporation of the Order of the *Sword* therewith *Suentopulk* Duke of *Pomerania* thought it high Time to put a Stop to its Progress. A War which lasted from the Year 1241 to the Year 1250 ensued; but as the Knights were assisted both by the *Germans* and *Bohemians* *Suentopulk* grew at last weary thereof.

Primsians

The present *Primislaus III.* King of *Bohemia* made one Campaign *Inhabitants* against the *Prussians* in the Year 1254, during which *PRUSSIA* are he laid the Foundation of *Koningsberg*; and another in *of dowers Na* the Year 1254. The same Thing was done in the *sions.* Year 1255 by *Otho Margrave* of *Brandenburg*, who gave the Name of *Brandenburg* his Country to a small Place in *Prussia*. *Thieri* of *Misnia* made also a Campaign in the Year 1272 against the *Prussians*. As these Princes and some others, for the Expeditions against the *Prussians* amounted in the whole to Sixteen, left always some of their People behind them it is not to be wondered at that the present *Inhabitants* of *Prussia* should be such a Medley of different Nations.

War with This War by which the Knights acquired neat all *POMERANIA.* *Prussia* being ended in the Year 1283, another with the Duke of *Pomerania* which lasted near sixty Years was entered into. The Occasion thereof was an Attempt of some Princes of the House of *Pomerania*, namely *Vratislaus*, *Sambor* and *Ratibor*, who had entered into the Order, to join Part of *Prussia* which lay contiguous to the Duchy of *Pomerania* to this Duchy.

MARIEN- In the Beginning of the 14th Century *Sifroi* Grand *BURG is ma* Master made a Place in *Prussia*, called from the *the Residence* *Virgin Mary* Patroness of the Order *Marienburg*, the *of the Order.* Residence of the Order: Which had been for some Time at *Marpurg* in *Germany*.

SIFROI an- In his Time moreover the Knights took Advantage of the following Accident to encrease their *nexes POME-* Dominions. *Peter Suenze* Governor of *Pomerelia* being *RELIA to* disgusted with *Uladislaus* King of *Poland*, he resolved to revenge himself by delivering up this Province with *what before* *Dantzick* its Capital to the *Margraves* of *Brandenburg*. *belonged to the* Hereupon the *Margraves* *John* and *Waldemar* entered *Order.* *Pomerelia* and took Possession of the whole except the Citadel of *Dantzick*. *Boguff* Bailiff of *Pomerelia*, who defended this for *Uladislaus*, finding himself hard pressed wrote to him for Succours. Hereupon *Uladislaus* not being in a Condition to send any ordered him, without considering what was likely to be the Consequence, to apply for Assistance to the Knights of the *Teutonick* Order. By their Help the *Margraves* were driven from before *Dantzick*; but the Knights afterwards

wards obliged *Boguff* to quit this City likewise, because he did not make good his Agreement with them, which was as they said that they should be reimbursed the Expence they had been at. *Uladislaus* accused the Knights of Ingratitude; but instead of regarding his Accusation they gave the *Margraves*, who laid Claim to *Pomerelia*, a Sum of Money to evacuate it and took Possession of the whole thereof.

About the Time this happened, which was in the MICHELLOW Year 1311, *Lescus Duke of Cujavia* ceded to the Knights ceded to the the Province of *Michelow*. This Prince had on being Order, 1311. made Prisoner in *Hungary* by *Wenceslaus King of Bohemia* in order to raise Money for his Ransom, mortgaged this Province to the *Teutonic Order*; and finding himself unable to redeem it he in Consideration of a further Sum put them into Possession thereof.

About the Year 1313 *Herrings* which had for some Herrings Time been used to come in great Quantities upon the leave the Coast of *Prussia* quitted it; and went first upon the Coast PRUSSIAN of *Norway* and afterwards upon the *British Coast*. Coast.

Werner D'Orseln raised in the Year 1324 to the Dig- WERNER nity of Grand Master was involved in the Censures D'ORSELN, which the Court of *Rome* thundered out against the Emperor *Lewis the Bavarian*: Because he sided with this Emperor against the Pope. The Request of a Knight named *John de Bienendorf*, who wanted to make a Campaign in the Year 1330 against the *Lithuanians*, being refused by *Werner* he bespoke a large Knife. When it was made the Cutler asked this Knight if he would not have a Sheath for it? He answered no: For that he intended it should have the most illustrious Sheath in *Prussia*. Not long after he plunged it into the Grand He is stabbed Master's Body as he was coming from evening Prayers, and he died upon the Spot.

An Attempt being made by the *Poles* to recover *War with* *Pomerelia* a bloody Battle was fought near *Ploskow*: POLAND. In which according to the *Polish* Historians who make their own Loss inconsiderable the Order lost 20,000 Men. The Emperor *Charles IV.* made a Journey into *Prussia* on Purpose to accommodate Matters between the *Poles* and the Knights: But the Pleasure of

ending this War was reserved for *Lewis Konig* a Saxon, who succeeded to the Grand Mastership in the Year 1341.

LEWIS KONIG, 1341.
Treaty of
KALISCH.

By a Treaty concluded two Years after at *Kalisch* it was agreed that the Knights should keep *Pomerania*, the Territory of *Culm* and the Province of *Mishelew*: But all that had been taken by them in *Dobrin* and *Cajovia* was to be restored to *Poland*.

War with
LITHUANIA.

This Grand Master began a War with the *Lithuanians*; but being unsuccessful therein and being reproached on this Account by the Knights it gave him so much Uneasiness as to distract him.

HENRY
DUSENER.

Henry Dufener of *Pomerania* the next Successor was successful against the *Lithuanians*: But he in the Year 1351 abdicated the Grand Mastership in Favour of *Henry de Knippenrodde*, who for thirty Years past had had the principal Direction of the Affairs of the Order.

HENRY DE
KNIPPEN-
RODDE.

Henry founded many Schools in *Prussia*, for he was accustomed to say, *Our Order does not want for Money or Dominions; but it has not a sufficient Number of Wise and Honest Men in it.* The *Lithuanian* War being continued he in the Year 1370 gained a signal Victory near *Rudau*: Yet on examining thereto before his Death in the Year 1382 it was found that this War had cost the Order, notwithstanding there had been only this one Action of any Consequence, above 150,000 Men. The principal Cause thereof which was the Idolatry of the *Lithuanians* being likewise removed, for *Jagellan* their Duke in order to pave the Way for his Advancement to the *Polish* Throne had promised to introduce Christianity into *Lithuania*, the next Grand Master *Conrade de Jungingen* concluded a Treaty of Peace with *Jagellan* in the Year 1404.

CONRADE DE
JUNGINGEN.

During his Grand Mastership, who was of a mild and peaceable Disposition, the Order became so rich and flourishing that he bought the *New March* of the Emperor *Sigismund* for sixty thousand Florins of Gold. In his Time the Order had 55 walled Towns, forty-eight Castles and eighteen Thousand Parishes; and its certain Revenue besides some casual Sums amounted to 800,000 Guilders.

The Order is
very rich and
flourishing.

Ulrick

Ulrick de Junginzen, who succeeded in the Year 1407, ULRICK DE JUNGINGEN, being of a quite different Temper he resolved to break the Peace with the *Lithuanians*: And having for this Purpose taken the Field began with sending to *Jagellon* two Swords dipped in Blood. This Prince on receiving these 1407. War with LITHUANIA. said he looked upon them as an Earnest of Victory: It being usual for the vanquished to deliver up his Arms to the Conqueror.

On the 15th of July 1410 the famous Battle of *Tanneburg* in which this Blood-thirsty Grand Master lost his Life was fought. The Loss therein on the Side of the *Poles* was much the greater; but their Army being before vastly superior they remained Masters of the Field and made 14000 Prisoners. Battle of TANNEBURG, 1410.

As there could be no Election while the Confusion hereby occasioned lasted, for not less than 40,000 Knights fell in the Action, *Henry Reusse* took upon him to do the Office of Grand Master. This Victory being pushed by *Jagellon Dantzick, Elbing, Thorn, Culm, Koningsberg* and a great Part of *Prussia* soon fell into his Hands. Having defeated the Knights a second Time at *Carnovia*. *Jagellon* like a wise Prince thought it the best Way to accept the advantageous Terms of Peace offered. By a Treaty concluded in the Year 1411 he consented to restore all he had taken in *Prussia*. But the Knights were to pay him a large Sum in ready Money. It was moreover stipulated that *Samogitia*, which during the Life of *Witold* the present Grand Duke was to continue annexed to *Lithuania*, should after his Death return to the Order. HENRY REUSSE. 1411. Battle of CARNOVIA. Treaty with LITHUANIA.

The Conduct of *Reusse* being afterwards very bad he was degraded and imprisoned during Life, and *Michael Kuchenmeister* was elected Grand Master; but his Election gave Rise to a Division in the Order. The Nobility, whose Party was called by the Name of the *Golden Piece*, espoused the Interest of the degraded Grand Master: The lower part of the Order, who formed another Party called the *Ship of Gold*, attached themselves to the new Grand Master. The Grand Mastership being during these Troubles a very disagreeable Office *Michael* after undergoing the Fatigue thereof nine Years resigned it in the Year 1422. MICHAEL KUCHENMEISTER, 1413.

PAUL POE-
LIZER,
1422.

Paul Pœlizer the next Successor a *Corinthian* by Birth put a Stop to the Persecution of the *Hussites*, who had been before rigorously treated. He renewed in the Year 1436 with *Ladislaus* Son of *Joyellin* the Treaty made with his Father. Abandoning himself afterwards to Incontinence, so as not only to dishonour the Wives and Daughters of his Subjects but to throw such Fathers and Husbands into Prison as upbraided him; he was unaccountably degraded at *Marienburg* in the Year 1440.

CONRADE
D'ERLICK-
SHAUSEN,
1440.

In the Time of *Conrade D'Erlickshausen* who was elected in his Stead the Knights of *Frankonia*, *Saxonia* and *Bavaria* entered into a Combination, and nothing less would satisfy them than the excluding of the Knights of all other Countries from all Offices. A Confederacy being hereupon entered into by the *Towns* of *Dantzick*, *Thorn* and *Elbing*, and by the *Bishops* of *Culm*, *Pommern* and *Samland*, it came in the Year 1450 to an open Rupture. As the combined Knights prevailed the Confederacy was declared void by *Conrade*; and in Order to please the former he set a large Fine on those Knights who had entered into the latter: Which so exasperated the *Towns* and *Bishopricks* above-mentioned that they put themselves under the Protection of *Casimir IV.* of *Poland*.

War with
POLAND.

Hence arose a cruel War which lasted from the Year 1454 to the Year 1467. In this the Knights behaved very well: But the *Poles* in the End too powerful forced them to give up the *Towns* of *Dantzick*, *Culm*, *Thorn*, *Elbing*, *Marienburg*, and the *Provinces* of *Ermland* and *Mischlow*; and they moreover consented to do Homage to *Poland* for the rest of *Prussia*. The Ravages committed in *Prussia* during this War were so great that not above 3000 Villages were left. From the Division of *Prussia* pursuant to the Treaty made at the Conclusion thereof arose the Distinction of *Polish Prussia* and *Prussia* of the *Teutonic Order*; nor have the Knights been ever able to recover what was thereby ceded.

Part of
PRUSSIA
ceded to Po-
LAND.

HENRY
REUSSEN.

Henry Reussen of *Blawan* the next Grand Master deserted for two Years the taking upon himself the Title, hoping thereby to be exempted from doing Homage to *Poland*: But the Artifice would not do for he was in the End obliged to do this publicly.

A Dispute arose betwixt *Henry Reffle* of *Rieffenberg*, HENRY REFFLE, who succeeded in the Year 1470, and *Casimir IV.* of Poland concerning the Bishoprick of *Ermland*. The latter would have promoted *Stawislaus Oporowski* to this See; but *Henry* insisted upon the Right of presenting and it was expected it would have come to a Rupture. This was however prevented by *Cosmin's* suffering *Nicholas de Thungen* the Person nominated by *Henry* to take Possession thereof. 1470.

In the Year 1477 *Martin Truches* of *Wetzhausen* was raised to the Grand Mastership. He for a long Time refused to do Homage to *Poland*; but in order to prevent a War he was in the End forced to comply. MARTIN TRUCHES, 1477.

At his Death in the Year 1489 *Juhn Tieffen* a *Swiss* was raised to the Dignity of Grand Master. His Austerity of Life was so remarkable that he would never lie in a Bed nor wear any Linen: And he had these Words *O God of Heaven* always in his Mouth. He died in the Year 1497 as he was going into *Walachia* to the Assistance of the *Poles*. JOHN TIEFFEN, 1489.

After his Death the Knights desirous to throw off if possible their Dependence upon *Poland* resolved for the Time to come to choose their Grand Masters out of powerful Families. *Frederick Duke of Saxony* the Person now chosen had soon an Opportunity of doing this: For the *Poles* who thrice within a short Time had changed their King were so divided amongst themselves that they were in no Condition to compel him to do Homage. Upon the Death of this Prince in the Year 1510 the Election fell upon *Albert Margrave of Brandenburg*. FREDERICK DUKE OF SAXONY, 1497.

Sigismund I. of *Poland* would fain have persuaded this Prince who was his Sister's Son to do Homage to him: But he absolutely refused it; and finding a War unavoidable he in order to support himself against so powerful an Enemy sold the *New March* to *Jacobus* Elector of *Brandenburg*. ALBERT OF BRANDENBURG. 1510.

Hostilities being commenced by the *Poles* in the Year 1520 they took *Holland*, *Brandenburg* and *Maxionwerder*. This unfortunate Beginning made *Albert* think of suing for Peace; but being reinforced by 2500 *Danes* he resolved to continue the War; and that Money might not be wanting he for a large Sum to be paid

T. 3. im-

immediately agreed to exempt the Knights of Livonia from all Dependence upon himself as Head of the Order. In the following Year 1300 Germans were sent to his Assistance, who after failing in an Attempt upon *Dantzick* ravaged *Pomerelia*: But upon the coming up of the *Polish* Army they were forced to retire with the utmost Precipitation. Being thus deprived of his Auxiliaries *Albert* in the Year 1522 concluded a Truce for four Years. The Negotiations for a final Determination of all Disputes entered into soon after came to nothing: But Conferences being renewed in the Year 1525 at *Breslau* in *Silesia* a Treaty was concluded.

PRUSSIA erected into a secular DUTCHY, 1525.

By this that Part of *Prussia* which belonged to the *Teutonic* Order was to be formed into a secular Dutchy for *Albert*; to be held however as a Fief of the *Polish* Crown, and to be annexed on failure of Issue of himself and of his Brothers to this Crown. This Appropriation of what belonged to the Order being exclaimed against by the Knights *Albert* was put under the Ban of the Empire; but as the *Poles* protected him no Person would attempt to carry this Sentence into Execution.

ALBERT embraces the Protestant Religion.

About the same Time *Albert* embraced the *Lutheran* Religion; and having renounced his Vow of Celibacy married *Anna Maria* of *Brunswick*. In the Year 1527 such *Prussian* Knights as were dissatisfied with the Behaviour of *Albert* and others who lived out of *Prussia* elected another Grand Master. *Walter Cronberg* who made *Mergenstein* the Place of Residence was the Person chosen; and the Emperor *Charles V.* whom *Albert's* Conduct had provoked to the last Degree considered him in his Dignity. Not long after a new Liturgy conformable to the Confession of *Augsburg* to which most of the Bishops subscribed was composed: And in order to introduce the Protestant Religion as fast as possible into *Prussia* an University, in which all the Professors were to be *Lutherans*, was founded at *Koningsberg* in the Year 1544.

Disputes between the OSIANDRISTS and MORLIANISTS, 1549.

A new System of Justification having been published in the Year 1549, by *Oslander* a Favourite Divine of *Albert's*, a Priest named *Morlin* who presumed to preach publicly against this was banished; Nor could *Albert* notwithstanding many of the Clergy adhered to the

he Opinion of *Morlin* and great Interest was made he prevailed upon to recall him. Instead thereof *Paul Scalichius* who was in great Credit at Court took the Advantage of *Albert's* Incapacity, grown by Reason of his advanced Age quite Childish, to oppress the Followers of *Morlin*.

As no Redress could be had from *Albert's* Complaint SIGISMUND was made to *Sigismund II.* of Poland; who issued a ALL OF POLAND Commission to enquire into this and some other Matters interposes, which had for many Years disturbed *Prussia*. *Scalichius* had the good Luck by going Ambassador into France to avoid the impending Danger: But *Matthias Horst*, *John Schreel* and *John Funk* his Creatures, all Bigots to *Ostendism*, were beheaded at *Koningsburg* on the 28th of October 1566; and an End was thereby put to the theological Disputes with which *Prussia* had for a long Time been distracted. Two Years after *Albert* died and *Albert Frederick* his Son succeeded.

Upon the Investiture of this Prince the Succession, ALBERT II, before limited to the Issue of *Albert* his Father, and 1568. his Brothers, was enlarged so as to take in *Joachim Frederick* Elector of *Brandenburg* and his Issue. *Albert* was in the Year 1573 married to *Mary Eleanor* of *Cleves*; and hence came the Claim of the House of *Brandenburg* to the Duchies of *Juliers* and *Cleves*. The Series of *Albert's* had been for some Time much impaired; but growing afterwards quite incapable of governing his paternal Uncle *George Frederick* took upon himself the Administration of Affairs. Upon the Death of *George* without Issue in the Year 1604 *Joachim Frederick* Elector of *Brandenburg* was invested by the King of *Poland* with the Regency. At his Death two Years after *John Sigismund* his eldest Son, who besides being Heir to *Prussia* upon Failure of the Issue of *Albert* had married the eldest Daughter of *Albert* by the Princess of *Cleves*, succeeded to the Electorate of *Brandenburg* and to the Regency of *Prussia*. In the Year 1611 all Hopes of *Albert's* Recovering being lost *John* obtained in Right of his Wife, for *Albert* had no Sons, the Investiture of the Duchy of *Prussia* for himself and his three Brothers. In the Year 1618 *Albert* died.

T 4

About

JOHN SIGIS-
MOND Elec-
tor of BRAN-
DENBURG,
1611.

About the Year 1614 *John* embraced the Doctrine of *Calvin* and this was soon after introduced into his Dominions. The Family of *Cleves* becoming extinct in his Time *John* with the Assistance of the Elector *Palatine*, notwithstanding all the Opposition made thereto by the House of *Saxony*, took Possession of the Duchy of *Cleves*. He died in the Year 1619 and *George William* his Son succeeded.

GEORGE
1619.
War concern-
ing Religion.

In his Time the Edict for restoring all to the Catho-
licks in *Germany* which had been taken from them since
the Treaty of *Passau* was published; in opposing which
as it extended to many Benefices in his Dominions
George was much interested. As *Sweden* came into the
War which arose on this Occasion *George* in order to
facilitate his Endeavours to relieve *Magdeburg* put
Spandau and *Custrin* into the Hands of *Gustavus Adol-
phus*; but all was insufficient to prevent *Falk* from be-
coming Master of *Magdeburg*. This General having
afterwards thrown himself into *Saxony* *George* joined
Gustavus with a large Body of Troops, and had a con-
siderable Share in the Victory gained near *Leipsich*.
The Situation of Affairs in *Germany* being much altered
by the Death of *Gustavus* *George* came into the separ-
ate Peace concluded betwixt the Emperor and the
Elector of *Saxony* at *Pregus* in the Year 1635. He died
in the Year 1646.

FREDERICK
1646.

Frederick William his Son and Successor, who was
one of the most illustrious Princes of his Time, did for
the Peace of *Germany* give up by the Treaty of *Osnaburg*
that Part of *Pomerania*, since called *Swedish Pomerania*,
which fell to the House of *Brandenburg* at the Death
of *Bogislaus XIV.* the last Duke of *Pomerania*. To
make *Frederick* Amends for this the Bishopricks of
Halberstadt and *Minden* were secularized in his Favour
by the Germanick Body; and the Reversion of the Arch-
bishoprick of *Magdeburg*, which was to be secularized
when it fell in, was likewise granted to him.

War with
POLAND.

On the breaking out of the War in the Year 1655
betwixt *Charles X.* of *Sweden* and *John II.* of *Poland*
Frederick joined with the former; and contributed a good
deal to the Success of the Battle of *Warsaw*. But a
sepa-

separate Peace was afterwards concluded betwixt him and John: Of which the principal Article was that Frederick and his Descendants should enjoy Prussia independently of Poland.

He afterwards acted against the Swedes and took Prussia from them a great Part of Pomerania: By the Treaty however of Oliva made in the Year 1660, which confirmed to Frederick the Sovereignty of Prussia, this was restored to Sweden. Three Years after notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by some Prussians, who were unwilling to lose the Right of appealing from their own Government to the Polish Crown, Frederick was publicly declared at Königsberg to be independent Sovereign of Prussia; and received the Homage of the States as such.

The Duchy of Cleves having suffered from the French Troops, which in the Year 1672 attacked the Netherlands, Frederick sent some Troops to the Assistance of the Emperor Leopold; but finding nothing else would save this Duchy, for the French immediately over-ran the whole of it, he in the next Year made a separate Peace with France. The Terms of this were: That the French Troops should evacuate all Places in the Duchy of Cleves, and the Counties of Mark and Ravensberg, except Wesel and Rees; and pay Frederick within a Time limited 1,800,000 Livres.

In order to stop the Progress of the French, who content with invading the Netherlands had attacked the Electorates of Triers and Palatine, Frederick entered in the Year 1674 into an Alliance with the Emperor and the States General; and putting himself at the Head of his Troops penetrated in Conjunction with the Imperialists into Alsace. The Conduct however of the Imperial General Bournonville was so very bad that they could not make good their Winter Quarters there: And Frederick was moreover forced to return home to defend his own Dominions against the Swedes; who had taken the Opportunity of his Absence to attack these.

He arrived at Magdeburg in June 1675 before the Swedes were aware of it, and fell upon them near Belling with so much Vigour that 15000 were killed upon the Spot.

*Battle of
BELLIN.*

1676.
1677.
1678.

Spot; and General *Wrangel* was glad to retire with the Remains of the *Swedish Army* into *Mecklenburg*. In the same Year *Frederick* made himself Master of *Wollin* and *Walgata*; and in the following Year of *Anclam* and *Demin*. *Stetin* was taken by him after a bloody Siege in the next Campaign; and the *Swedes* were in the Year 1678 driven from *Stralsund* and *Grüpswald* the only Places which remained to them in *Pomerania*. Marching after this in the Midst of Winter into *Prussia* *Frederick* repulsed General *Horn* who had penetrated thereinto with great Loss; and the *Swedes* who had sustained considerable Losses on all Sides must have suffered still more, if the Success of *France* had not laid the Empire and *Holland* under a Necessity of making Peace. As the Terms insisted upon by *France* for *Sweden* were disagreeable to *Frederick*, who as he had driven the *Swedes* out of *Pomerania* was unwilling to have again such dangerous Neighbours, he would not accede to the Treaty of *Nimagueu*.

*Treaty of
ST. GER-
MANS, 1679.*

By a Treaty signed at *St. Germain* in the Year 1679, to which *Frederick* was forced to consent, it was agreed that the *Oder* should for the Time to come be the Boundary of the Dominions of the Elector of *Brandenburg* and the King of *Sweden* in *Pomerania*. *Dam* and *Gotnow* were indeed to be ceded to *Sweden*; but the latter was to continue in *Frederick's* Hands as a Mortgage for 50,000 Crowns. It was moreover stipulated that all the Toll of *Colberg*, in which the *Swedes* had formerly been Shareers, should for the future belong to the *Prussians*; and that *France* should upon his restoring some Towns belonging to *Sweden* pay *Frederick* 300,000 Crowns. This truly great Prince died in the Year 1688 and *Frederick* his Son succeeded.

*FREDERICK
King of
PRUSSIA,
1688.*

This Prince entered into the Alliance against *France* in the Year 1689; and the Troops he furnished were of great Service in *Italy*, *Germany* and the *Netherlands*. The shelter he gave to the *French Refugees* served greatly to augment his Forces; and helped a good deal to the Establishment of Arts and Sciences of which he was a great Promoter in his Dominions. In the Year 1701 he went with his Son into *Prussia*; and laying aside the Title of Duke was crowned King of *Prussia*.

Being

Being immediately acknowledged by the Emperor *He joins in a*
 and his Allies as King *Frederick* in Return came near *War against*
 tily into the War which arose on account of the Spanish *FRANCE,*
 Succession; and his Troops had a considerable Share in *1701.*
 the principal Events thereof: The Court of *Warsaw*
 made a great Difficulty of doing it; but on *Frederick's*
 declaring that the Right of *Poland to Prussia*, in Case the
 Electoral Family of *Brandenburg* should become extinct,
 would not be in the least affected by his taking the Title
 of King thereof he was at length acknowledged as such
 by this Court.

Upon the Death of *William III.* of *England* *Frederick* *He claims the*
 laid Claim to the Dominions of the House of *Orange*: But *Succession of*
 his Right thereto was disputed by several Princes. Some *ORANGE,*
 Parts of these Dominions he took Possession of by Force; *1702.*
 the Rights of some Claimants he purchased: And that
 of others was left to a future Discussion. The Pre-
 tensions of the House of *Brandenburg* to this Succession
 were founded upon the Marriage of *Louisa Henrietta*
 Daughter to *Henry Frederick* Prince of *Orange* to the late
 Elector: But it should be observed that this Elector left
 no Children by this Princess, *Frederick* being by a se-
 cond Wife.

As the great Passis *Frederick* took to bring about a *Treaty of*
 Peace betwixt all the Powers at War were ineffectual *UTRECHT.*
 he had agreed upon Terms for a Treaty betwixt himself
 and *France*; which was signed at *Utrecht* on the same Day
 that Treaties were signed by others of the Allies: But his
 Death in the preceding *February* robbed him of the Sa-
 tisfaction of seeing the finishing Hand put thereto. The
 principal Articles of this Treaty were: That their most
 Christian and Catholick Majesties should acknowledge
Frederick as King; and that *Spain* should cede to him
 the upper *Guelderland*, with this Condition that the In-
 habitants should not be disturbed in the Exercise of the
 Catholick Religion: The County of *Kessel* with the
 Prefecture of *Krischenbeck* were also to be ceded to him;
 and *France* agreed to acknowledge him as Sovereign of
Neuschattel: *Frederick* on his Part ceded to *France* the
 Principality of *Orange* and *Chateau-Beliard* in the *Franche*
Compte: and took upon himself to satisfy the Demands
 of all Persons thereupon.

Frederick

FREDERICK
II. 1713.

The SWEDES
driven out
of POME-
BANIA.

Frederick William his Son and Successor after signing this Treaty endeavoured to restore Peace in the North, and with a View thereto Negotiations were entered into; but as *Charles XII.* of Sweden would listen to no Terms he joined his Troops to those of the Allies and the Swedes were driven quite out of Pomerania. Upon the Division of Swedish Pomerania afterwards made this Prince had for his Share the City of *Stettin*. From this Time *Frederick* lessened the Magnificence and Pomp which had prevailed at Court in his Father's Time; and applied the Savings that arose from thence to the augmenting of his Forces.

Conduct of
FREDERICK
with Regard
to PRUSSIA.

Frederick was moreover very intent upon the peopling of Prussia: Great part of which by its almost-constant Wars, and by a Plague that carried off great Numbers in the Years 1709 and 1710, was become quite a Desert. His Father had done something toward this: But the Glory of bringing so good a Work to Perfection was reserved for this Prince. By giving great Encouragement to all Foreigners who would settle there many Families were induced to come out of *Suabia* and *Franconia*; and the Protestants of *Saltzberg* flocked thither in such Numbers that according to the best Calculation they amounted to 17000 Persons. Instead of drawing what Revenue he could out of Prussia, as some rapacious Monarchs would have done, *Frederick* like a true Father of his People spent about 6,000,000 Rixdollars of his own Money therein. These Methods succeeded so well that by the End of the Year 1719 fifty new Towns and four hundred Villages were built. Pleased therewith he from this Time to the Year 1735 never received a Farthing from Prussia: But in some Years sent thither out of his own Coffers 20,000 Rixdollars or more for the Encouragement of further Buildings. Notwithstanding this uncommon Liberality and his keeping up a vast Army *Frederick William*, who was in other Respects very frugal, at his Death in the Year 1740 left *Frederick* his Son and Successor in the Possession of full Coffers.

FREDERICK
III. 1740.

Upon the Death of the Emperor *Charles VI.* which happened soon after his Accession this Prince resolved to
assist

assert his Right to Part of *Silesia*. Of which his Ancestors had been deprived by the House of *Austria*. Upon his entering this Dutchy he declared himself ready to come to an Accommodation with the Archduchess; but as the Court of *Vienna*, relying upon the Guaranty of the *Pragmatick Sanction* whereinto so many Powers had entered, would hear nothing of ceding any Part thereof Hostilities were commenced.

The Battle of *Molwitz* fought in April 1741, which was a very bloody one, completed the Conquest of *Silesia*; and *Frederick* being victorious in another Battle fought near *Gassau* in *Bohemia* the Queen of *Hungary*, who found herself attacked on all Sides, consented to give up to him by the Treaty of *Breslaw* concluded May 1741, almost all *Silesia*.

The Dominions of the King of *Prussia* consist of the Marquisate of *Brandenburg*, the greater Part of *Pomerania*, the Dutchy of *Magdeburg*, the Principalities of *Minden* and *Halberstadt*, the Dutchy of *Cleves*, the Counties of *Mark*, *Ravensberg*, *Lingen*, *Neuschattel*, *Valengin* and *Tecklenburg*, and the Prefecture of *Quadrinberg*. *Coblenz*, *Pestau* and some other Places in *Lower Saxony* belong also to him; and notwithstanding its being a free imperial Town he keeps a Garrison in *Nordhausen*. All these Dominions together with *Prussia* and great Part of *Silesia* make his *Prussian Majesty* very powerful; and if some of them did not lie at so great a Distance from the rest he would be much more so.

With regard to the Empire in General it concerns his *Prussian Majesty* as a Member thereof to consult the Interest and preserve the Constitution of the *Germanick Body*. As to the House of *Austria* in Particular it is for his Interest to guard against its becoming so powerful; For as the Cession of *Silesia* may be looked upon by this House as extorted by him it will undoubtedly, if it finds itself in a Condition so to do, be glad of an Opportunity to attempt the Recovery thereof.

Part of the *Prussian* Dominions border upon the *United Provinces*. But as the Troops of *Prussia*, which are looked upon to be the best in *Europe*, are much more numerous than those of *Holland* she is in no Danger from thence.

thence. Upon the whole, for the other Powers of *Europe* would be unwilling to see one of these Powers make Conquests upon the other, it is for the mutual Interest of *Prussia* and *Holland*, who are capable of giving great Assistance to each other, to be upon good Terms: And it should be always remembered that a War betwixt these two Powers may prove fatal to the *Protestant Religion*.

POLAND.

Prussia is from its Situation liable to be attacked by the *Poles*: Yet unless these should be assisted by some other Power they would in all Probability get nothing but Blows by attacking it. On the other Hand as the King of *Prussia* cannot pass by Land from *Brandenburg* into *Prussia* without crossing *Polish Prussia*, and as the *Poles* are capable of assisting him in Case of a War with *Russia* or the House of *Austria*, it will always be for his Interest to be in Amity with them.

RUSSIA.

The *Russians* could easily over-run *Prussia*; but whilst the Jealousy betwixt these and the *Swedes* subsists it is not likely that they should attack *Prussia*, except its Master should attempt to extend his Dominions on this Side: Which as there is no Probability of his succeeding it would, for *Prussia* itself would be thereby endangered, be Madness in him to think of.

SWEDEN.

The *Swedes* do without Doubt look with an evil Eye upon the Acquisitions of his *Prussian Majesty* in *Pomerania*; but he is so strong on this Side that they know it would be in vain for them to attempt the regaining of any Thing there. On the contrary it is for the Interest of his *Prussian Majesty* to be upon good Terms with the *Swedes*; because they can make a powerful Diversion in his Favour if he should be attacked by the *Russians*.

DENMARK.

His *Prussian Majesty* can scarce have any Reason to Quarrel with the King of *Denmark*. On the contrary the latter is capable of being an useful Ally to him in case of a War with the *Swedes* the former ought to cultivate a good Understanding with him. It is moreover for the Interest of his *Prussian Majesty*, although the Trade of his Subjects on their own Bottoms is not very considerable, that the Passage of the *Sound* should continue as it is at present.

Then

There seems to be but little Connexion of Interest GREAT- betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Prussia* except so far as Trade BRITAIN. is concerned: It however concerns his *Prussian Majesty* to be upon good Terms with the King of *Great-Britain*, because it is always in the Power of a *British Fleet* to annoy such Parts of his Dominions as are accessible by Sea.

It is for his *Prussian Majesty's* Interest to be in Amity FRANCE. with *France*, that he may in case of a Quarrel with the House of *Austria* have the Assistance of *France*: Yet it concerns him, so far at least as the Preservation of the Balance of Power may make it necessary, to guard against the too great Aggrandisement of the *French King*.

C H A P.

C H A P. XI.
Of P O L A N D.

POLAND anciently inhabited by the *Sarmatians* and afterwards by the *Scythians* took its Name from the Flatness of the Country, *Pols* in the Language of the Natives signifying a Plain. Some however are of Opinion that the Word *Polaki* means Descendants from *Lechus*. The Ancestors of the *Poles* dwelt formerly in *Tartary*; for when the *Germans* overran the *Roman Empire* the ancient Inhabitants of *Poland* took Possession of *Germany*; and so left Room for their Neighbours the *Tartars*, who laid the Foundation of a new State in *Poland* about the Year of *CHRIST 550.*

LECHUS,
550.

Lechus the Leader of these is said to have built the City of *Gnesna*, which Word signifies in the *Polish* Tongue a Nest, and to have made it the Place of his Residence; because having found an Eagle's Nest, on the Spot where this City stands he took it for a good Omen. It is probable that he for the same Reason caused an Eagle to be born in the Arms of his new State.

POLAND
governed by a
Duke.

The first Governors of this new State, which comprehended no more than what goes by the Name of greater and lesser *Poland*, did not take upon themselves the Title of King but had that of Duke.

Afterwards by
WAYWODES;

In Process of Time upon the Extinction of the Family of *Lechus*, of the Duration or Achievements of which we have no clear Account, the *Poles* were governed by twelve Persons called *Waywodes*; but this Form of Government being on account of the Divisions it was liable to found inconvenient, the Sovereignty of *Poland* was about the Year 700 conferred upon a Person named *Cracus*, who took upon himself the Title of Prince.

Cracus after rectifying many Disorders of the State built **CRACUS**, a City which was called after him *Cracow*, and made it 700. the Place of his Residence.

He was assassinated by *Lechus* his youngest Son; but **LECHUS II.** the Parricide being discovered *Lechus* who had usurped the Sovereignty was deposed and banished.

To him succeeded in the Year 750 *Venda* his Sister. **VENDA, 750.** This Princess after vanquishing *Ritiger* a German Prince, who had made her an Offer of Marriage, out of a blind Superstition drowned herself in the *Vistula*.

Upon her Death twelve *Waywodes* or *Palatines* again **LESCUS I.** took upon themselves the Administration of Affairs: But not long after a Goldsmith named *Premislaus* was in Return for his important Services against the *Moravians*, who had made an Irruption into *Poland*, elected Prince; and took upon himself the Name of *Lescus*. At his Death in the Year 776 without Issue it was resolved that the Person who should win in a Horse-race to be run should succeed.

In order to gain his Point one of the Candidates **LESCUS II.** strewed Iron Hooks upon the Course, by which Means 776. the Horses of the others were lamed and he came in first; but this Trick being discovered he was beheaded upon the Field; and a certain Peasant named *Lescus* who had run the Race on Foot and came in next to this Cheat was declared Prince of the *Poles*. This Prince was according to most Historians slain about the Year 804 in a Battle fought with *Charlemain*.

Lescus his Son and Successor accommodated Matters **LESCUS III.** with *Charlemain*. 804.

The next Successor was *Papiel* the Son of *Lescus* III. **POPIEL I.**

This Prince was succeeded by *Papiel* his Son, who at **POPIEL II.** the Instigation of his Wife caused all his paternal Uncles to be assassinated and would not suffer them to be buried: But this Act of Cruelty was signally punished; for if Report says true there came from the dead Bodies Mice which devoured him and his Wife and Children.

During the Interregnum which followed upon this remarkable Instance of *Divine Revenge* the Nation was **PIASTUS,** thrown into great Confusion: But at length in the Year 830 a Peasant named *Piastus*, from whose Name the 830.

Pole: have since called every Prince who has been elected from among the Natives a *Piast*, was fixed upon. The Descendants of this Prince who lived to the Age of 120 Years enjoyed the Sovereignty many Years; and from him sprung the Families of the Dukes of *Lignitz* and *Brig* in *Silesia* which but lately became extinct.

ZIMOVITUS 905. *Zimovitus* Son of *Piastus* who began to reign in the Year 905 was succeeded by his Son *Lesus*.

LESUS IV. To him who died in the Year 921 succeeded *Zimovitus* his Son.

ZIMOMISLUS, 921. *Micislaus* the only Son of this Prince, who was born blind, being about the Age of seven Years all at once restored to his Sight, it was looked upon as an Omen that the Darkness of the Heathen Superstition would be dispelled by the Light of the Gospel.

MICISLAUS I. 962. The Conjecture was not vain; for *Micislaus* having after his Accession in the Year 962 married several Wives by whom he had no Children, he was persuaded by some Germans that if he would embrace Christianity he would certainly beget Children.

Introduction of Christianity into POLAND. 999. Being hereupon baptized *Micislaus* introduced the Christian Religion into Poland, and also the Custom that when in saying Mass the Gospel is read the Men draw their Scimitars half Way, in order to show their Readiness to fight in Defence thereof.

BOLESLAUS I. *Boleslaus Chrobry* Son of *Micislaus*, who succeeded in the Year 999, was honoured by the Emperor *Otto III.* with the Title of King; and this Emperor likewise gave up all his Pretensions to Poland, as an Acknowledgement for the civil Treatment he received from *Boleslaus* when he visited pursuant to a Vow made in a Fit of Sickness the Tomb of *Aldebert* Bishop of *Crusna*. *Boleslaus* afterwards gained great Reputation and made vast Conquests in the Wars he waged against *Russia*, *Bohemia*, *Prussia* and *Saxony*. Before his Death in the Year 1025 he instituted a Council of twelve to assist in the Affairs of Government.

MICISLAUS II. 1025. *Micislaus* his Son and Successor lost the greatest Part of what his Father had conquered; and amongst the rest *Moravia* which was taken from him by the *Bohemians*. He died in the Year 1034.

As *Casimir* Son and Successor of *Mieszko* was quite young his Mother *Riva* had for some time the Administration of Affairs; but finding that the *Poles* were quite dissatisfied with her Conduct she fled with her Son, and he went into a Monastery in *France*.

The Confusion which followed amongst other ill Consequences gave *Mazas* an Opportunity of obtaining the Sovereignty of the Province of *Masovia*; and it continued for many Years independent of the Polish Crown. The *Poles* afterwards invited *Casimir* to the Throne; and in order to obtain a Discharge from his Monastick Vow of the Pope they all except the Nobility and Clergy promised to pay annually a Penny each towards the Maintaining of a perpetual Lamp in *St. Peter's* at *Rome*, and to have their Heads shaved like Monks. *Casimir* after taking upon himself the Government defeated *Mazas*; and in some Measure restored the publick Tranquillity.

Boleslaus his Son surnamed the *Hardy*, who succeeded in the Year 1058, was in the Beginning of his Reign successful against the *Bohemians*, *Prussians* and *Russians*; but abandoning himself to Voluptuousness and Debauchery he was after being in vain admonished excommunicated by *Stanislaus* Bishop of *Cracow*. Entaged hereat *Boleslaus* caused this Prelate to be beheaded at the Altar; but it cost him dear: For being excommunicated by the Pope he finding himself universally hated fled in the Year 1082 out of the Kingdom, and as it is said killed himself with his own Hands.

His Brother and Successor *Uladislaus* for fear of obliging the Pope, who had forbid him to do this, did not take the Title of King. His Reign was full of domestick as well as foreign Troubles; but he happily surmounted them all. He died in the Year 1103.

Boleslaus his Son and Successor was a brave Prince understood the Art of War well. He defeated the Emperor *Henry V.* with great Loss near *Hunsfeldt*, and of the 47 pitched Battles he fought lost only the last which was against the *Russians*. His ill Success in this being owing to the Cowardice of the *Waywode* of *Cracow* *Boleslaus* sent this *Waywode* a *Harc-stein* and a *Distaff*:

U 2

Which

Which so mortified him that he hanged himself. *Boleslaus* who never outgrew the Uneasiness this Defeat gave him died in the Year 1139; and the Kingdom was pursuant to his Will divided betwixt his four Sons.

ULADISLAUS II. 1139. As a Foundation was hereby laid for Jealousies *Uladislaus* the eldest, who was chosen Prince, endeavoured to rob his Brothers of their Shares; but instead of being able to do this he lost what belonged to himself and was driven out of *Poland*.

BOLESLAUS IV. 1146. Upon this, which happened in the Year 1146, *Boleslaus* his Brother surnamed the *Curl'd* was chosen Prince of *Poland*. He had a long War with the Emperors *Cunrade III.* and *Frederick I.* who both attempted to restore *Uladislaus*. For the Sake of Peace it was at last agreed that *Boleslaus* should keep *Poland*, but that *Silesia* should belong to *Uladislaus*. This Province was in Process of Time divided into several Dutchies, and became in the End subject to *Bohemia*. *Boleslaus* was afterwards, his Army having been by the Treachery of a Guide led into a Bog, routed with great Loss by the *Prussians*.

MICISLAUS, III. 1174. At the Death of *Boleslaus* in the Year 1174 *Micislaus* his Brother, surnamed on the Account of his great Age the *Old*, succeeded: But he rendered himself so odious by his ill Conduct that he was deposed in the fourth Year of his Reign; and *Casimir* his Brother was fixed upon for Prince.

CASIMIR II. 1178. *Casimir* is remarkable for having subdued *Prussia* and made it tributary. He died in the Year 1194.

LESCLUS V. 1194. The Right of *Lesclus* Son of *Casimir* was disputed by the deposed *Micislaus* until the Death of the latter in the Year 1213. Nay this Dispute was continued for some Time after by *Uladislaus* Son of *Micislaus*: But he was in the End forced to leave *Lesclus* in Possession of *Poland*. In his Time the *Tartars*, who afterwards committed great Ravages in *Poland*, made their first Inroad into *Russia*. *Lesclus* had also a War with *Sumenpolk* Governor of *Pomerania* who took up Arms against him: Which ended in the Loss of this Province. In this Reign likewise *Conrade* Brother of *Lesclus*, to whom the Provinces of *Masovia* and *Cujavia* were subject, finding himself unable to make Head against the *Prussian* called

called to his Assistance the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, who had been lately driven by the *Saracens* out of *Syria*. In order to obtain their Assistance he ceded *Culm* to these Knights; and it was also agreed that they should have half the Conquests made in *Prussia*. Hereby a Foundation was laid for the Wars which afterwards arose betwixt the *Teutonic Order* and the *Poles*. *Lescus* died in the Year 1226; and his Son *Boleslaus* surnamed the *Chast* succeeded.

In his Time the *Tartars* after committing great Ravages in *Poland* made an Inroad into *Silesia*; and in a Battle fought near *Lignitz* slew so many of the *Inhabitants* that nine large Sacks would scarce hold the Ears cut from the dead Bodies. The Reign of *Boleslaus* was moreover disturbed by domestick Broils.

His Cousin, who succeeded in the Year 1279, was likewise greatly disturbed by domestick Broils, and also by the Incurfions of the *Tartars*; but he was very fortunate in his Wars with *Russia* and *Lithuania*, and entirely got the better of the *Jazygians* who inhabited *Pollia*. He died in the Year 1289.

Great Contentions now arose concerning the Sovereignty: But at length *Premislaus* Lord of Great *Pollia* succeeded thereto; and reassumed the Title of King which had been laid aside above two Hundred Years: Because the Pope had after the Excommunication of *Boleslaus II.* forbid it to all future Sovereigns of *Poland* to take the Title of King. After reigning seven Months *Premislaus* was assassinated by some *Brandenburgers* who had entered into a Conspiracy against him.

Uladislaus surnamed *Leticus* his Successor was deposed in the Year 1300 for Male Administration, and the Crown of *Poland* was conferred upon *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia*; but at the Death of the latter in the Year 1309 *Uladislaus* remounted the Throne. He was afterwards engaged in a long War with the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, whom he in the End vanquished entirely. Before his Death in the Year 1333 the *Silesian Dukes*, who had been many Years subject to *Poland*, submitted to *Bohemia*.

CASIMIR III. 1333. *Casimir* surnamed the Great Successor of *Uladislaus* subdued Part of *Russia* and incorporated it with *Poland*. He moreover introduced the Laws of *Magdeburg* into the Kingdom; and forced the Duke of *Mosovia* to become his Vassal. He died in the Year 1370 without Issue. *Casimir* was the last Descendant in the Male Line from *Piastus*.

LEWIS, 1370. *Lewis* King of *Hungary* his Sister's Son was next raised to the Throne: but the *Poles* were greatly displeas'd at his manifest Partiality to the *Hungarians*.

ULADISLAUS IV. 1382. Upon his Death in the Year 1382 the *Poles* set his Son *Sigismund* aside, and some propos'd a Marriage betwixt *Ziemovitus* Duke of *Mosovia* and *Edmiga* Daughter of *Lewis* for whom the Crown was reserv'd; but she refus'd to marry this Prince. She was afterwards crown'd; and on his promising to introduce Christianity into *Lithuania* and annex it to *Poland* was married to *Jagellon* Duke of *Lithuania*. Being baptiz'd he took the Name of *Uladislaus*; but the Execution of the latter Promise was for a long Time deferred by the Kings of *Poland* under the Pretence that the *Lithuanians* did not like it: Although the Truth was that they did not care to part with their hereditary Right to this Duchy.

He defeats the Knights of the Teutonic Order. *Uladislaus* afterwards gain'd a signal Victory over the Knights of the *Teutonic Order*, 50,000 of them being left upon the Field, and he took from them several Places in *Prussia*.

ULADISLAUS V. 1434. At the Death of this Prince in the Year 1434 *Uladislaus* his Son, who was then King of *Hungary*, succeeded. The *Turks* whom he was at War with having been worsted by *John Hunniade* his General in *Moravia*, and again by himself on the Frontiers of *Macedonia*, a Truce for ten Years was agreed upon. He broke this at the Instigation of the Pope, who sent Cardinal *Judian* on Purpose to grant him a Dispensation for so doing: But it cost him dear; for he was in the Year 1445 entirely routed and lost his Life in the Battle of *Warna*, which besides the Disgrace that attend'd it was a fatal Stroke to the Christians.

CASIMIR IV. 1445. To *Casimir* Successor of *Uladislaus* great Part of *Prussia* weary of its Masters the Knights of the *Teutonic*

nick Order submitted; which gave occasion to a War Part of
betwixt these Knights and the Poles. After this had PRUSSIA an-
been carried on successfully for some Time it was annexed to Po-
agreed by a Treaty concluded under the Mediation of LAND.
the Pope that the Poles should have Pomerelle, Culm,
Marienburg, Stum and Elbing; and that for the rest of
Prussia which the Knights were to keep their Grand
Matter should do Homage to the Polish Crown. About
the same Time the Prince of Walachia offered voluntar-
arily to do Homage to the Crown of Poland; and in this
Reign the Nobility first began to send Deputies or Nun-
cios to the Diet. Casimir died in the Year 1492 and
John Albert his Son succeeded.

This Prince was entirely routed by the Turks with JOHN I.
whom the Walachians had joined in Walachia, and they 1492.
followed him to Poland; but so many thousands of these
were carried off by a severe Frost which came on all at
once that they were glad to retire.

In the Reign of Alexander Brother of John, who suc- ALEXANDER,
ceeded in the Year 1501 and died five Years after, no- 1501.
thing remarkable happened.

Sigismund the next Successor was one of the most il- SIGISMUND
lustrious Princes of his Time. He had vast Success in I. 1506.
three Wars with the Russians. But these kept Pos-
session of Smolensko which was treacherously delivered
up to them. His long War with the Knights of the
Teutonic Order ended in an Agreement that Albert
Margrave of Brandenburg Grand Master of this Order
should be hereditary Duke of the Eastern Part of Prus-
sia: To be held however as a Fief of the Polish Crown.
In his Reign moreover the Province of Masovia was
reannexed to Poland; and he entirely suppressed the Re-
bellion in Walachia. He died in the Year 1548.

Sigismund Augustus his Son and Successor assisted the SIGISMUND
Livonians against the Russians who had made them- II. 1548.
selves Masters of Darps and other Places in Livonia.
The Archbishop of Riga Grand Master of the Teuto-
nick Order in Livonia terrified at the Progress of the
Russians desired also his Protection; but Sigismund would
not grant this unless he would submit to be a Vassal to
Poland. This being consented to Riga and some Places
in Esthonia were put into the Hands of Sigismund; who
LIVONIA
and Part of
ESTHONIA
annexed to
POLAND.

who in Return made the Archbishop Duke of *Gueld* and *Senigalia*. Hence arose a War betwixt *Russia* and *Poland*; in which the latter lost *Pleskow*. This Prince in whom the *Jagellonick* Line ended died without Issue.

HENRY,
1574.

After great Contentions *Henry* Duke of *Angou* Brother of *Charles IX.* of *France* was chosen King. *Henry* came into *Poland* and was crowned in the Year 1574; but being informed before he had reigned four Months of his Brother's Death he in the Night Time left the *Poles* should stop him, quitted the Kingdom in order to go and take Possession of the *French* Throne. The *Poles* provoked hereat to the last Degree proceeded immediately to a new Election. Many of them were for *Maximilian* Duke of *Austria*. But the Majority being for *Stephen Batori* Prince of *Transylvania* he made the best of his Way into *Poland*; and in order to secure himself upon the Throne married *Anna* Sister to *Styfford II.*

STEPHEN

1575.
War with
Muscovy.

Having reduced *Dantzick* which held out for *Maximilian* *Stephen* declared War against the *Russians*; and took from them *Pleskow* and some other Places. But by a Peace afterwards made he upon Conditions of their restoring some Places in *Livonia* gave up all he had taken in *Russia*. *Stephen* afterwards applied himself with great Diligence to the Improvement of the Constitution; and having augmented the Cavalry these were stationed upon the Frontiers to prevent the Inroads of the *Tartars*. By this Means a vast Tract of Land lying between the *Niester* and *Boristenis*; before a wild and desert Country, was filled with Towns and People.

The Cos-
sacks civil-
ized.

Stephen also civilized and disciplined the *Cossacks*, and made these who had been used to live by *Rapine* and *Plunder* such good Soldiers, that they have since not only been of great Service to the Kingdom against the *Tartars*, but have in all Times of War greatly annoyed the *Turks* by cruising in the *Black-Sea*. Nay they once went so far as to sack the Towns of *Tribonde* and *Sinope*, and to plunder the Suburbs of *Constantinople* itself. This truly great King died in the Year 1586 whilst he was preparing for a War with the *Turks*.

Upon

Upon his Death the *Polish* chose *Sigismund* Son of *SIDISMOND* *John King of Sweden* by *Catherine* Sister of *Sigismund II.* III. 1586. for their King. Some did indeed call in *Maximilian* of *Austria*, and he attempted to possess himself of the Throne by Force: But being defeated he was made Prisoner; and for the sake of his Liberty forced to renounce all Pretensions to the Crown.

Sigismund, was after his Father's Death in the Year War with 1592 crowned King of *Sweden*; but he was soon de-SWEDEN. posed by the States of *Sweden*, which occasioned a War betwixt the *Swedes* and *Poles*. At first *Charles* who was raised to the Throne of *Sweden* took some Towns in *Livonia*; but these were retaken by the *Polish* General *Zamyski*. Besides this *Charles* was entirely routed near *Riga* in the Year 1605, and with great Difficulty escaped being made Prisoner: But the Divisions which arose in *Poland* betwixt the King and the Nobility gave *Charles* Time to recover his Affairs.

About the same Time a Quarrel arose betwixt *Rus-* The *POLES* *sia* and *Poland* on the following Occasion. There support the was a Person in *Poland* who called himself *Demetrius* Pretensions of Son of *John Basilowitz* Czar of *Russia*, and to have this DEMETRIUS Story gain Credit said, that whilst he was an Infant *Boris* to *RUSSIA*, *Gudenow* would in order to pave the Way for his own 1605. succeeding to the Empire on the Death of *Theodore* eldest Son of *John Basilowitz* have killed him: But that another Infant was put into his Place and murdered in his Stead. Whether this Story was true or false some believed it; and *George Musizack* Governor of *Sendamir*, whose Daughter *Demetrius* had promised to marry, raised in Conjunction with some other *Polish* Lords an Army, and went with him in the Year 1605 into *Russia*. *Boris Gudenow* the Czar happening to die at this Juncture a great Number of *Russians* declared for *Demetrius*; and after defeating his Opposers he entered the City of *Moscow* and was unanimously proclaimed. The *Russians* to whom he soon became odious began to suspect the Imposture: Yet they determined to conceal their Rage until the Arrival of his intended Bride in *Russia*. Matters were in the mean Time so managed by the House of *Suski*, descended by their Mother from the Royal Family of *Russia*, that 20,000 Men were ready to appear at any Time

Time in Arms. While the Nuptials were celebrating these forced their Way into the Castle; and having as it was said seized *Demetrius* murdered him; and all the *Poles* they could lay Hands upon.

**BASILIUS
SUSKI** pro-
claimed Czar
of RUSSIA.

Basilus Suski was immediately proclaimed Czar and a Body said to be that of *Demetrius* was exposed in the Market-place: But this Body being so disfigured that no Person could know it a Report was given out that he had escaped; and a Person who took upon him to be *Demetrius* was acknowledged by the *Poles*; who were glad of a Handle to revenge the Death of their Countrymen. This new or old *Demetrius*; which ever he was; entered *Russia* in the Year 1608 with a large Army of *Poles* and *Cossacks*; and gained such Advantages over the *Russians* that *Basilus* was glad to let the Wife of *Demetrius* at Liberty, and to beg of *Sigismund* to recall the *Poles*. He refused to do this, and as the Woman set at Liberty acknowledged the present *Demetrius* for her Husband his Party increased greatly; and it would have been all over with *Basilus* if an Army of *Suedes* commanded by *Pontus de la Gardie* had not come to his Assistance.

SIGISMUND
attacks RUS-
SIA, 1611.

Thinking this a favourable Opportunity to make Conquests upon the *Russians*, or at least to recover *Smolensko*, *Sigismund* put himself at the Head of an Army; and in the Year 1611 after having besieged it near two Years took *Smolensko* by Storm. About this Time the *Poles* who had followed *Demetrius* had Orders to join *Sigismund*; for besides that he wanted their Assistance he began to apprehend ill Consequences from suffering so many of his Subjects to serve under a foreign Prince. At this gave *Basilus* Time to recover his Affairs he marched in Concert with the *Suedes* to the Relief of *Smolensko*; he had the Misfortune in a Battle which ensued to be entirely routed by the *Poles*.

Battle of
SMOLENSKO.

ULADISLAUS
Son of SIGIS-
MOND pro-
claimed Czar
of RUSSIA.

At length the *Russians* in order to avoid the Danger which threatened them resolved to depose *Basilus*, whose ill Success had estranged the Minds of the People; and to confer the Crown upon *Uladislaus* Son of *Sigismund*. Hereby they hoped effectually to ruin *Demetrius* and to stop the Progress of the *Poles*. As to the rest they imagined that when Things were once settled they could at any Time get rid of *Uladislaus*. It succeeded according to

to their Will. *Demetrius* was quite excited, and the *Ruffians* after delivering up *Smolensk* to the *Poles* took an Oath of Allegiance to *Demetrius*: but intent of returning as it was expected according to his own Father *Sigismund* related to the *Ruffians* or other about him; who informed that it was better not to Masters about not difficult to conquer *Smolensk*, than for the *Son* to accept of the *Crown* as a *Prize* from the *Ruffians*.

This being proposed the *Ruffians* refused to receive *Demetrius* as source their Allegiance to *Demetrius*: and the time was spent in the late *Deliverance* of a *strong* *citadel* *Demetrius* had made to in the same Time was sufficient to the *Barons* his Body Guards. The first Attempt of the *Ruffians* was to cut the *Garrison* of *Moscow* consisting of 1000 *Poles* to Pieces; but these defeated themselves with unchristian Ravery and in Revenge for the whole City on Fire: By which as it did not contain less than 100,000 Houses great Numbers perished. Nevertheless as soon as the Confirmation extracted by this Fire was a Piece over the *Ruffian* his *Serge* to the *Cadre*: Wherein the *Garrison* had shut themselves up. Having yet some Time in vain expected Relief from *Sigismund*, who instead of marching to *Moscow* which would in a Week had established his Affairs in *Russia* returned immediately after the taking of *Smolensk* into *Prussia*, the *Garrison* a small Number being left for Guards made a Sally; and cut their Way through the *Ruffians*. *Sigismund* after this made one grand Push in *Russia*: But for want of a good Understanding amongst his Generals nothing was done; and the *Poles* left in the *Citadel* of *Moscow* were obliged to surrender for Want of Provisions. Besides this Loss of all in *Russia*, at which *Sigismund* was the more disturbed, because he hoped that the Conquest of *Russia* would have made that of *Sweden* easy, the *Poles* were about the same Time defeated with great Loss in *Moldavia*.

Another Attempt made in the Year 1615 by *Uladislaus* King with upon *Russia* failing a Truce for fourteen Years was concluded; during which Time the *Poles* were to keep Possession of the *Dutchies* of *Severia*, *Czernichow* and *Novogrod* which they had taken during this War. While these Things were doing in *Russia* *George* *Baron* *Baron*,
RUSSIA,
1615.
Cloves-

Governor of *Livonia* had delivered up several Towns to *Gustavus H. of Sweden*; but it looked as if he intended to betray this Prince: For being soon afterwards reconciled to *Sigismund* he restored all these Places except *Pernau* to him.

War with the
TURKS,
1620.

In the Year 1620 the Poles were involved in a War with the *Turks*, which was stirred up by *Bethlen Gabor* Prince of *Transylvania*: because *Sigismund* had joined with the Emperor against him. *Moldavia* whose Prince was in Alliance with *Poland* being hereupon invaded by the *Turks* the Polish General *Zalkieski* was sent to his Assistance: But having advanced too far his Army was as it was retiring totally routed and *Zalkieski* was himself slain in the Action. In the next Year the *Turks* who were coming with their whole Force against *Poland* were met by *Uladislaus* near *Cobutin*. The *Turkish* Emperor *Osman* attempted thrice to force the Polish Camp but his Troops were every Time repulsed with great Loss; yet as the *Turkish* Army was still greatly superior and the *Poles* began to want both Provisions and Ammunition *Sigismund* was glad to make Peace.

The POLES
routed in MOL-
DAVIA.

Irruption of
the SWEDS
into LIVONIA,
1621.
1625.
1629.

While the Poles were thus engaged with the *Turks* *Gustavus II. of Sweden* made an Irruption into *Livonia*; and in the Year 1621 made himself Master of *Riga*. In the Year 1625 *Gustavus* subdued the rest of this Province as far as *Danow*; and in the Year following a Descent was made by him upon *Prussia*. The War was continued by the *Swedes*; but nothing decisive happened till the Year 1629. In this Year the Poles were defeated by General *Wrangel* near *Goruno*. But on the coming up of a Body of Imperial Troops to their Assistance they resolved to hazard another Battle. After this in which the *Swedes* although their King had like to have been made Prisoner were victorious the Affairs of *Poland* grew quite desperate. At last a Truce was concluded under the Mediation of *France* and *England*; but the Poles were forced to agree that *Gustavus* should keep *Elbing*, *Memel*, *Bransberg* and *Pillau* together with all he had taken in *Livonia*. In the Year 1632 *Sigismund* died and *Uladislaus* his Son succeeded.

Battle of
GORZNO:

Truce with
SWEDEN.

ULADISLAUS
VI. 1632.

This Prince after defeating the *Russians* who had laid Siege to *Smolensko* reduced them to such Straits that they were

were forced to surrender Prisoners; and about the same Time the *Turks* who had entered Poland were vigorously against the repulsed. In the Year 1634 the *Russians* confirmed by RUSSIANS Treaty to *Uladislaus* the Cessions made by the Truce of and TURKS. the Year 1615: Which with his own valorous Conduct so *debauched* the *Turks*; that they consented to give him Satisfaction for the Damages sustained from their Inroad, and the *Bashaw* who commanded therein was strangled.

In the Year 1635 the Truce with Sweden was renewed for twenty-nine Years; but *Uladislaus* would not renew this without the Restitution of all they had taken in *Prussia*. Which as their Affairs in Germany had after the Battle of *Nordlingen* taken an unlucky Turn they durst not refuse.

In the Year 1697 a War betwixt the Poles and *Cossacks* which brought infinite Misfortunes upon Poland was kindled in the following Manner. Some Polish Lords not satisfied with acquiring great Estates in the *Ukraine* and hoping to increase their Power by oppressing the *Cossacks* represented to the King that it was necessary to keep these People whose great Privileges had drawn vast Numbers to them in Awe. It being hereupon resolved to build a Fort upon the Point of Land where the *Zwamer* discharges itself into the *Boristenes* the *Cossacks* endeavoured to obstruct the Building of this by Force: But being worsted they were obliged to deliver up their General *Babulski* with many others of their Chiefs; who were all contrary to the Promise made them beheaded. It was moreover resolved in the Diet to abolish the Liberties of the *Cossacks*; to take from them *Tschimirski* their chief Fortress; and that a Militia upon a quite new Establishment should be kept up in the *Ukraine*. An Army was sent to carry these Resolutions into Execution, against which the *Cossacks* defended themselves with great Bravery; protesting however that they would continue faithful to the Crown of Poland if their ancient Privileges were confirmed. Finding them desperate a Promise was made that these should be confirmed: But instead of keeping this some of their Churches were taken from them; and which irritated them more than any thing their General *Schmieski* could not obtain any Redress for the greatest Injury that a Man could receive. The King

King having given this General Leave to build some Mills a Gentleman, named *Jarinski* took it in his Head to set these on Fire; and not content therewith he after ravishing his Wife caused both her and his Son to suffer cruel Deaths.

JOHN II.
1647.

Soon after the Accession of *John Casimir*, who in the Year 1647 about the Time this Outrage was committed succeeded *Uladislaus* his Brother, *Schmielinski* put himself at the Head of the *Cossacks*; and in Revenge committed every Kind of Violence upon the *Polish Nobility*.

The POLES are
twice routed
by the COSSACKS.

As the King, whose Answer to the Remonstrances of the Nobility was that they should have been wiser and not have connived at the Burning of his Mills, refused to take the Field against *Schmielinski* the Nobility set on Foot an Army of 50,000 Men: Which was defeated by the *Cossacks* and they moreover took *Kiev*. Exasperated at these Losses and the King's Lukewarmness the Nobility levied the seventh Man throughout the Nation; but they were a second Time defeated. Some time after as *Schmielinski* was celebrating the Nuptials of his Son with the Princess of *Walachia* at *Kiev* the *Poles* surprized this City, and carried off the Patriarch of *Greece* with them as a Prisoner. Deputies being hereupon sent to the King to ask if this was done by his Order, his Answer was No; but that the *Polish Nobility* had done it in Revenge for the Mischief done to them by the *Cossacks*. As the *Cossacks* not satisfied with this Answer joined with the *Tartars* in making an Irruption into *Poland* *John* at Length took the Field against and defeated them. He soon after came to an Accommodation with them; with which the Nobility were quite dissatisfied, because the Terms thereof were as they said too advantageous to the *Cossacks*.

An Accommodation with
the COSSACKS

War with
RUSSIA.

While the Jealousy hereby occasioned continued the *Russians* came to a Rupture with the *Poles*; and being joined by many of the *Cossacks* they in the Year 1654 took *Smolensko*. This was followed with the taking of *Wilna* and other Places; and they committed most horrid Ravages in *Lithuania*.

The SWEDES
invade PO-
LAND, 1655.

In the next Year, the *Poles* were unexpectedly attacked from another Quarter. *Charles X.* of *Sweden*

den entered the Kingdom with an Army of chosen Troops, and after over-running Great and Little Poland together with the Province of Masovia fell into Prussia. All the Towns in Prussia except Danzick opened their Gates to him; and it was owing to the Exhortations of their Ministers, for he had a strong Party therein, that the People of this City did not do the same. The Resistance he met with here gave the Poles Time to get the better of the Consternation his rapid Progress had thrown them into; and being joined by the Tartars they every where fell upon the Swedes: Who being dispersed up and down could make but little Resistance. The Lithuanians also threw off the Allegiance they had been forced to swear to Charles; and cut in Pieces the Swedish Troops quartered amongst them. Besides these Misfortunes the Swedish Army suffered greatly in its March to Jaroslaw; not only from the Length of the March; but because the Polish General Czarneski constantly harassed it with his Light Horse. In the mean Time the Poles had retaken Warsaw; and General Wittenberg with the rest of the Swedish Officers were contrary to the Articles of the Capitulation made Prisoners. Being joined by the Forces of Brandenburg Charles Battle of attacked the Poles and Tartars near Warsaw; and after a Battle which lasted three Days gained a compleat Victory over them.

This Success of the Swedes gave Umbrage to several Powers; and it being thought absolutely necessary to avert a Diversion in Favour of the Poles Livonia was invaded by the Russians. The Hollanders moreover declared plainly that they would never suffer Prussia to be annexed to Sweden; and the Danes began to be in Motion.

Ragotzki Prince of Transilvania thinking this a favourable Opportunity to make himself Master of the Kingdom entered Poland with an Army; but it cost him dear; for the King of Sweden being called home to defend his own Dominions against the Danes he was worsted by the Poles, and forced to consent to very dishonourable Terms of Peace. After this the Poles retook Cracaw and Thorn; and obliged the Swedes to evacuate the

the Dutchy of *Cairland*. Such a favourable and unlooked for Turn of Affairs, which was principally to be ascribed to the Stand made by the *Dantzickers*, encouraged the *Poles* to attempt the Siege of *Riga*: But the *Swedish* Governor General *Helmfield* defended this Place so bravely that after losing many Men before it they were forced to give it over.

Treaty of
OLIVA,
1660.

By the Treaty of *Oliva* concluded in the Year 1660 all in *Prussia* was restored to the *Poles*: They were however forced to quit all Pretensions to *Livonia*, and to ~~cede~~ *Smolensko*, *Kiow* and the Dutchy of *Severia* to the *Russians*. As the Nobility still refused to comply with the Demands of the *Cossacks* some of these put themselves under the Protection of *Russia*; and others which has been of great Prejudice to *Poland* in her Wars with the *Turks* under that of the *Sultan*. Finding he could not put an End to the Cabals and Factions with which the Kingdom continued to be rent in Pieces *John* in the Year 1670 resigned the Crown, and retired to the Abby of *St. Germain* in *France* where he died a few Years after.

JOHN resigns
the Crown.

MICHAEL,
1670.

None of the Royal Family being now left many Foreigners offered themselves as Candidates for the Crown; but after great Contests the Election fell upon *Michael Wiesznowiski* a *Piast*. His Reign although of no long Duration was full of Troubles and Misfortunes. The

War with the
TURKS.

Turks after committing great Ravages in *Poland* did in the Year 1672 make themselves Masters of *Kaminiack* although it was looked upon to be impregnable; and the *Poles* were for the Sake of Peace forced to consent that this important Place, which has since served as a Key to *Poland*, should remain in their Hands, and also to pay an annual Tribute to the *Sultan*. *Michael* died in the Year 1673.

JOHN III.
1673.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

In the next Year *John Sobieski* General of the *Poles*, who had a little before attacked the *Turks* so opportunely and with such Vigour in their Camp that of 32,000 Men not 1500 escaped, was elected King. The War with the *Turks* was hereupon recommenced: But by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1676 the *Turks* who were to keep *Kaminiack* agreed to remit the Tribute.

This

John having afterwards at the Solicitation of the *Pope* He com-
 entered into a League against the *Turks* he marched in *command* against
 the Year 1683 with 20,000 Men to the Relief of *Kinna* the *TURKS*,
na; and had a great Share in the Victory which obliged 1683.
 the Infidels to give over the Siege of this Capital. The *Battle of Vi-*
 Loss of the *Turks* was so great that they thought proper *ENNA.*
 to retire into *Hungary* with the utmost Precipitation.

John came up with them near *Barcan*: But he had not *Battle of BAR-*
 the same Success there; for attacking them, that he *CAN.*
 might have all the Honour to himself, before the *Im-*
perialists under the Duke of *Lorraine* came up his Troops
 were routed, and he together with his Son were in great
 Danger of losing their Lives. A *Turk* had actually,
 lifted up his Sabre against *John* and would undoubtedly
 have killed him if another Person had not slain the *Turk*,
 in the very Instant: Nor could he being so fatigued as
 not to be able to sit his Horse have at last got off the
 Field, if the Grand Marshal and a Gentleman, of *Li-*
thuania had not led him away by the Arms. He was
 not long without his Revenge: For upon the coming up
 of the *Imperialists* the *Turks* were, notwithstanding their
 being in high Spirits on the Account of this Victory,
 defeated and *Gryn* was soon after taken. Towards the
 Close of this Campaign *John* had an Interview with the
 Emperor; in which he thought himself not treated with
 the Respect to which his Services to this Prince entitled
 him. Being disgusted thereat and at the Badness of the
 Winter-Quarters assigned his Troops *John* returned into
Poland.

The quitting of the Command of the Army by *John* was *He returns*
 a great Misfortune to the *Christians*; but he continued to *into POLAND.*
 cause a Diversion in their Favour, and flattered himself
 with the Hopes of making good the Losses *Poland* had
 sustained in the former War. With a View thereto he
 made several Campaigns in *Podolia* and *Moldavia*; but
 for want of being supported by the Senate with whom
 he had a Quarrel nothing considerable was done. Find-
 ing himself by Reason of his advanced Age and the vast
 Fatigues he had suffered in War grown quite infirm
John at Length resigned the Command of the Army to
 the Grand General *Jablonowski*; but the Repose he pro-
 mised himself was very short: For being seized with a

Kind of *Leiborgy* he died in the Year 1696; which was the seventy-second Year of his Age and the twenty-second of his Reign.

Interregnum,
1696.

The provincial Assemblies forthwith held for appointing Nuncios to the preliminary Diet were very tumultuous; and it was insisted upon in many of these that the Queen Dowager a *French* Lady Daughter of the Cardinal *D'Arquien*, whose Intrigues for raising one of her Sons to the Throne had been long notorious, should together with her Sons be at a Distance from *Warsaw* till the Election was over. After long Contests in this Diet which were not likely to end one of the Nuncios left it; and entered his Protest against every Thing that should be done.

Confederacy
of the Nobility.

An End being thereby put to the preliminary Diet it was resolved in the Senate, and most of the Nuncios consented thereto, that a Confederacy of the Nobility for the Preservation of their Religion, Rights and Liberties, and for the Security of a free Election, should immediately be formed. The Time of Election was moreover fixed for the 15th of *May* 1697; and with a View to exclude the Sons of the late King it was after some Debate agreed, that such Persons as should propose the raising of a *Piast* to the Throne should be looked upon as

Confederacy
of the Army.

Enemies to their Country. While the Nobility were busied in raising Money to satisfy the Demands of the Army, which had also entered into a Confederacy and for want of being paid its Arrears threatened to march into the Heart of the Kingdom and live at free Quarters, the Deputy Marshal of *Lithuania* had raised some Troops in this Duchy and committed Ravages upon the Lands of the Grand Marshal. The latter immediately assembled all the Forces he could in order to revenge this Insult; and the King of *Sweden* and Margrave of *Brandenburg* offered him a Body of Troops.

The TARTARS
invade
POLAND.

In the mean Time the *Tartars* had invaded the Kingdom and advanced as far as *Leopol*, where some considerable Skirmishes happened with the Confederate Army: But as the latter declined coming to a general Battle, the *Tartars* overran *Volhinia* and committed great Ravages. Instead of pursuing these the Confederate Army seemed wholly intent upon guarding against *Jablouuski*

Jablouuski

blonowski Grand General of Poland; and exacted whatever it came heavy Contributions. Hereupon Prince *Sapieha* raised ten thousand Men in *Lithuania*: And having joined the Troops under *Jablonski* the Confederate Army on his Approach quitted its Camp near *Leopol* and retired to *Brzeze*. The Prince followed them; yet although it was worsted in one Action and in Want of every Thing this Army refused to follow the Example of the Army under the Deputy Marshal in *Lithuania* which had submitted; and would listen to no Terms until its Arrears were paid.

This Situation of Things gave the Abbe de *Po- Intrigues of the lignac* Minister of France a Handle to push the Inte- Abbe DE REST of the Prince of *Conti* one of the Candidates for POLIGNAC. the Crown. This Abbe engaged on the Part of the King his Master for six Millions to pay what was demanded by the Confederate Army; and which he knew would have great Weight with the *Poles* gave them to understand, that if they would choose the Prince of *Conti* France would soon put him into a Condition of recovering *Kaminieck* and all *Podolia* from the *Turks*.

The Demands of the Confederate Army being adjusted *The Confede-* by its Deputies and the Commissaries of the Republic it rate Army was expected that it would have separated; but instead continued. thereof an Express was sent to the Primate to acquaint him, that as this Army had something further to propose its disbanding must be deferred. It was now plainly seen that the Heads thereof had no Mind to disband their Troops until the Election was over; and it began to be suspected that *James* slder Son of the late King, whose Pretensions were backed by the *Czar* and who had notwithstanding all the Intrigues of the *French* Minister a strong Party in the Kingdom, encouraged this rebellious Behaviour.

As the Time of Election drew near it was more and *The Queen* more insisted upon that the Queen should leave *War-* compelled to *saw*; for the Aversion of the People was encreased by leave WAR- her Attempts to exclude *James* and raise her younger Son *SAW*. *Alexander*, although he was not so old as the Constitution required, to the Throne. Finding it must be so she set out for *Dantzick* upon the 30th of *April*: But she did not do this without the utmost Reluctance.

A Double Election.

Prince *James* seemed at first to have good Interest in the Diet: It was however soon found that neither he, nor the Prince of *Neuburg*, nor the Prince of *Lorraine* stood any Chance; for the Majority was upon every Division for the Prince of *Conti*. This being perceived *Augustus* Elector of *Saxony*, to whose Valour or Merit there could be no Objection, was unexpectedly proposed. He was approved of by all the Opposers of the *French* Faction, who found that no other Candidate had Interest enough to thwart its Designs: Yet the Party of the Prince of *Conti* prevailed, because it was doubted by some if *Augustus* would embrace the Catholick Religion; and the former was proclaimed by the Primate who would not wait for the Arrival of the Pope's Nuncio. As the Pope's Nuncio came into the Diet a few Minutes after and assured the Members that *Augustus* had in the most solemn and publick Manner abjured *Lutheranism* he was likewise elected; and while the Grand Marshal went to enter a Protest against the former Election he was proclaimed by the Bishop of *Cujava*, who had all along been very zealous against the *French* Party. In order to prevent the ill Consequences of this double Election a Conferenee was held; but as the Persons appointed to manage for the Prince of *Conti* insisted upon the Validity of his Election and threatned to make it good by Force nothing could be agreed upon.

The Primate proposes a new Election.

It was afterwards proposed by the Primate, who saw the Nation upon the Brink of being involved in a Civil War, to proceed to a new Election. This Proposal being rejected by the Friends of *Augustus* the Primate summoned a Diet called a *Diet of Relation* to meet at *Warsaw* on the 26th of *August*. An Act of Association against *Augustus* was therein signed: But it was protested against by his Friends, who held a Meeting at the same Time in another Part of the Town.

AUGUSTUS enters POLAND with an Army.

While these Things were doing *Augustus* who had entered the Kingdom with an Army of *Saxons* took Possession of *Cracaw*; and in Order to make sure of this City it being the Place of Coronation gave Orders for encreasing its Fortifications. On the 14th of *September* notwithstanding the Primate had secured his Body, hoping as all other Stratagems failed thereby to defer the Co-

rona-

ronation of *Augustus* until the Arrival of the Prince of *Conti*, the Obsequies of the late King were solemnized, as is the Custom the Day before the Coronation of a new King, in the same Manner as if his Body had been actually there. When the Person who at this Solemnity carried the late King's Sword was, which is Part of the Ceremony, about to break it *Augustus* prevented him; and at which all present were vastly pleased cried out with a loud Voice, *Don't break that Sword which has been so often drenched in Blood; for I intend to make Use of it in driving the Barbarians and other Enemies out of the Kingdom, and in maintaining its Liberty and Laws.*

His Coronation being the next Day celebrated *AUGUSTUS* the utmost Acclamations of the People divers of the No. ^{crowned,} 1697. bility who had entered into the Association against *Augustus* submitted to him; and the Towns of *Dantzick*, *Thorn* and *Elbing* declared for him.

About this Time the Primate, who had retired with *Proceedings of* his Friends and some Troops from *Warsaw* to *Jarof-* ^{the Primate.} *law*, demanded in the Republick's Name the Protection of the Elector of *Brandenburg*; and as this would have had great Weight in *Poland* vast Pains were taken by the *French* Court to get the Pope's Approbation of the Prince of *Conti*'s Election. In order to procure this it was suggested to him, that as the Elector of *Saxony*'s Conversion was so sudden and upon the Prospect of a Crown the Sincerity thereof ought to be suspected, and that his Authority had been trampled upon in the Person of the Primate: But as it might have been dangerous to disgust the *Saxon* Party, which was vastly superior in the Kingdom, the Pope would not interfere.

Upon the 26th of *September* the Prince of *Conti* arrived *Arrival of the* in the Harbour of *Dantzick*; but not meeting with the *Prince of* Reception he expected from the Magistrates of this *CONTI.* City he continued some Weeks on Shipboard. The Primate his fast Friend with many others of the Association repaired upon the 21st of the next Month to the Field of Election, and after proclaiming him a second Time sent Deputies to settle with him the *Pacta Conventa*; yet his Party notwithstanding the large Sums of Money distributed among the Nobility did not much increase. Al-

though the Prince never had any Opinion either of his Election or of this Voyage, which was undertaken merely out of Complaisance to the *French* Court, and could see plainly that he had been both deceived and betrayed; yet that he might not be reproached with having neglected any proper Step he sent circular Letters throughout the Kingdom. The Purport of these was to set forth the Nullity of his Rival's Election, and to acquaint the People that he was ready to sacrifice his Life and Fortune in the Defence of their Religion and Liberties.

*Progress of
General
BRANDT in
PRUSSIA.*

In the mean Time General *Brandt* was come with an Army of *Saxons* into *Prussia*; and finding the Prince's Troops unable to look him in the Face he resolved to make a bold Push. Having advanced as far as *Oliva* he surprized this Place, and made above 200 Persons Prisoners, amongst whom were forty Domesticks of the Prince. The Abbe *de Polignac* with great Difficulty escaped; and if the Saxon General had been only two Hours later the Prince himself, who was just about coming on Shore, would in all Probability have fallen into his Hands. Marching while the Consternation hereby occasioned lasted from *Oliva* to *Marienburg* *Dzialinski Kraizi* the Governor of this Place soon submitted to *Brandt*; and his Example was followed by the Palatines of *Saradia*, *Bielinski* and many others. The Loss of *Marienburg*, which was the only Place he could have landed any Troops at, and the seeing himself deserted by so many at once made the Prince give over all Hopes; but before his Departure he resolved to give the *Dantzickers* some Mark of his Resentment for having declared so early in Favour of his Rival.

*DANTZICK
threatened by
the FRENCH
Minister.*

With a View to this the *French* Ambassador declared to the Burgomaster of *Dantzick* that his Master had issued Orders for seizing all Ships belonging to this City, and threatened that it should be treated as *Genoa* had lately been. Far from being frightened at these Menaces it was immediately resolved in an extraordinary Council to seize all the Effects of any Subjects of *France* which should be found in *Dantzick*; and a Messenger was dispatched to the Court of *Denmark*; to beg that the *French* Squadron might not be suffered to carry through

through the *Sound* four *Dantzick* Vessels which it had taken.

Before the Prince sailed homewards he wrote two Letters: One to the Primate, the other to the *Republic*. In both these he expressed in strong Terms his Concern to see *Poland* under Subjection to foreign Troops and its Religion in Danger; but in the latter he launched out against some of the Nobility, who by false Representations of Things and Protestations of Faithfulness, by which they meant nothing, had thus exposed him who never sought after being their King in the Face of all the World. In his Way home he was introduced by the *French* Ambassador at *Copenhagen* to the King of *Denmark*; yet the latter would not suffer the *French* Admiral to carry his four *Dantzick* Prizes through the *Sound*.

Upon the Departure of the Prince many of his Adherents swore Allegiance to *Augustus*; and at Length the Primate being thereto exhorted by the Pope, who had acknowledged *Augustus* for King of *Poland*, did the same; But his Conduct afterwards shewed plainly that he was not sincere in this. By Degrees all that had entered into the Association against *Augustus* were reconciled to him; and an End was put to the Differences which had arisen in *Lithuania* betwixt the Family of *Sapieha* and the rest of the Nobility.

In the Year 1700, while *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* was at War with *Denmark* concerning *Holstein*, *Livonia* was invaded by the *Poles*. The Pretence for this Invasion was, that *Augustus* had bound himself by an Oath to reunite all that had been taken from it and especially this Province to the *Polish* Crown. *Dunamunde* and some other Places were taken by the *Poles* without much Difficulty; but upon the Remonstrances of *England* and *Holland*, whose Merchants had valuable Effects in this Town, the Siege of *Riga* was given over. *Charles* of *Sweden* finding himself attacked on all Sides, for the *Russians* and *Danes* had also declared against him, clapped up a Peace with *Denmark*, that he might be able to act with greater Vigour against his other Enemies.

1701. In August 1701 Charles having first defeated the Poles and Saxons, who attempted to obstruct his Passage, passed the *Duna*, and retook *Köckenhausen*, and *Köberschantz*. He next sent a strong Detachment into *Cowland*, whose Duke was in Alliance with his Enemies; and before the End of the Campaign was again Master of *Dunamunde*. The Elector of *Brandenburg* having, in the same Year taken the Title of King of *Prussia*, it at first surprized the Republick; but as the Emperor, and most of the *European Powers* had acknowledged him in that Quality she thought proper to do the same. When the Poles saw that the *Swedish War* was likely to turn out so very ill they cried out against the Advisers thereof; and the Powers which were at War with *France* endeavoured to bring about an Accommodation; But Charles who as he did not begin the War thought he might justly push the Advantage he had gained, would listen to no Terms. Being advanced as far as *Warsaw* he had a Conference with the Primate; in which it is supposed that although the latter was sent by him to compromise Matters the dethroning of *Augustus* was resolved upon.

1702. In July 1702 the Poles and Saxons were defeated near *Klissow*; but this Victory cost the Swedes dear, for the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp* fell in the Action. The Mediation of the Republick having been refused it was resolved in a Diet held at *Sandomir* to act vigorously in Favour of *Augustus*: But many Members of the Republick who met about the same Time at *Warsaw* came to a Resolution of sending Ambassadors on a mission to Charles. Towards the End of this Year a Confederacy was entered into in *Great-Poland*, wherein after declaring an Intention of continuing faithful to the King, and a great Desire of Peace, it was resolved that a general Diet should be held. As the Primate in his Letters for convoking a general Diet did not mention *Augustus* it was imputed to his Enmity to this Prince, who soon after summoned an Assembly of the States at *Marien-*
burg.

1703. In this which met early in the Year 1703 *Augustus* took an Oath to observe the *Pacta Conventa*; and the States at *Marien-*
burg.

of Allegiance, and confirmed all that had been resolved upon in the Diet of *Sandomir*. In the mean Time the Republick's Ambassadors had had an Audience of *Charles*: But his Answer was that she had put it out of her Power to be a Mediatrix by suffering her Troops to act against the *Swedes* in the Battle of *Kliffow*, and that he would not treat with her till she was quite independent of *Augustus*. Not long after the *Swedes* had the Advantage in an obstinate Battle fought near *Pultosck*. In *June* *Augustus* convoked a Diet at *Lublin* in which the Primate assisted; but the latter soon began again to tamper with *Charles*. It was herein resolved that if *Charles* continued obstinate the Republick should strengthen herself by new Alliances, and exert herself to the utmost in Support of *Augustus*. In *October* another Confederacy was entered into in *Great Poland*, which was thought by the Declarations of some of its Members to be in Favour of the King; but its real Design was quite contrary. During this Campaign the *Swedes* made themselves Masters of *Thorn* and *Elbing*, and at the End thereof they took Winter Quarters in *Prussia*: And besides all these Misfortunes *Poland* was disturbed by an Insurrection in the *Ukraine*.

In the next Spring the Primate with the Consent of the Confederates called a Diet at *Warsaw*. In this, to which the Ambassadors of *Sweden* were admitted, it was agreed to throw off all Allegiance to *Augustus*, because he had not as it was said observed the *Pacta Conventa*; and notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Pope's Nuncio the Throne was declared vacant. *Augustus* being informed thereof and that a new Election was resolved upon, and that one of the late King's Sons was intended for King, he seized Prince *James* and his Brother *Constantine* and they were both sent into *Saxony*.

It was said that the Primate had a Desire to raise the Grand Marshal *Lubomirski* to the Throne; but as *Stanislaus Leezinski* was the greater Favourite of *Charles*, whom it was at this Time necessary to oblige, he was chosen upon the 12th of *July* and proclaimed by the Bishop of *Poznania*; for the Primate took Care to be absent. *Augustus* published a Manifesto in which this Election was

1704.

The Crown
declared vac-
cant.STANISLAUS
elected.

was

Battle of
PUNITZ.

was said to be unjust, forced, and destructive to the Liberty and fundamental Laws of the Kingdom; and marching with the utmost Diligence towards *Warsaw* he caused the Bishop of *Pasnanja* and the three *Swedish* Ministers who had assisted at the Diet of Election to be arrested: But upon the Approach of the *Swedes* his Troops retired towards *Silesia*. The *Swedes* came up with them on the Frontiers of this Province; and after defeating them in a Battle fought near *Punitz* drove them quite into *Saxony*. The *Pope* in very strong Terms exhorted the Bishops and Senators of the Kingdom not to rebel against their King at the Instigation of Hereticks, for so he called the *Swedes*, and summoned the *Primate* upon Pain of Excommunication to appear and answer for his Conduct at *Rome*: But instead of obeying this Summons he went to *Dantzick*, and published a Writing full of Invectives against *Augustus* in which he acknowledged *Stanislaus* for King.

STANISLAUS
crowned.

As this confused State of Things was likely to continue a Confederacy headed by *Potocki* was in the Year 1705 formed: Which without declaring at first for either King proposed as its main Design the Restoration of the publick Tranquillity. Finding however the Party of *Stanislaus* much the stronger it afterwards joined with this, and in a Council held at *Warsaw* it was thought proper he should be crowned: And notwithstanding the Opposition made thereto by the Partizans of *Augustus* he was crowned upon the 4th of *October*. The *Pope* had forbidden all Bishops to be present at his Coronation; but this did not hinder the Archbishop of *Lemberg* from assisting thereat. In the next Month *Augustus* had an Interview and renewed his Alliance with the *Czar*. The *Primate Radzeowski*, who had the Mortification to see his Sentence of Excommunication publicly fixed up, died about this Time; whereupon *Augustus* promoted *Szembeck* Bishop of *Cujavia* to the Archbishoprick of *Gnesna*.

CHARLES de-
feats the SAX-
ONS.

On the other Hand *Stanislaus* did also enter into fresh Engagements with *Charles*; who had not long before defeated an Army of *Poles* and *Saxons* and taken *Patkul* their General Prisoner. This unhappy Gentleman, who must not be confounded with Count *Patkul* who was delivered

livered up to *Charles* by the Treaty of *Alt-Ranfstadt*, being because he was born a Subject of *Sweden* sent to *Stockholm*, he was although he had spent most of his Life in foreign Service condemned and beheaded there for high Treason. Early in the following Year *Augustus* General PAT- set out with an Intent to join General *Schulemberg* KUL is be- beaded. but being informed in the Way that he was defeated 1706. with the Loss of 7000 Men by the *Swedish* General *Ren-* Defeats of *child Augustus* marched to *Cracaw*, and shut himself SCHULEM- BERG. up there. About *September* *Charles*, who had all the Summer driven the *Russians* before him in *Volhinia*, left General *Mardesfeldt* to command there and made a Dis- CHARLES pe- netrates into position for penetrating into *Saxony*. This being perceived SAXONY. by *Augustus*, who found that whilst he was contending for a foreign Crown his hereditary Dominions would inevitably be ruined, he resolved to make Peace at any Rate.

A Negotiation being immediately entered into a Treaty of Treaty was signed at *Alt-Ranfstadt* of which the princi- ALT-RAN- STADT. pal Conditions were: That *Augustus* should retain the Title of King, but that he should renounce that of King of *Poland* and acknowledge *Stanislaus*; and that Count *Parkul* Minister from the *Czar* to *Augustus* of whom *Charles* was determined to make an Example should be delivered up.

Not long after *Mardesfeldt* who being ignorant of this AUGUSTUS Treaty had refused to listen to some Proposals from *Au-* retires into *gustus* was defeated; and the latter in a Council held at SAXONY. *Cracaw* forbade all his Subjects to assist the *Swedes*. This looked as if he did not intend to observe the Treaty with *Charles*; but his setting out soon after privately for *Saxony* plainly shewed it to be done with no other View than to amuse the *Poles* until he could get out of the Kingdom.

In the Beginning of the next Year *Stanislaus* was ac- 1707. knowledged by most of the Powers of *Europe*; and *Au-* STANISLAUS, *gustus* himself who was glad to deliver at any Rate his acknowledg- ed by many Powers. Subjects from the Oppressions of the *Swedes* wrote him a congratulatory Letter upon the Occasion. The Friends of *Augustus* being thus abandoned held an Assembly at *Lublin*; in which for they were resolved not to acknowledge *Stanislaus* the Throne was declared vacant, and hav-

having entered into an Alliance with the *Czar* their Design was to proceed to a new Election: But the Return of *Charles* whose Army was both augmented and enriched during its stay in *Saxony* prevented it. By the End of the Year this victorious Prince had driven the *Russians* quite out of *Poland*; but as nothing less than ruining their Army would satisfy him he without considering the Consequences thereof resolved to penetrate into *Russia*.

CHARLES goes into RUSSIA. A Body of Troops was left in *Poland* under *Baron Krassaw* to assist *Stanislaus*; But nothing considerable happened there in the Year 1708.

KRASSAW left to assist STANISLAUS. Upon receiving Advice that the *Czar* had ruined beyond the Hopes of Recovery the Affairs of *Charles* his Enemy *Augustus* determined to attempt the regaining of a Throne, which the Necessity of the Times had forced him to quit. Having published a Manifesto in which he declared that his Ministers had exceeded their Commission; and that the *Swedes* themselves notwithstanding the hard Terms thereof to which he was forced to consent had first violated the Treaty; *Augustus* entered *Poland* with an Army early in the Year 1709.

1709. As his Friends were continually going over to *Augustus*, who had had an Interview with the *Czar* at *Tborn*, *Stanislaus* finding it impossible to maintain his Ground thought it the best Way to secure himself while this could be done by retiring with the *Swedish* General *Krassaw*. In the Year 1710 *Augustus* was congratulated by the Nobility and Senate upon his happy Return; and Measures were taken to prevent the Return of the *Swedes* who were in *Pomerania* into the Kingdom. A large Fine was moreover set upon the Town of *Danzick* for its Partiality to *Stanislaus*; and the *Russians* took *Elbing* from the *Swedes*.

1711. On the Commencement of a War in the next Year betwixt the *Sultan* and the *Czar* the latter had an Interview with *Augustus* at *Varislow*, and it was resolved in a Diet that the Republick should take Part therein: But there was no need for the Republick to do this; for before the End of the Campaign a Treaty was concluded; of which one Article was that neither of the two Powers should meddle in the Affairs of *Poland*. As *Pomerania* was now become the Seat of the War with

with *Sweden* some neighbouring *German* Powers proposed a Treaty of Neutrality for this Province. *Augustus* and his Allies consented thereto: but by their King's Obstinacy, who notwithstanding all he had suffered would not accept of this advantageous Offer, the *Swedes* lost in a short Time all that belonged to them in *Germany*.

In a Diet held at *Warsaw* in *June* 1712 the Acts of the Diet of *Sandomir* were confirmed; and all subsequent Acts and particularly the Election of *Stanislaus* were declared to be void. Some Things were moreover agreed upon for the Security of *Augustus*, and it was resolved to rid the Kingdom as soon as possible of the *Russians*; yet there was a restless Party who watched for an Opportunity of involving their already exhausted Country in new Troubles. A Conspiracy was next Year formed by one *Jablonski*, whose Design was to make Way for the Return of *Stanislaus* by the Assassination of *Augustus*; and a large Body of *Turks* advanced at the Solicitation as it is said of the King of *Sweden* to *Chotzim*, under the Pretence that some Fortifications had been there erected contrary to the Treaty of *Carlowitz*. By the Vigilance however of *Augustus* all the Schemes of his Enemies were frustrated; yet the Maintenance of the Troops which he thought it necessary to raise upon this Occasion furnished the Disaffected with a Handle of Complaint. On his Return in *July* 1714 from *Saxony*, where he had been for six Months, he received *Kiowski* and *Schmiegoelski* two of his most inveterate Enemies into Favour; and for the Sake of easing the People gave Orders for thirteen *Saxon* Regiments to quit the Kingdom.

1712.
Diet of
WARSAW.

1713.
Conspiracy
against Au-
GUSTUS.

The Nobility now desired *Augustus* to call a general Diet on Horseback: Which being refused, because he apprehended it might excite fresh Disturbances, divers of them did assemble of their own Accord in the Palatinate of *Cracaw* and *Sandomir*. He hereupon recalled Part of his *Saxon* Troops, and threatened that as this was done without the Authority of either himself, the *Primate*, or any College of the Senate lawfully convened, he would unless they dismounted and dispersed immediately treat them all as Rebels. After this a Confederacy was entered into by the Malecontents; but by the brave and

Divers of the Nobility give him much Uneasiness.

pru-

prudent Conduct of General *Flemming* the fatal Consequences which might naturally be expected therefrom were prevented.

Quarrel at
THORN
which cost ma-
ny Protestants
their Lives,
1724.

A Quarrel arising in the Year 1724 betwixt the Lads of the *Jesuits* College and the Townsmen of *Thorn* the latter in their Heat attacked the Colloge, and after a Kind of Siege which lasted some Hours broke into the Church; From whence amongst other Images they carried one of the *Virgin Mary* which was burnt in Triumph. As the chief Magistrate instead of endeavouring to suppress the Riot had encouraged the Townsmen he was condemned by some Commissioners sent from *Poland* to enquire into it, and was afterwards beheaded. Many of the Ring-leaders were also executed; and it was resolved that for the future the Law by which Part of the Magistrates of this Town were to be *Catholicks* and Part *Protestants* should be carried strictly into Execution. It was moreover ordered that the *Bemordius* should be restored to a Convent now used as a *Protestant* School; and in order to justify this Step the Republick of *Poland* insisted, that these Monks had preserved a Right to this Convent by all along protesting against the Seising thereof by the Protestants. The Protestants answered that as the Government of the Town was in their Hands and they were in Possession of the Convent at the Signing of the Treaty of *Oliva* the making of any Alteration in these Matters would be an Infraction of this. The Kings of *Great-Britain*, *Sweden* and *Prussia*, and some other Powers did moreover interpose warmly in Favour of the Protestants; but as *Augustus* declared that he had no Hand in the Thing they did not choose to come to Extremities.

Dispute con-
cerning COUR-
LAND.

The Poles had about the same Time another Affair upon their Hands that gave them a good deal of Uneasiness, to understand which rightly it is necessary to look back. About the Year 1561 *Gesbard Ketter* Grand Master of the *Teutonic* Order in *Lithonia* was upon his renouncing the *Catholic* Religion made Duke of *Courland*, which was before Part of *Livonia*. He however did Homage for this Dutchy to *Poland*; and his Posterity enjoyed it as a Fief of the *Polish* Crown. In the Year 1719 the King of *Prussia* proposed to the King and Republick

publick of Poland the giving the eventual Investiture of this Dutchy, Ferdinand its present Master the last Duke of the House of Kettler being unlikely to have Children, to the Margrave of Brandenburg-Swedi, who was descended from a Branch of the House of Kettler; and in order to induce them to comply with this Proposal promised that he should discharge the Debts it was then liable to. The Czar whose Niece was Dutchess Dowager of *Friedrich* Predecessor of Ferdinand liked this Proposal, because his Niece had a large Demand upon Courland: But the Poles were desirous of having it annexed to Poland. As the States of Courland extremely anxious to preserve their Independency would hear nothing of this it was proposed, that Count Maurice of Saxo a Natural Son of the King of Poland should marry the Dutchess Dowager and succeed upon the Death of Ferdinand. Ferdinand who resided at *Dantzick*, because the Czar being resolved to keep his Niece in Possession of Courland until her Demand was satisfied he was not able to assert his Right, protested against the Letters issued in his Name for calling a Diet; yet the States met and Count Maurice was in the Year 1725 chosen for his Successor. After all this the Poles, who began to suspect he had a Design of securing the Polish Crown for his Son the Electoral Prince of Saxony, forced Augustus to set aside this Election in Favour of Maurice, and they would not be satisfied until he had quitted Courland.

The Diet called in the Year 1728 did not meet: because of the King's Illness; and in that which met in the next Year the Disputes ran so high that no Business could be done. After the Departure of Augustus, who hereupon left the Kingdom abruptly, the Lithuanians protested against every Thing which might at any Time be done contrary to the Right of Election and the other Priviledges of the Republick; against the Incorporation that had been made of the Saxons Troops with those of the Crown; against the King's going out of the Kingdom without the Leave of the Senate; and against the conferring of Offices upon Foreigners. As the Diet called in the Year 1730 broke up also without coming to any

Reso-

Resolutions *Augustus* summoned an extraordinary one to meet in *September* 1732; but the Divisions were as great in this as in the other two. He hereupon ordered another extraordinary one to meet upon the 26th of the ensuing *January*: But his Death which happened a few Days after its meeting prevented his seeing what would have been the Result thereof.

Death of AUGUSTUS.

1733.
A Double Election.

As *Augustus* had been for some Time busy in paving the Way for his Son's Election, so on the other Hand the Primate and such as disliked this had taken their Measures to prevent it. The Emperor moreover disgusted with *Augustus*, because he had observed some Thing in Agitation betwixt him, *France* and *Bavaria*, which although nothing thereof transpired he apprehended would be prejudicial to the *Pragmatick Sanction*, did all he could to traverse his Designs; and he had no great Difficulty to prevail upon the Court of *Petersburg* to do the same. While the Nobility were entering into a Confederacy for securing the Freedom of Election the *French* Minister at *Warsaw* was very busy in forming a Party to raise *Stanislaus* to the Throne he had before sat upon. After his withdrawing from *Poland* *Charles XII.* finding the Restoration of this Prince impracticable, had given him for his Support the Revenue of the Dutchy of *Dux-Pents*, which was the Patrimony of *Charles's* Ancestors before their Advancement to the *Swedish* Throne. As this Favour was discontinued by the Successor of *Charles Stanislaus* went into *France*, the usual Asylum of unfortunate Princes, and had some Years after the Happiness to see his only Daughter become Queen thereof. At the same Time, as the young Elector of *Saxony* had shewed a quite different Disposition from that of his Father with Regard to the Court of *Vietna*, the *Imperial* and *Russian* Ministers had Orders to push his Interest in *Poland*. The Consequence was a double Election; but as the Party of *Augustus* was backed by a *Russian* Army *Stanislaus* thought proper to go for Shelter to *Dantzick*. After staying there some Time in Expectation of powerful Succours from *France* he retired to *Königsberg* the Capital of *Prussia*; and the *Dantzickers* were forced to submit to *Augustus*.

Being

Being now Master of the whole Kingdom *Augustus* AUGUSTUS was forthwith acknowledged by most of the Powers II. 1733. of *Europe*; and upon the signing of the Preliminaries of *Vionna* betwixt *France* and the Emperor *Statislaus* renounced all his Pretensions to the *Polish* Crown. *Augustus* would not enter into the War which soon after began betwixt the Emperor and the *Sultan*; and as he set out upon a Principle of being tender of the Rights and Privileges of the People; in which Kings will ever find their Account, his Reign has not hitherto been disturbed by any intestine Commotion.

The *Poles* must be considered as divided into Nobility and Peasants: For the Inhabitants of the Towns in the *POLES*. *Poland* are but of small Account, the Mechanicks who reside there being for the most part Foreigners. As the Peasants moreover being little better than Slaves are quite rude and uncivilized, what we are going to say of the Manners of the *Poles* can only be applied to the Nobility: These are in the general of an honest, open Temper; and although they are proud and love a great deal of Respect they know how to be civil in their Turn. They affect a sort of Pomp in their Discourse, and will be magnificent in their Entertainments whether they can afford it or not. They keep a watchful Eye upon the Conduct of their King, and do not scruple wherenever they apprehend any Design upon the Constitution to enter into Confederacies against him. This Jealousy of their Rights and Privileges in itself laudable lays them open to the Arts of designing Men, and sometimes hurries them into Conspiracies and Rebellions. They do not want Courage: But they cannot well bear the Fatigues and Hardships of War. The *Polish* Infantry is but indifferent; for the Spirits of the lower Sort of People are quite broke by their servile State, and the Nobility will serve no other Way than on Horseback. Hence it is that the *Poles* are forced to hire foreign Infantry, or to make use of the *Cossacks* an intrepid People.

The Soil of *Poland* is so fertile, it being equally good Soil and Corn for Tillage or Pasture, that the *Poles* export annually modities of large Quantities of Corn and supply *Germany* with Oxen, POLAND. The Wool of *Poland* is pretty good and there are Plenty of Horses. *Lithuania* produces so much Honey, that

besides a vast deal which the Inhabitants use for Mead a large Quantity thereof is sent into foreign Countries. There are moreover exported from this Kingdom great Quantities of Wax, Linpen, Hemp, Flax, Pot-Ash, Salt and Wood; but the *Poles* are supplied by Foreigners with Woollen and Silken Goods, Tapestry, Spanish and Hungarian Wines, and all sorts of Spices. Upon the whole it is plain, that if the *Poles* were frugal and would apply themselves to the Encouragement of Manufactures the Balance of Trade would be greatly on their Side. This Kingdom which is of very large Extent is well peopled and full of Towns and Villages. It has been said that not less than 90,000 Towns and Villages belong to the King and the Nobility; 100,600 to the Bishops and Canons; and 60,550 to the Convents and other Ecclesiasticks. If this Calculation be true there are in the whole 251,150 Towns and Villages.

Its Strength.

The Strength of Poland consists chiefly in its Nobility, from which a Body of 150,000 or as some say of 200,000 Cavalry can be raised. This seems to be almost incredible except Servants are included; but it is certain that the Nobility are no where so numerous as in this Country. The *Poles* could likewise raise Money enough to support a large Body of Infantry; but the Misfortune is that the Nobility and Clergy, without whose Consent no Money can be raised, are quite averse except the Necessity be very urgent, to the laying on of Taxes, and soon grow weary of paying them: For which Reason a War is seldom continued long with proper Vigour. Besides this whenever the Nobility are summoned to appear in the Field they come very slowly thereto, and cannot well brook to be under Command. An Army composed of Nobility has moreover another Inconvenience; which is that wherever there are 10,000 fighting Men the Number of their Servants and Followers makes up at least four Times that Number: Which notwithstanding the Plentifulness of the Country frequently causes a Scarcity of Provisions and Forage.

Of the Polish Constitution.

The *Poles* have a Head who bears the Title and lives in the Splendor of a King: But upon examining into the Matter it appears that he is no more than the Head of a Republick. The Polish Nobility, in whom alone the Right of choosing a King is vested, do fre

frequently give the Preference to a Person of the Blood Royal; but they never choose one until the Throne is vacant: Wisely judging that an Interregnum is the proper Time to rectify the Abuses of Government which may have crept in during a former Reign, and to guard against the Encroachments of a Successor upon their Liberties. During an Interregnum the Archbishop of *Gnesna* who is Primate is Regent; and to prevent Disorders Justice is administered with more Severity than at other Times. It has been for a long Time a Maxim with the *Poles* rather to choose for their King a foreign Prince than one of their own Nobility; because the former is supposed to be free from Partiality to any particular Family: But they are always averse to the choosing of a Prince of the House of *Austria*, lest they should share the same Fate as the *Hungarians* and *Bohemians* have done. The Election of *Sigismund* of *Sweden* was a very great Misfortune to *Poland*; and indeed the Situation of these two Kingdoms is such, and their Interest so jarring, that they can scarce be both happy under the same Prince. The King's Revenue which is very considerable, arises from the Lands appropriated to the Crown; to which no Addition can be made by Purchase or otherwise. He has the Disposal of all vacant Benefices, Offices and Dignities; but he cannot keep any of these in his own Hands; or give them to his own Children or Foreigners, without the Consent of the Senate: Nor can he without such Consent impose a Tax, make a new Law, enter into a War or undertake any Matter of Consequence. The Diet of *Poland* is composed of Bishops and some Abbots; of Governors of Provinces called *Palatines* or *Waywoodes*; of *Castellans* who are Governors of Castles; of the principal Officers of State; and of Nuncio's who are Deputies from the Nobility of the different Provinces. The Power of these Nuncio's is something like that of the *Roman* Tribunes, the Protest of one of them being sufficient to make void any Act of a Diet. As the Nuncio's speak with the utmost Freedom concerning the King or his Ministers Matters are sometimes debated with great Warmth; and the Caprice of one of them being sufficient to put a stop to the Proceedings thereof it frequently happens that a Diet breaks up without coming to any Resolution;

solution: For by the Constitution of the Kingdom which is seldom broke through, and when it is, only for a few Days, no Diet can sit above six Weeks. The Administration of Justice, for the King, has nothing to do therein except some Part of his Revenue be concerned, is according to a Regulation made in the Reign of Stephen in the Hands of a certain Number of the Nobility, who are changed every Year; from whom there is no Appeal except in some extraordinary Cases to the Diet. The Poles naturally fond of Liberty, are great Lovers of and very jealous of any Change in this Form of Government; but it must be allowed to be a very improper one for any considerable Undertaking that requires Dispatch; Because the Forces of this great Kingdom cannot be exerted to Advantage if there happens to be a Difference betwixt the King and the Nobility. It cannot be denied that the Right of choosing a King brings much Money into Poland, since that Candidate is most likely to succeed who gives most amongst the leading Families; but if a proper Attention be had to the Civil Wars, Confederacies and Ravages of the opposite Parties, to which it is hereby exposed, it seems upon the whole to be a Misfortune to the Kingdom. It is moreover to be doubted whether the Power of the Nuncios be not too great; for it is scarce reasonable that it should be in the Power of a single Member, who may be indiscreet, rapacious, obstinate or traitorous, to prevent such Resolutions in a Diet as are absolutely necessary for the Peace or Security of the State; Yet so long as the Maxim prevails, *That this Privilege of the Nuncio's is the very Soul of Polish Liberty*, it would be both impracticable and dangerous to attempt any Alteration therein.

*Interest of
POLAND with
Regard to
RUSSIA.*

As Russia is the most formidable Enemy of Poland, it being in the Power of the former whose Troops are better and more numerous to overrun the latter at any Time, it is of great Consequence for the Poles to avoid a War with the Russians. The good Understanding which has for some Time subsisted betwixt these two Nations may in a great Measure be ascribed to the Obligations laid both upon the late King and the present by the Russians; for the Restoration of the former and the raising of the latter to the Throne was principally owing to them.

It would be imprudent in the *Poles* who are not a **TURKY.** Match for them to attack the *Turks*. On the other Hand in Case these should attack the *Poles* the latter would undoubtedly be assisted by *Russia* and other *Christian Powers*. Upon the whole the *Poles* should if possible be upon such Terms with the *Turks* that these may in Case of a Quarrel with *Russia* cause a Diversion in their Favour.

The *German Empire* notwithstanding its Superiority is **GERMANY.** not to be feared by *Poland*; for it is not likely that *Russia* or even *Turky* would suffer this Empire to become Mistress of *Poland*. On the contrary it would be very imprudent for *Poland* to think of attacking the *German Empire*; and it is undoubtedly for the mutual Interest of *Germany* and *Poland* to be upon good Terms; for the former can assist the latter in Case of a War with *Turky*, *Russia* or *Prussia*; and the latter is capable of being a good Ally to the former against the *Turks*, or of being a dangerous Enemy in Case of its being at War with *France*. From the House of *Austria* singly *Poland* is in no Danger. Yet, besides that the *Poles* carry on a considerable Trade in Oxen, Salt and other Things therein, as the Dominions of the House of *Austria* border for a long Way together on *Poland* it is for her Interest, since this House may be a serviceable Friend or a mischievous Foe, to cultivate a good Understanding therewith.

The King of *Prussia* would find it difficult nor would **PRUSSIA.** other Powers and particularly *Russia* suffer him to make Conquests upon *Poland*. As moreover his Kingdom of *Prussia* is separated from the rest of his Dominions by *Polish Prussia* it is best for him to be in Amity with *Poland*. On the contrary while this Prince does not attack the *Poles* it would be imprudent in these to break with him; because by attempting to recover *Prussia*, which would not be easy for them to do, they would disoblige him who is able to assist them powerfully against either the *Germans*, *Russians* or *Turks*.

As the Provinces which used to be the Bones of **SWEDEN.** contention betwixt them are now ceded to *Russia* the *Swedes* and *Poles* have nothing to quarrel about. On the contrary *Poland* ought to cultivate a good Understanding with *Sweden*; because the latter is able and the Hopes of repairing her Losses would make her ready to cause a

powerful Diversion in Favour of the former in the Case of a War with *Russia*.

DENMARK. While the Differences betwixt *Poland* and *Sweden* subsisted it was of Consequence for the former to be in Alliance with *Denmark*. At present *Poland* has nothing to hope for or fear from this Kingdom, except it be her raising the Toll for passing the *Sound* which would be prejudicial to the Trade of *Dantzick*.

Other EUROPEAN Powers. With the other *European Powers* *Poland* has little or no Connection further than Trade may be concerned. *France* has indeed for some Years been forming a Party in this Kingdom; but from what happened after the two last Elections it appears plainly that she is not capable of doing either much good or much hurt to the *Poles*.

C H A P. XII.

O F T H E

R U S S I A N E M P I R E.

THE Accounts of the Origin of the *Russian* Empire and of the Actions of its first Princes are very uncertain and confused; nor is it indeed to be expected that there should be any good Account of what has happened amongst a People who were till of late Years quite barbarous and illiterate. It is however pretty evident that this extensive Empire was at first composed of many petty States.

Upon the Marriage of *Wolodimir* a Prince of the *Ruf-CHRISTIA-* *fians* with *Anne* Sister to *Basilius Porphyrogenetus* Empe-NITY planted, *ror* of the *East*, which was celebrated about the Year 989, 989. the Christian Religion was introduced into *Russia*.

George another Prince of the *Russians* being slain in *RUSSIA* sub- *Battle* by *Battus* King of the *Tartars* in the Year 1237 *dued* by the *Russians* fell under Subjection to the *Tartars*; and *TARTARS*, continued in a State of Dependence upon these until the 1237. Time of *John* Son of *Basilius* the Blind, who began to reign in the Year 1450.

This Prince after throwing off the Yoke of the *Tar-JOHN I. 1450.* *tars* subdued divers petty Princes and amongst others the *He* *subdues* Duke of *Great-Novogrod*; from whom he as it is said *many* petty took three Hundred Cart Loads of Gold and Silver. *States.* Having by the Union of all their Dominions to his own laid the Foundation of the present Empire he built *Iwanogrod* near *Narva*.

Basilius V. his Son and Successor made himself *Maf-BASILIUS V* *ter* of *Pleskew* before a free *Town*, and took *Smolensko* from

the Poles: But being afterwards entirely routed by the *Casan Tartars* these plundered *Moscow*.

JOHN II.
1553.

At his Death in the Year 1553 *John Basilowitz* his Son a most cruel Prince succeeded. He subdued the Kingdoms of *Casan* and *Astrocan Tartary* and annexed both these to *Russia*. Having afterwards used the *Livonians* and *Esthoniens* very cruelly *Revel* in *Livonia* and all *Esthonia* submitted to the *Swedes*; and the rest of *Livonia* put itself under the Protection of the *Poles*. A War with *Poland* ensuing he was at first successful; but the *Poles* did in the End take *Pleskow* and several other Places from him.

THEODORE
I. 1584.

From *Theodore* the Son of *John* quite a weak Prince, who succeeded in the Year 1584, the *Swedes* took a good deal of the Province of *Ingria*.

BORIS.

As *Theodore* died without Issue *Boris Gudunow* his Brother-in-Law was raised to the Throne: But it cost him dear; for his Right thereto was disputed by the Emperor *Demetrius*, and he died overwhelmed with Misfortunes in the Year 1605.

THEODORE
II. 1605.

Theodore Borisowitz his Son was hereupon proclaimed *Czar*. He enjoyed this Dignity however but a short Time; for as the Majority of the People adhered to *Demetrius* he was about six Months after made Prisoner and assassinated; and *Basilius Soffis* was advanced to the Throne.

BASILIUS
VI. 1605.

For the Sake of obtaining Assistance from the *Swedes* against *Demetrius*, who being backed by the *Poles* was too strong for *Basilius*, he promised to give up *Kexholm* to the *Swedes*; but when his own Turn was served he refused to make this Promise good: Hereupon the *Swedish* General *Pontus de la Gardie* seized this Place: And having afterwards made himself Master of *Carolia* and of all that remained to the *Russians* of *Ingria* both these Provinces were annexed to the Crown of *Sweden*. *Basilius* being grown quite contemptible by his ill Success both against the *Swedes* and *Poles* he was in the Year 1610 delivered into the Hands of the latter; and in order to avert the Danger which threatened them from the *Poles* the *Russians* conferred the Crown upon *Uladislaus* Son of *Sigismund II.* of *Poland*.

As

As this was however done only to gain Time the *Ruf-* ULADI-
Uslans soon revolted, and falling upon the *Polish* GAR- SLAUS, 1616
Prison in *Moscow* which consisted of 7000 Men would
 have put the whole thereof to the Sword, if the *Poles* had
 not after defending themselves bravely retired into the
 Citadel: In Revenge the *Poles* set Fire to the Town
 in many Places; by which a vast Number of Persons lost
 their Lives. The *Poles* being afterwards closely besieged
 by the *Russians* a Resolution was taken, as Provisions be-
 gan to fail and they saw no Hope of being relieved by
Sigismund their King, of cutting their Way through the
 Army of the Besiegers. This was effected without
 much Loss: But the Citadel of *Moscow* soon after fell
 into the Hands of the *Russians*; and in the Year 1613
Michael Foederowitz Son of *Theodore Mikitowitz* by a
 Daughter of *John Basilowitz* was proclaimed:

Two Years after an Attempt was made by the *Poles* MICHAEL,
 to reestablish *Uladislaus* upon the *Russian* Throne: But 1613.
 this was frustrated by the Prudence of *Michael*, and
 having afterwards accommodated Matters with *Sweden*
 he put the Affairs of *Russia* upon a very good Footing.

Alexis Michaelowitz Son and Successor of *Michael* at- ALEXIS.
 tacked the *Poles* in the Year 1645; and after taking
 from them *Smolensko* and *Kiow* committed most horrid
 Ravages in *Lithuania*. Having in the Year 1656 in- He invades
 vaded *Livonia* *Alexis* made himself Master of *Derps*; *Ko-* LIVONIA.
kenbanke and some other Places: But he was repulsed with
 considerable Loss from before *Riga*; and by a Treaty
 concluded afterwards with *Sweden* he restored all he
 had taken in this Province:

Alexis was much disturbed about the Year 1669 by Rebellion in
Stephen Ratsin, who had made himself Master of *Casan* CASAN and
 and *Astracan*; but having taken *Stephen* Prisoner and ASTRACAN,
 punished him according to his Deserts the rest of his re- 1669.
 bellious Subjects were soon brought back to their Duty.
 The Submission of many of the *Cossacks* to this Prince
 gave Occasion to a War with the *Turks*; in which he
 gained no Advantage.

Upon the Death of *Alexis* in the Year 1675 *Theodore* THEODORE
 his Son who was quite young succeeded. During this III. 1675.
 Reign which lasted only seven Years nothing remark-
 able happened.

Peter

JOHN III. and *Peter* younger Brother to *Theodore* was now raised to the Throne, his other Brother *John* being by Reason of his Defects both in Mind and Body judged incapable of governing. As *Peter* was by a second Wife *Sophia* Sister of *John* by the same Mother out of Regard for him, or because she hoped if so weak a Prince could be placed upon the Throne to get the Management into her own Hands, opposed the Elevation of *Peter* with all her Might. An almost general Insurrection being stirred up by her it was to prevent Mischief agreed that *John* should reign jointly with his Brother, and that all publick Affairs should be administered in both their Names.

Plot for dethroning
PETER, 1688.

As this Regulation did not satisfy the ambitious *Sophia* she in the Year 1688 laid a Scheme in Concert with Prince *Gallizin*, to whom she was on the Point of marrying, for dethroning *Peter*. Every thing was disposed for carrying this Scheme into Execution; but it being discovered she was sent into a Convent where she died in the Year 1704, and the Prince being sent into *Siberia* he spent the Remainder of his Days there in a most miserable Condition. Hereupon *John* who had taken no Part in these Intrigues resigned his Share of the Government to *Peter*.

JOHN resigns his Share of the GOVERNMENT.
War with the
TURKS.

Peter now sole Monarch acted vigorously against the *Turks*, against whom a War had been carried on for the Space of two Years with but indifferent Success. After taking *Asoph* and gaining divers other Advantages Proposals of Peace were made by the *Sultan*: And a Truce for two Years was concluded.

PETER visits the principal States of EUROPE, 1697.

Having thus put a glorious End to the *Turkish* War *Peter* made a Triumphant Entry into *Moscow*; and not long after for the Sake of getting rid of that barbarous Ignorance in which his Ancestors had lived resolved to visit the principal States of *Europe*. Setting out *incognito* in the Year 1697 he made the Tour of *Holland* and *England*; and visited the Courts of *Dresden* and *Vienna*. In all the States he passed through he took Care to contract a personal Acquaintance with the respective Sovereigns and the principal Persons employed by them: But he conceived a more than ordinary Veneration

ration for the Emperor *Leopold*. *Peter* examined into many Things in every Country with great Diligence; but the Art of building Ships being the Thing he intended to make himself Master of he applied himself principally to this. After having although a powerful Monarch served as it were an Apprenticeship thereto he engaged some of the best Workmen in every Branch of it to go with him into *Russia*. Instead moreover of preventing his Subjects, as it had been a Maxim with the Predecessors of *Peter* to do, from going abroad he encouraged the Spirit of Travelling in young Gentlemen as much as possible, that having learned the Manners and Customs of polite Nations they might at their Return Home assist him in his Design of civilizing the *Russians*.

This Conduct for which he deserved their utmost Esteem drew upon *Peter* the Hatred of the Peasants, who could not bear the Thought of any Change in what they had received from their Ancestors; and a Conspiracy was entered into for preventing his Return to his Dominions. An Aversion to him was at the same Time spirited up by the Princess *Sophia*: But as *Peter*, who in his Way home in *September* 1699 had an Interview with *Augustus* in *Poland*, arrived at *Moscow* before he was expected her Schemes were all frustrated. His Return was fatal to the Conspirators six Thousand of these being put to Death; and to put an End to all Hopes of her mounting the Throne he caused the Princess *Sophia* to be for the future more strictly guarded. The Truce with the *Turks* being expired it was renewed for thirty Years; and it was agreed that *Peter* should keep *Asoph*: But it was stipulated that his Subjects should not sail upon the *Black-Sea*.

Shortly after War was declared against *Sweden*; for which the Pretence was that the *Swedes* instead of paying him due Honours when he passed by *Riga* had made him pay very dear for every Thing he or his Followers had Occasion for: But the true Reason was, and his Ambassadors at *Stockholm* and the *Hague* declared nothing less would satisfy him, that he wanted a Port in the *Baltick*. Having entered *Livonia* *Peter* in *October* 1700 laid Siege to *Narva*: But by the expeditious

Battle of
NARVA.

ditions and unexpected coming up of *Charles XII.* of Sweden his Troops before this Place were defeated with great Loss and forced to retire.

1701.

In the Beginning of the next Year *Peter* had an Interview with *Augustus* at *Birsen* in *Lithuania*. The Design of this was to bring the Republick of *Poland* which was quite averse thereto into the War against *Sweden*. The Troops of *Peter* were in this Campaign worsted in endeavouring to hinder the *Swedes* from passing the *Duna*: But they had the Advantage in one or two inconsiderable Actions which afterwards happened.

Battle of the
DUNA.

1702.

PETERSBURG
founded.

The *Russians* having in the next Campaign taken *Notteburg* they after increasing the Fortifications thereof called it *Schuffelburg*: And the Foundation of a new Town called *St. Petersburg* was laid at *Nien Sebantz*.

1704.

PETER enters
POLAND.

In the Year 1704 *Narva*, *Derps* and *Iwangrad* were taken from the *Swedes*; and in the same Year an Alliance was concluded betwixt *Russia* and *Poland*.

1705.

Peter pursuant thereto entered *Poland* in the next Campaign with a powerful Army: And after a bloody Action betwixt the *Swedish* General *Lawenbaupt* and the *Russian* General *Czaremetow* the latter made himself Master of *Courland*.

1706.

A Fleet fitted
out at PE-
TERSBERG.

In the Year 1706 the *Russians* acted only upon the defensive at Land: But a fine Fleet of Ships which the *Czar* commanded in Person was fitted out at *Petersburg*.

1707.

The RUSSI-
ANS make
great Havock
in POLAND.

While the *Swedish* Army was in the next Year in *Saxony* *Peter* again entered *Poland* with an Army: And the Towns of *Rawitsch*, *Brassen*, *Bijonoway*, *Kalish* and *Lissa*, which all held out for *Stamhaus*, being set on Fire many of the Inhabitants perished in the Flames. Upon the Return of the *Swedish* Army into *Poland* the *Russians* thought proper to retire; but in their Way they put many Places to Fire and Sword.

1708.

Battle of
MOHILOFF.

After the Battle of *Mobiloff* in the Year 1708, in which the *Russians* sustained great Loss, the *Swedes* passed the *Nieper*; They however soon found the Inconvenience of being without Magazines and in an Enemy's Country, It was said that *Charles* at one Time had it in his Head to advance to *Moscow* and dethrone *Peter* as he had done *Augustus*: But the Misfortune which happened

happened to *Lewenhaupt*, put an End to this *Pro-Battle of the*
jeff. This *Gunnery*, who was bringing up a large *NIEPER*.
 Convoy of which the *Swedes* were in great Want, had
 force, passed the *Nieper* before the *Russians* fell upon
 him with such Vigour that he lost the whole Convoy;
 and had so many killed or made Prisoners that of
 15,000 Men under his Command he did not join
 his Master with above 4000. To add to this Misfor-
 tune the *Swedish Army*, which lay the following Winter
 in the *Ukraine*, suffered greatly from the extreme
 Coldness of the Weather. *Mazepa* Chief of the *Cossacks*
 having about this Time revolted to *Charles*, *Peter*
 in Revenge caused him to be hanged in Effigy at *Baturin*
 the Place of his Residence.

As soon as the Season would permit *Charles* con- 1709.
 trary to the Advice of all his Generals except *Mazepa*,
 who were for advancing directly to *Moscow*, laid Siege
 to *Poltowa*. But as many Things necessary for the
 Siege were wanting it went on very slow; and in the
 mean Time the *Russians*, who were continually receiv-
 ing Reinforcements, escaped so as almost to surround
 the *Swedish Army*. At length Provisions failing *Charles*
 found himself under a Necessity of either forcing the
 Lines of the *Russians*, and cutting his Way through the
 whole *Russian Army*, or starving. The former being re-
 solved upon the Attempt was made upon the 8th of *Battle of*
July; but as the *Russians* besides their advantageous Si- *PULTOWA*.
 tuation were much superior in Number his Army was
 at first sustaining great Loss entirely routed. The *Swedes*
 fled with such Precipitation that some of them did not
 taste any Thing for three Days together. Yet many
 fell in the Pursuit; and being at last hemmed in upon
 the Banks of the *Nieper* they were all, except the Body
 Guards who at great Hazard of their Lives had passed
 this River with *Charles*, made Prisoners. His whole
 Army being thus ruined *Charles* at the Persuasion of
Mazepa retired to *Bender* which belonged to the *Turks*; *CHARLES*
 and sent Ambassadors to *Constantinople* to beg the *Pro-retires to*
 sosition of the Sultan. A Demand was at the same *BENDER*.
 Time made at the *Ottoman Court* by the Ministers of
Russia that his Enemy should be delivered into his Hands.
 After an Interview had towards the Close of this Cam-
 paign

paign betwixt *Peter* and *Augustus* at *Thorn*, in which the Measures necessary for supporting the latter on the *Polish* Throne were agreed upon, the former made a publick Entry amidst Thousands of *Swedish* Prisoners into *Moscow*.

1710.
Duke of
COURLAND
restored.

In the Year 1710 the *Russians* made themselves Masters of *Wiburg*, *Riga*, *Danawande*, *Kexholm* and other Places in *Livonia* and *Finland*; and the *Swedes* being obliged to evacuate *Courland* *Frederick* its Duke was upon marrying a Niece of *Peter's* reestablished in this Dutchy.

1711.
War with the
TURKS.

The *Sultan* being prevailed upon by *Charles* and the *Kan of Tartary*, who acted in Concert with *Charles*, to break with *Russia*, an Army headed by the Grand Vizir was under the Pretence that the *Czar* had in pursuing the *Swedes* violated the Territories of the *Sultan* ordered in the Year 1711 to march towards *Russia*. In order to prevent a War with the *Turks* which interfered with his Designs against *Sweden* *Peter* offered to make a Satisfaction to the *Sultan*, and to grant *Charles* a Passage under an Escort of 5000 *Turks* through his own Dominions, and to procure the same for him in *Poland*: As these Offers were refused *Peter* advanced for the sake of being joined by the Troops of *Moldavia* towards the *Pruth*: But the *Turks* who were too quick for him had passed this River and came up with him before he expected it. A bloody Battle which lasted the 11th, 12th, and 13th of *July* ensued without any great Advantage on either Side; yet as he was not joined by any Troops from *Moldavia*, as Provisions began to fail, and as the *Turkish* Army was greatly superior *Peter* made Proposals of Peace.

Battle of three
Days Continu-
ance.

Treaty with
the TURKS.

A Truce for two Days being agreed upon a Treaty was during this concluded: Of which the principal Articles were that *Asoph* should be delivered up to the *Turks*; that certain Forts near *Asoph* should be demolished; and that *Peter* should meddle no more in the Affairs of *Poland*. No mention was therein made of *Charles*; because the *Vizir* was much disgusted at his haughty Carriage. Having by this Treaty extricated his Army from the Difficulties it was under *Peter* for some Time delayed the delivering up of *Asoph*: But as Hostages were

were given for the doing thereof and he knew *Charles* would if possible stir up a fresh War it was done early in the next Year.

The *Sultan* charmed with the getting of *Afoph* forgot THE TURKS his reiterated Promises to *Charles* of making no Treaty grow weary without including him in it, and the Treaty was con- of CHARLES, firmed. The Hostages were however detained because 1711. *Peter* had not withdrawn his Troops from *Poland*; and the *Sultan* wanted moreover to have something settled concerning the Passage of *Charles*, of whom he was grown quite weary, into his own Dominions: As he was never satisfied with any Way proposed for his Return *Charles* in the Year 1713 received an Order to leave *Bender*. As he paid no Regard to this the *Kan* He is forced of *Tartary* attacked the House in which *Charles* had shut om BEN- himself up, and having forced him after suffering it DER, 1713. to be set on Fire about his Ears to come out carried him Prisoner to the *Sultan*, who was then at *Adria-*
nople.

While this unfortunate Prince continued thus at a Progress of Distance from his Dominions the *Russians* had taken the RUSSIANS. *Abo* and made themselves Masters of the Island of *Aland*; but they soon after quitted this Island. They had moreover took *Nybot* in the Province of *Savolatz*, and committed great Ravages upon the Coast of *Bothnia*.

Some *Russian* Troops had at the same Time a con- A large Body siderable Share in the Progress made by the *Allies* in *Po- of RUSSIANS *merania*; and a large Body of *Russians* was sent in the sent into the Year 1716 with a Design to make in Conjunction with EMPIRE, the *Danes* a Descent upon *Scania*: But some Difficulties 1716. arising about the carrying of this Design into Execution these Troops took up Quarters in the Duchy of *Mecklenburg*. As the Duke of *Macklenburg* had at this Time a Quarrel with his Nobility it was feared by some neighbouring States, that something prejudicial to the Liberties of the *Empire* might be done by *Peter* in Favour of this Duke who was his Nephew; and hence arose a Coolness betwixt *Peter* and the other *Allies*.*

Being determined in the next Year to make the Tour PETER goes of *France* *Peter* was, for he did not as in his former into FRANCE, Tour travel *incognito*, in his Way through *Holland* re- 1717. ceived at *Amsterdam* in a Manner suitable to his Dignity.

Upon his Arrival at *Paris* the Regent and the whole Court paid him the highest Honours; and during his Stay there he applied himself with the utmost Diligence to the Study of the Sciences. Having afterwards engaged some eminent Men in all Professions to go to *Petersburg* he returned Home; where he met with the most affecting Misfortune a Man could be tried with.

Conspiracy
against him.

His Son *Czarewicz* far from answering the Expectations which were raised from the great Care that had been taken in his Education went from Court in Disgust, and had for some Time concealed himself. Upon his Father's Return Home many Persons of the highest Rank of both Sexes suffered the most cruel Deaths for having entered into a Conspiracy against *Peter* in Favour of *Czarewicz*; and it being found that this Prince was privy thereto he was also condemned to die. The Apprehension of Death which he acknowledged to have justly deserved made such an Impression upon *Czarewicz* as to bring on an Apoplexy; which by carrying him off robbed his Father of the Pleasure he had promised himself from pardoning him.

Negotiations
with SWEDEN,
1718.

The Invasion meditated by *Baron Gortz* upon *Great-Britain* being laid aside he proposed an Accommodation betwixt the Courts of *Petersburg* and *Stockholm*. Conferences were in order thereto opened in the Island of *Aland*; and notwithstanding the seeming Difficulties it was highly probable they would have succeeded if the sudden Death of *Charles* had not happened. As this was followed with the Ruin of *Baron Gortz* and the Princesses who succeeded would not come into *Peter's* Terms the War was continued.

Treaty with
SWEDEN,
1721.

Upon the concluding of Peace betwixt *Sweden* and *Great-Britain* and *Denmark*, *Peter* for the sake of forcing the *Swedes* into his Terms made an Irruption into *Sweden*, and ravaged a great Extent of Country. Still the Court of *Stockholm* held out: But at Length a Treaty was concluded in the Year 1721 at *Noustadt*. By this *Sweden* ceded to *Russia* the Provinces of *Livonia*, *Esthonia* and *Ingria*; Part of *Carolia* and the District of *Wiburg*; the Towns of *Riga*, *Dunamunde*, *Pirnau*, *Revel*, *Derpt*, *Narva*, *Wiburg*, *Kexholm* and some others; the Islands of *Dagoe*, *Oeland* and *Moen*; and

and all the Islands in the Gulph of *Finland*. It was however stipulated that the Inhabitants of the Countries and Towns ceded should not be disturbed in the Exercise of their Religion: And the Swedes reserved to themselves the Liberty of buying annually at *Riga*, *Ravel* or *Arensburg*, Corn free from all Duties to the Amount of 50,000 *Rubles*. Upon the Reading of this Treaty, in the Senate it was decreed that *Peter*, who had before obtained the Surname of the *Great*, should have the Titles of *Father of his Country* and *Emperor of all the Russias*.

Having thus gloriously ended the *Swedish War*, *Peter* endeavoured in good Earnest to make his Subjects taste the Comforts of Peace. Some Mines which had long been neglected were again worked; he encouraged learned Men from all Parts to come to *Petersburg*; and having founded an Academy there upon the Model of the *French Academy* he honoured it with being himself a Member thereof.

The Progress of his Arms in the Years 1722 and 1723 upon the Coast of the *Caspian Sea* contributed a good deal to make this Sea, to which the Ancients were almost Strangers, well known. In the Year 1724 a Defensive Alliance was concluded with *Sweden*; and in the same Year the Provinces conquered from *Persia* were guarantied to *Russia* by a Treaty concluded with the *Sultan*.

As *Czarowitz* the Son of *Peter* left only one Son an Infant it was declared in an Assembly of the States the Year 1722, and confirmed by a solemn Oath, that the Person appointed by *Peter* for Successor should be acknowledged as such. *Peter* had resolved in his own Mind that the Empress should be the Person: But he thought it would be better to accustom the People by Degrees to render her the Honours he thought her worthy of than to declare her Successor immediately.

With a View to this he caused her to be crowned with all the Ceremonies which had been usual at the Coronation of a *Grecian Empress*, and with such Magnificence as had never been seen in *Russia*. The Duke of *Holstein*, who since the being deprived of his own Dominions had lived at *Petersburg*, for the Sake of engaging *Peter* more heartily

Death of
PETER.

CATHERINE,
1725.

Conspiracy
for dethroning
her.

PETER II.
1727.

tily in his Interest made an Offer of Marriage to his Daughter *Anne Petrouna*; but while Preparations were making for the Celebration thereof *Peter* fell ill of a Distemper, which carried him off in *February* 1725.

The Empress *Catherine Alexiowna* was immediately declared Sovereign of all the *Russias*; and an Oath of Allegiance being taken to her by the Senate and all Officers civil and military she was acknowledged as such by all the Powers of *Europe*. After the Celebration of his Marriage a Fleet was fitted out for resisting the Duke of *Holstein* to his Dominions: But it being apprehended at the Court of *London* that something was intended in Favour of the Pretender a British Fleet was sent into the *Baltick*; by which the Design of the *Russian* Fleet was frustrated.

Catherine pursued the Plan laid down by *Peter* who had so vastly aggrandized the Empire; nor did she make any considerable Change in the Ministers or Officers employed by him: Yet many were dissatisfied with her Administration. It being discovered that a Conspiracy was formed for deposing her and putting the Government into the Hands of *Peter Alexiowitz* Son of *Czangwitz*, of whose Education she had taken great Care; the Counts *Droier* and *Tolstoy*, the Generals *Butturlin* and *Pesserow*, Prince *Alexander Narkiskin*; the young Prince *Dolgorucki* and some others were banished into *Siberia*; and the Estates of others not suspected of being so deeply concerned were confiscated. Having by a Will appointed a Regency during the Minority of the Grand Duke *Catherine* died in *May* 1727.

One Article of *Catherine's* Will being that the Regency should endeavour to bring about a Match betwixt *Peter Alexiowitz* her Successor and one of the Daughters of Prince *Maxikow*; who had been a great Favourite in her's and the preceding Reign; this Prince was declared Generalissimo by Sea and Land Fortune however soon frowned upon him; for being accused in less than four Months of appropriating to himself some Thousands of Ducats; which he had received as a Present from the Emperor to his Sister; he was all at once robbed of his Honours, and after seeing all his Estate con-

confiscated was sent into Exile. *Tulstoy, Nariskin, Devier Prince MEN-* and the other Exiles, whose Crime was now said to *ZIKOW* dis- have been the giving of Umbrage to *Minzidow*, were *graced*.

immediately recalled; and instead of his Daughter's being married to the Emperor his whole Family were involved in his Disgrace.

Peter in the Year 1729 married a Daughter of *Alexis PETER mar:* *Dolgorucki* who had been his Governour and whose Son *Sergius*, 1729.

Sergius and *John* were his principal Favourites; But the Death of *Peter* who died upon the 30th of *January* 1730 of the Small-pox prevented her being crowned.

According to the Disposition of the Empress *Catherine ANNE*, 1730;

the Succession now devolved upon her eldest Daughter the Princess *Anne Petronna* Dutchess of *Holstein*; but besides that the Empire would if this Disposition had taken place have been exposed to the Misfortunes of a long Minority; for she died two Years before *Peter* and left only one Son who was very young, it was feared that the Interests of *Holstein* might clash with those of *Russia*. It was also thought that as the Male Line of *Peter the Great* was at an End the Daughters of *John* his elder Brother ought to be preferred. The eldest of these was *Catherine* Dutchess of *Mahlenburg*; Yet as she was married to a Prince who had lost *Mahlenburg* by attempting to invade the Privileges of his Nobility, it was judged proper to pass by her lest the Empire should be involved in a War on the Account of his *German* Dominions; and the Crown was conferred upon *Anne Iwanowna* Dutchess of *Carlarid* her Sister. In order to reconcile the People thereto it was given out, that *Peter II.* had expressly appointed her to succeed: For by the Regulation made by *Peter the Great* every Sovereign was to have the Right of appointing a Successor. A Council was also appointed and such Limitations were made as left *Anne* little more than the Title of Empress; But although she accepted the Crown on these Terms she soon checked the Ambition of the *Dolgorucki* Family, who intended to have reigned in her Name, and assumed to herself the Power justly due to the Crown. This Princess had the Pleasure of seeing *Augustus II.* whose Elevation to the *Polish* Throne was principally owing to her, reign quietly and happily.

War with the
TURKS.

She likewise entered into a War with the *Turks*; and the Court of *Vienna*, with which she had constantly been in strict Alliance, after endeavouring in vain to procure Satisfaction at the *Ottoman* Court for the Damage done to *Russia* by an Irruption of the *Tartars* joined with her therein. This War which turned out very unlucky for the Emperor of *Germany* was very successful to the *Russians*: Yet it cost these dear; for the long fatiguing Marches carried off many Men, and the Expence of sending Provisions to such a Distance was very great, the Seat of the War being in quite a barren Country. The Emperor having accommodated Matters with the *Turks* Anne made a Treaty with them also: But as the settling of Limits was for some Time deferred by the *Sultan* it looked as if the Terms of this Treaty were not agreeable to the *Turkish* Nation.

THOMAS
KOU LI KAN
courts the
Friendship of
ANNE.

Thomas Kouli Kan having in her Time usurped the Throne of *Persia* he for the Sake of acting vigorously against the *Turks* courted the Friendship of *Anne*: Which as he could give her great Assistance in case of a Renewal of the War with the *Sultan* was quite agreeable to her.

Count BIRON
chosen Duke of
COURLAND,
1737.

On the Death of *Ferdinand* Duke of *Courland* without Issue, who was the last Duke of the House of *Kaler*, this Dutchy was pursuant to an Agreement made in the Year 1726 to have been annexed to the *Republick* of *Poland*: But in a Diet held in *Courland* a Year before the Death of *Ferdinand* it had been resolved to annul this Agreement, and that the States should be at Liberty to choose themselves a Duke. The doing of this was protested against by the Elector of *Cologne* Grand Master of the *Teutonic* Order, to which Order *Courland* formerly belonged; and Count *Saxe* endeavoured to maintain the Election made in his Favour in the Year 1725: But the *Russian* Interest prevailed, and Count *Biron* a Person whom the *Empress* had raised from the lowest Rank to the highest Honours was chosen.

The DOLGORUCKI's executed, 1739.

The Marriage of the Princess of *Mecklenburg* Niece to the *Empress* with a Prince of the House of *Brunswick* was strongly opposed by the *Dolgorucki* Family; and they were resolved at all Events to rectify the Abuses of

of Government introduced by the Duke of Courland: But he was in so high a Degree of Favour that they perished in the Attempt; three of them *John* and *Sergius* Brothers, and *Basilus* their Cousin, being executed for high Treason in *November 1739*.

Not long after *Artemis Walinski* another Favourite of *WALINSKI* the Empress, who could not bear to see the whole Power and others engrossed by the Duke of Courland, entered into a Conspiracy with many of the Nobility against him: But it being discovered *Walinski* and his Associates suffered ignominious Deaths. This Effusion of Blood served however only to increase the Hatred to the Duke of Courland.

Upon the Death of *Anne* in *October 1740* *John* Son of *Anne* her Niece by Prince *Anthony Ulrick* of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle* was pursuant to her Will declared Successor; and the Duke of Courland, than which there could not be a stronger Instance of her Regard for him, was appointed sole Regent without any Limitation of his Power till this Prince only two Months old should become Major. As the Princess *Anne* was Daughter of *Catherine* Dutchess of *Mecklenburg*, who had a better Right to the Crown than the late Empress her younger Sister, she was far from being satisfied with this Disposition: By which although her Son had the Name of Emperor the whole Power was for many Years to come vested in the Duke of Courland.

In order to ingratiate himself with the People the Regent forthwith published a Pardon for all who had been condemned to Death, the Gallies or Banishment, except there was something in their Crime remarkably atrocious. He moreover restored such to their Offices as had been discharged for Want of passing their Accounts; and forgave all Debts due to the Crown before the Year 1719: Nay he discharged such as were indigent of all Debts due to the Crown, although some of these had been contracted since that Year.

As to himself he was contented with a Pension of 300,000 Rubles, which he managed so as to have the same offer him: But in order to make the Princess *Anne* easy under the Loss of the Regency he considerably augmented her Allowance. He moreover settled a large Revenue

nue upon *Elizabeth* Daughter of *Peter the Great*; and caused a Patent to be made out appointing the Prince of *Brunswick* Generalissimo: But this Prince, who thought it inconsistent with his Dignity to serve as his Son was Emperor under any Subject, excused himself from accepting thereof.

The People greatly dissatisfied.

Notwithstanding these Acts of Clemency and Generosity the People soon saw that the Disposal of all Dignities and Employments was entirely in the Regent, who having lately caused some Lords to be arrested had without bringing them to a Trial sent them into *Siberia*. This Severity made him some Enemies; and it was in general thought wrong that a Person of his low Birth should be raised to the Regency of a mighty Empire, and enjoy this with such an unlimited Power as it had never been enjoyed with before. In order to encourage the Discontent it was given out that he had taken the Advantage of the Empress's Weakness in her last Moments to obtain this absolute Direction of Affairs; and besides that his Power must at all Events have continued a long Time it was feared there would be no End thereof; for if the Emperor should die and leave a Son or Brother under Age it was to continue; and in case he should leave neither Son nor Brother it was in the Duke of *Courland's* Power to raise with the Consent of the Synod and Senate whomsoever he pleased to the Throne.

The Princess ANNE advanced to the Regency.

Conferences being secretly held in the Palace of the Princess *Anne*, who was very uneasy under her dependent Situation, a Resolution was come to of putting an End to this monstrous Power; and pursuant thereto the Duke of *Courland* was arrested in his Bed by General Count *Munich* early in the Morning of the 20th of *December*. In order to get rid of this General, who as well as Count *Osterman* frequently opposed his Measures in the Council, the Regent had caused an Enquiry to be set on Foot concerning his Conduct whilst he commanded against the *Turks*: But instead of ruining Count *Munich* as he intended the Duke of *Courland* was himself forced to answer for his own Conduct.

The Duke of COURLAND banished.

Being tried for High Treason he was condemned to die: The Princess *Anne* however became by this Revolution

tion Regent contented herself with sending him into *Siberia*; where he was confined with his Brother and some others in a House built on Purpose for them.

As Count *Munich* had had so great Share in this Trans-Count *Mu-* action he was at first much caressed by the new Regent; *NICH d's-* but he soon found that the Favourites of Princes stand *graced.* on very slippery Ground, being in the *March* following removed from all his Offices.

Anne was very strongly sollicited by the Queen of *Hungary* to assist her against the King of *Prussia*: But it being imprudent as Things were circumstanced to involve *Russia* in a War about the Affair of another she did not choose to interpose further than by good Offices; and instead of doing this the ancient Treaties betwixt *Russia* and *Prussia* were renewed.

It being resolved in the *Swedish* Diet held in the Year *War* with 1741 to declare War against *Russia* the *Russian* Mini-SWEDEN, ster Count *Bestuchef* was sent home guarded; and Baron 1741. *Gillenstern* with the Secretaries *Archenbolts* and *Mathesius* were punished for holding a criminal Correspondence with him. This Resolution supposed to be taken at the Sollicitation of *France*, in order to prevent the Court of *Petersburg* from taking Part in the War in *Germany*, was soon followed with an open Rupture. After the *Battle of Swedes* were defeated in the *Battle of Wilmanstrand* WILMAN- the Regent promised to assist the Queen of *Hungary* STRAND. with 30,000 Men in the Spring following, and Measures were concerted for acting vigorously against the *Swedes*: But in the mean Time the *Russian* System was entirely changed by another Revolution.

In the Evening of the fifth of *December* all the Ave-The Princess ntes of the Imperial Palace and the principal Posts in ELIZABETH *Moscow* were seized by the Guards: And at the same raised to the Time the Friends of the Princess *Elizabeth*, who were Throns, assembled at her Palace, proclaimed her Sovereign of all the *Russias* under a Triple Volley of the Guards. In a Manifesto forthwith published, setting forth that the Disorders which had arisen in the Empire were owing to the Want of observing the Disposition of her Father *Peter the Great*, it was declared that she had been invited by all her loving Subjects and particularly by her faith-

Of the RUSSIAN EMPIRE.

ful Guards to ascend the Throne. Soon after another Manifesto appeared: In which it was observed that by the Will of her Mother the Empress *Catherine* she ought to have succeeded upon the Death of *Peter II.* her Brother; but that by the Intrigues of Count *Osterman* and others the Princess *Anne Iwanowna* had been advanced to the Imperial Dignity; that the same Count *Osterman* and Count *Munich* had prevailed upon the Empress *Anne*, in her last Illness when she was quite weak, to appoint *John* Son of Prince *Antibony Ulrick* of *Wolfenbuttle* her Successor: And that afterwards, notwithstanding they had taken an Oath to observe the Act for settling the Regency in the Duke of *Courland*, Prince *Antibony* and his Wife had by the Help of the said Counts seized the Government. Guards were immediately set upon the late Regent and her Family; and the Counts *Osterman* and *Munich* were seized. The *Swedish* Officers taken Prisoners at the Battle of *Wilmanstrand* and elsewhere were set at Liberty; and the new Empress proposed in a Letter wrote by herself to the King of *Sweden* the making of Peace.

Duke of
COURLAND
recalled.

After putting all the Affairs of Government on the same Footing they had been in her Father's Time *Elizabeth* annulled the severe Sentences against the House of *Dolgorucki*, and the Families of some other illustrious Lords, who had suffered in the Reign of *Anne*; and the Duke of *Courland* and his Adherents were recalled from Exile in *Siberia*.

Proceedings a-
gainst OSTER-
MAN and
others.

Count *Osterman*, his Son-in-law Baron *Mengden*, Count *Munich* and Count *Lewenwolde* having been sentenced to die they were all conducted to the Place of Execution, Count *Osterman*, who went first upon the Scaffold, had kneeled down to the Block and the Executioner had raised the Axe: But before the fatal Stroke was given it was declared that the Empress would not take the Forfeiture of their Lives; and they were all banished. This Mercy availed Count *Osterman* who was grown old in the Service of the Court of *Petersburg* but little; for he had at this Time a Mortification in his Leg which soon after carried him off.

It being resolved that the Princess *Anne* should go with ^{The Princess} her Family into *Germany*, she was allowed to carry with ^{ANNE con-} her all the Jewels given her by the Empress *Anne* her ^{sister,} Aunt. A large Sum for the Expences of her Journey was also given to her, and a yearly Pension of 50,000 Rubles was settled upon her: But some Things being laid to her Charge by Count *Osterman* she and her Family were stopped and confined at *Riga*. The *Prussian* and *Austrian* Ministers who interceded for their Liberty were told, that as *Elizabeth* had given Directions for the Family to be treated suitably to their Rank they ought not to be uneasy under Confinement; and that they should in the End find she had no ill Design against them.

As *Elizabeth* was resolved to secure the Succession to ^{The Duke of} the Duke of *Holstein Gottorp* Son of her Sister, who ^{HOLSTEIN in-} died in the Year 1728 as soon as this Duke was born, ^{vised into} she invited him from the Bishop of *Lubeck's* Court; ^{RUSSIA.} who being the nearest Relation had taken Care of him since the Death of his Father in the Year 1739. From the Time of his Arrival in *Russia* he was looked upon as presumptive Heir to the Throne; and it being a fundamental Law in *Russia* that the Sovereign must be of the *Greek Church* Care was taken to instruct him in the Principles and Rites thereof.

The Negotiations with *Sweden* had as yet come to ^{War with} nothing more than a Suspension of Arms, notwithstanding the Marquis *de la Chetardie* Minister from ^{SWEDEN,} *France* had taken great Pains to accommodate Matters. 1742. It was generally supposed that this Minister had some Share in the late Revolution: And whether he had or not there can be no Doubt of the *French Court's* liking much better to see a *Russian* Princess upon the Throne than a Princess of the House of *Brunswick*; one Branch of which House was already in Possession of the *British* Crown and the Electorate of *Hanover*. The *Swedish* General Count *Lewenhaupt* made publick Rejoicings in his Camp on the Occasion; for which the Empress thanked him in a Letter wrote with her own Hands; yet as the *Swedes* could not bear the Thought of sheathing the Sword without gaining some Advantage, and the Court of *Petersburg* would make Peace on no other Terms

Of the RUSSIAN EMPIRE.

Terms than those of the Treaty of *Neustadt*, Hostilities were in the Year 1742 recommenced. Upon this General Count *Lacy* put himself at the Head of the *Russians*, and went in Quest of the *Swedes* who were encamped near *Frédéricksbam*. Hereupon *Lewenhaupt*, who did not care to risk a Battle, retired behind a Branch of the *Kimene* and *Lacy* followed him. When the Inhabitants of *Finland* saw *Lewenhaupt* fly in this Manner before the *Russians* they left the *Swedish* Army; which being thereby reduced to about 14,000 Men was shortly after blockaded up before *Helsingfort*.

The SWEDISH
Army capitulated.

During the Absence of the Generals *Lewenhaupt* and *Budenbroeck*, who repaired to the Diet at *Stockholm*, the commanding Officer Major General *Bousquet* accepted of the Capitulation offered by General *Lacy*. The principal Article of this was, that the whole *Swedish* Army might embark with their small Arms and suitable Ammunition, Colours, Standards, Drums and Trumpets, together with Provisions for their Passage into *Sweden* and their light Baggage; but that their Artillery, their heavy Baggage and their Magazines should be delivered up. It being moreover agreed that if any of the Troops of *Finland* did not choose to go into *Sweden* they should be at Liberty of staying with their Arms and what belonged to them 7000 of these left the *Swedish* Army; and having delivered up their Arms to General *Lacy* they were sent home to their respective Habitations. *Finland* being thus conquered in one Campaign it was given out that *Elizabeth*, instead of annexing it to the *Russian* Empire, had a Mind to erect it into an independent Sovereignty for the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp*.

The Duke of
HOLSTEIN
declared Successor.

The Election of a Successor to the *Swedish* Crown being about this Time deliberated in the Diet the Duke of *Holstein-Gottorp* was fixed upon. It was hoped that the Choosing of him for Successor would induce this Duke to use his good Offices for procuring better Terms for the *Swedes*: But this Election soon became void by his being declared by the Empress her presumptive Heir; for by the Law of *Russia* no Person who is possessed of another Crown can succeed to that of this Empire.

Before

Before the Beginning of the present Century the *Manners of the Russians* were quite ignorant as well as indolent; and being zealously attached to the superstitious Customs of their Ancestors, howsoever extravagant these were, they despised all other People. They were moreover insolent and cruel in Prosperity, and of a mean and dastardly Spirit in Adversity; so that upon the whole their Manners were very little better than those of the *Tartars* their Neighbours. *Peter the Great*, whose vast Genius fitted him for great Undertakings, lamented this Barbarism; and in order to introduce Arts and Sciences amongst his own Subjects took the Pains to go and learn them himself of Foreigners. The *Russians* had long been a numerous and intrepid People, and they could bear the Fatigues of War well; but being quite ignorant of the Art thereof and commanded by Officers as ignorant as themselves they were soon thrown into Confusion. By the Conduct and Courage of *Peter*, who not only encouraged able and experienced Officers to come and serve in his Armies but commanded them often in Person, Matters were so changed in about twenty Years Time that the *Russians* were brought to stand firm in an Action, and they became pretty good Troops at the Siege of a Town.

The *Russian* Empire is vastly extensive; but a great Part thereof is barren and uninhabited. There are more-
*Of the Domi-
nions and Com-
modities of
RUSSIA.*
 over many large Tracts inhabited only by *Tartars* who live quite a savage Life and support themselves by hunting, fishing and the Milk of their Flocks. The Inhabitants of some of these are rather tributary than Subjects; nor are they of any Service to the State, except that through them a Way is opened for Caravans to pass and repass from *Moscow* to *China*, so that the *Russians* can trade into *China* without going out of their own Dominions. *Russia* does in the general abound with Corn, Cattle, Game, Fish, Salt and all the Necessaries of Life. The *Russians* are supplied by Foreigners with Wines, Woollen Goods and Silks, which last they have at an easy Rate from *Persia*. But they receive all these in Exchange for Furs, salted Fish, Caviar, Skins, Wax, Honey, Tallow, Soap and Hemp; the sending of Money
 abroad

abroad being forbid under a severe Penalty. *Archangel* the Way to which was found out by the *English* in the Year 1553 was heretofore the only *Russian* Port; but since the Conquests made by *Peter* the Great upon the *Baltick* Coast a considerable Trade has been carried on from *Riga*, *Revel* and *Petersburg*.

Its Government and Strength. The *Russian* Emperor who is bound by no Law takes the Title of *Autokratour*; which signifies unlimited Power over the Lives and Fortunes of all his Subjects. His Revenue which is drawn from many large Provinces is very considerable; and the Trade in Sables which is entirely in his own Hands is a vast Addition thereto. This with the implicit Obedience paid him enables him to raise some hundred thousands of Men at a very short Warning: And it moreover contributes greatly to the Strength of *Russia*, that its Dominions are on the North and East Sides secured by a vast unnavigable Ocean and by extensive Deserts.

Interest of RUSSIA with REGARD to CHINA. The *Russians* have nothing to fear from the *Chinese*: It being for the Interest of the *Chinese* to be upon good Terms with the *Russians*, because they carry on a very profitable Trade with these.

GREAT-TARTARY.

As the Inhabitants of *Great-Tartary* are by no Means a Match for the *Russians*, the former instead of thinking to attack the latter fear nothing so much as the being attacked by them.

PERSIA.

The Conquests of *Peter* the Great upon *Persia* shew, that neither the *Caspian Sea* nor the Mountains by which it is covered are sufficient to secure the *Persian* Empire from the Efforts of the *Russians*, when these set about a War in good Earnest: Yet as the Supporting of Armies at such a Distance must be very expensive, and *Russia* had already some good Ports upon the *Caspian Sea* it is not for her Interest to break with *Persia*. On the contrary it is of great Consequence to *Russia* to prevent the Extension of those Conquests which that enterprizing Monarch *Thomas Kouli Kan* has made upon the *Turks*; for it might be fatal to *Russia* if the Ballance of Power betwixt the *Persian* and *Turkish* Empire should be destroyed.

The

The *Crim Tartars*, who are tributary to the *Sultan*, TURKEY. being always ready to make Incursions, at the Instigation of the *Turks* into *Russia* it would be of great Consequence for keeping these lawless Robbers in Awe to have *Asoph* in the Hands of the *Russians*: But the *Turks* who well know its Value will never give up this important Fortrefs; and for fear of the worst they have taken Care to demolish its Works. Upon the whole since a War with the *Turks* would, as the Country which must be the Seat thereof is quite barren and at a great Distance, be very burthensome to the *Russians* it is best for them to be upon good Terms with the *Turks*; yet they ought always to keep up a strong Body of Troops upon their Frontier in order to prevent the Inroads of the *Crim Tartars*.

The great Augmentation and Improvement in Discipline made of late Years in the Forces of *Russia*; POLAND. the Share this Empire had in restoring the late King and in advancing the present King his Son to the *Polish* Throne; together with the Disposition of *Courland* according to its Pleasure, notwithstanding that this Dutchy is a Fief of *Poland*; manifest such a Superiority in *Russia* that she can have nothing to fear from *Poland*: Yet as the *Poles* could, in the Case of a War with any of the other neighbouring Powers, cause a Diversion in Favour of the *Russians* it is for the Interest of the latter to be in Amity with the former.

The Cessions made to *Russia* by the Treaty of *Neu-SWEDEN.* *stadt* have been ever since grudged by the *Swedes*; and they look with an evil Eye upon the encreasing Greatness of *Russia*: But the ill Success of the late War shews sufficiently the Inequality of their Forces to those of the *Russia*; so that if *Sweden* is wise she will be very cautious of coming to a Rupture with *Russia*.

The *Russians* could easily overrun *Prussia*; but as PRUSSIA. other Powers would be unwilling to see them make further Acquisitions on this Side it would be imprudent in them to attempt any Thing against this Kingdom: And the King of *Prussia*, besides that his Dominions taken altogether do make him very respectable, would undoubtedly in such a Case be assisted by *Sweden*.

As

DENMARK. As the King of *Denmark* is Master of the *Sound* it is for the Interest of the *Russian* Emperor, whose Subjects now carry on a considerable Trade in the *Baltick*, to be upon good Terms with him; nay further the *Danes* could in the case of a *Swedish* War be of great Service to the *Russians* by causing a Diversion in their Favour.

Other Powers. *France*, *Spain* and some other Powers have very little Connection with *Russia*: Nor have the *Maritime Powers* any Thing to do with this Empire except so far as Trade is concerned.

C H A P. XIII.

OF TURK Y.

IT seems extravagant to suppose that *Turcus*, who is *Origin of the* said to have been descended from *Priamus* King of *TURKISH* *Troy*, was the Founder of the *Turkish* Empire: But *Empire.* whoever was the Founder thereof it was according to the best Accounts at first inhabited by *Scythians* and *Saracens*. The latter originally Inhabitants of *Arabia*, who as their Name which signifies Robbers denotes had been accustomed to live by Plunder, began to be taken Notice of in the middle of the fifth Century. *Terebon* the Son of *Christianity* *Aspetus* one of their Chiefs having about this Time been embraced by miraculously cured of a Palsy he embraced the Christian *the SARA-* Religion; and the *Saracens* did in the general follow his *CENS.* Example.

About the Year of CHRIST 611 a new System of Re-*The Rise of* ligion was with the Assistance of a Monk, a *Nestorian* *MAHOMED-* and a Jew, composed by *Mahomet* *: Which enjoins the *TISM.* Belief of no other Articles, than that there is but one GOD and that *Mahomet* is his Prophet. The Notion of *Mahomet's* being a Prophet, which he artfully propagated, and the Success of his Arms paved the Way for the Reception of his Religion. His immediate Successors, who were called *Caliphs*, extended the Conquests of the *Saracens* and the Religion of *Mahomet* over a vast Extent of Country. The Dominions of the *Saracens* were at first divided into small Sovereignties, each of which had its particular *Caliph*.

The *Turks*, so called from *Turquesstan* their ancient *The SARA-* Country, about the Year 1030 overran several Provinces *CENS van-* in *Asia* and *Africa*. Having subdued the *Saracens* they *quished by the* embraced *Mahometism* and the Country was from their *TURKS,* Name called *Turky*. As we have no good Account of *1030.* the Princes who reigned before him we shall come at

* *The TURKS call him MOHAMMED.*

once

once to *Ottoman*; from whose Name succeeding *Sultans* obtained the Name of *Ottoman Emperors*....

OTTOMAN.
1300.

This Prince the first who took the Title of *Sultan* reigned about the Year 1300; and made himself Master of *Phrygia*, *Galatia* and *Cappadasia*... Having also taken *Prusa* the Capital of *Bythynia* he made it the Place of his Residence: And thereby fulfilled what was foretold by an ancient Oracle, *That Wolves should come and settle in Bythynia who should afterwards ravish the Scepter from Constantinople*. He died in the Year 1326.

ORCAN, I. 26.

Orcan his Son, who had before given signal Proofs of his Valour, being upon his Father's Death preferred to his elder Brothers he made great Advantage of the Quarrels in the Imperial Family at *Constantinople*; by which the Eastern Empire was rent in Pieces. He conquered *Nicea*, *Nicomedia* and the greater Part of *Asia*: And in his Time according to some the Body of *Jamissaries* which are the *Sultan's* Guards was formed. *Orcan* was slain after a Reign of thirty-two Years in an Engagement with the *Tartars*. According to some Historians *Orcan* was succeeded by *Solyman* his eldest Son: But the best, who say that *Solyman* was killed during his Father's Life by a fall from his Horse in Hunting, make *Amurat* second Son of *Orcan* the next Successor.

The JANISSARIES formed

AMURAT I.
1358.
He comes into EUROPE.

Amurat put himself at the Head of his Troops, and having bribed the Sailors on board some *Genoise* Ships, by giving a Ducat to each Man, to transport them into *Europe*: *Gallipoli* and several other Places were taken, before any Person imagined the *Turks* were to be near: This execrable Avarice of the *Genoise* was fatal to the Christians; for *Amurat* soon took *Philippolis* and *Adrianople*, and made the latter the Place of his Residence: As the Christians could make but very little Resistance he afterwards became Master of *Nissa* and some other Places; and the Provinces of *Apollonia*, *Albania* and *Bosnia* were likewise overrun by the *Turks*.

He defeats the SERVIANS and BULGARIANS.

The Princes of *Servia* and *Bulgaria* collected their Forces, and endeavoured to put a Stop to this rapid Progress; but their Cavalry frightened at the *Turkish* Camels threw their whole Army into Confusion, and *Amurat* gained a complete Victory over them. *Lazarus* Prince

of *Servia* having been killed in this Battle one of his Domesticks in order to revenge the Death of his Master went to *Amurat's* Tent; and under the Pretence of revealing a Secret stabbed him with a Dagger. This Action, which happened in the Year 1383, gave Rise to a Custom that no Person is allowed to have an Audience of the *Sultan* without having his Hands held by two *Bashaws*. In the Time of *Amurat* the Body of *Spahes*, The SPAHES who are the Flower of the *Turkish* Cavalry, was formed formed. and provided for: And he is said to have been the first *Sultan* that made use of an Officer called *Grand Vizir*.

Bajazet Son and Successor of *Amurat* gained great Advantages over the Christians, to which the Contests betwixt BAJAZET I. *Andronicus* and *Emanuel, Paleologus* for the Eastern Empire contributed not a little. The former in order to obtain the Assistance of *Bajazet* promised to put *Philadelphia* into his Hands, and to pay him an annual Tribute: But as *Emanuel*, whose Party was much the stronger, offered to do the same *Bajazet* sided with him. *Emanuel* also engaged to pay an annual Tribute of 30,000 Ducats: And because the Inhabitants of *Philadelphia* refused to give up their City he laid Siege thereto himself: And PHILADELPHIA ceded. having forced it to surrender put the *Turks* into Possession thereof.

The Prince of *Bulgaria* being afterwards slain in Battle all this Province submitted to *Bajazet*; and going over into *Asia* and *Armenia* was subdued by him. Upon his Return into *Europe* his Army committed such Ravages in *Albania* and *Bosnia* that the Emperor *Sigismund*, who was also King of *Hungary*, resolved to attack the *Turks*, in order to prevent if possible their establishing themselves so near him.

Having assembled an Army of 40,000 Men *Sigismund* thought himself so certain of Victory, that he was heard to say if the Sky should fall the Lances of his Cavalry were sufficient to hold it up. Puff'd up with such vain Thoughts he went in the Year 1396 before *Nicopolis*; but the *Turks*, who were much superior in Number, fell upon him with such Vigour that after an obstinate Resistance his Army was routed, and he with much Difficulty escaped falling into their Hands. After this Victory *Bajazet*, who thought nothing too mighty for him, 1395.

laid Siege to *Constantinople*. His good Fortune however began now to abandon him; for he was forced to give this over and pass the Sea, in order to make Head against *Tamerlane* the *Tartar*, who being jealous of his Power and provoked at his Treatment of some *Caramanian* Princes had fallen into *Natalia* with a powerful Army.

BAJAZET
taken Prisoner.

A single Battle fought in the Plain betwixt *Anchir* and *Mount Stella*, upon the same Spot where *Mithridates* was defeated by *Pompey*, robbed *Bajazet* of all his Glory, and falling into the Hands of *Tamerlane* he was confined in an Iron Cage. Some say that the Conqueror afterwards made *Bajazet* stoop down to serve as a Footstool when he mounted his Horse: that he made him scramble for his Meat with the Dogs under the Table; and that his Wife was forced to wait upon *Tamerlane* as a Cup-Bearer quite naked: But others say that *Tamerlane* was of too humane and brave a Spirit to be guilty of these and the other Acts of Cruelty imputed to him; and that all these Stories were invented by the *Greeks* who had the utmost Hatred to *Bajazet*: During the Reign of this unfortunate Prince, who despairing of his Liberty put an End to a miserable Life by beating out his Brains against the Bars of his Cage, an Ordinance was published whereby Judges, who were to be paid out of the publick Treasury, were forbid to accept of any Thing from either of the Parties to a Suit.

He dies miserably.

MAHOMET, I.
1400.

The Defeat of *Bajazet* was amongst other Misfortunes followed by a Civil War betwixt his Sons; but about the Year 1400 *Mahomet* the youngest was declared his Successor. *Emanuel* Emperor of the East assisted *Mahomet* in recovering a good deal of what had been taken from his Father; who in Return gave *Emanuel* Leave to build a Wall across the *Isthmus* of *Corinth* for the Security of his Dominions.

War with
VENICE.

Mahomet afterwards entered into a War with *Venice*: But this cost him dear; for his Fleet was ruined off *Gallipoli*, and besides giving up *Lampacus* to this Republick he was forced to consent, that if any *Turkish* Ship should thereafter pass the Streight of *Gallipoli* it should be lawful for the *Venetians* to seize it. The petty Princes who reigned in the *Mærea* being attacked by *Mahomet*,

several

several of these who were unable to withstand his Forces, rather than be subdued by the Turks put themselves under the Protection of Venice.

Another War against the Christians being commenced by Mahomet Valon in Albania was delivered up to him. He also subdued the Bulgarians: And the Prince of Caramania was brought under his Yoke. Encouraged by this Success he in the Year 1419 under the Pretence that the Treaty with Venice related only to the Sea, and did not hinder him from acting at Land, attacked Thessalonica in Macedonia, which Andronicus Emperor of the East had ceded to the Venetians. Mahomet afterwards restored to Andronicus all that had been taken from his Predecessors in the Morea, as a Recompence to this Prince for having caused Mustapha the Brother and Rival of Mahomet to be arrested in his Dominions.

Amurat who succeeded in the Year 1422 soon found himself involved in great Difficulties; But by his Prudence these were all happily surmounted. A civil War was stirred up by Mustapha his Uncle whom the Emperor of the East had, notwithstanding the Offer made by Amurat of giving up to him all the Country round Gallipoli and making him a Present of 200,000 Ducats, set at Liberty: But being taken Prisoner at Adrianople he was afterwards straggled. The Attempt of Mustapha's Son to revenge his Father's Death cost him his own Life, and the Christians paid dear for assisting him against Amurat; for the latter blocked up Constantinople, and obliged the Emperor before he would retire to demolish the Wall built across the Urbus of Corinth.

As the demolishing of this Wall opened a Way into the Countries he wanted to conquer Amurat landed with a large Army in the Morea; and soon made himself Master of Semendria and many Places in Servia, Wallachia and Rascia. The Prince of Bosnia was likewise forced to pay Tribute to him; and under the Pretence that the King of Hungary had favoured his Enemies he laid Siege to Weissenburg in Transilvania: But by the Valour of John Hunniade Governor of this Province a Stop was put to the Torrent of his Success.

Exploits of
JOHN HUN-
NIADE.

Having been repulsed from *Wissenburg* and afterwards defeated in several Battles, one of which namely that near *St. Sophia* cost him near 30,000 Men, *Amurat* found his Mistake in rousing such a Lion as *Hunniade*, and the Princes of *Caramenia* took this Opportunity to revolt. As all these Misfortunes brought him under great Difficulties, he by a Truce concluded with *Uladislaus* King of *Poland* and *Hungary* consented to give up to their respective Princes all he had taken in *Servia*, *Rascia* and *Walachia*. Hereupon the Prince *Caramenia* in order to avert the Storm that threatned him laid down his Arms, and submitted to the Terms prescribed by the Sultan. Shortly after *Uladislaus* suffered himself to be prevailed upon by Cardinal *Julian* the Pope's Legate to break this Truce with the *Turks* without any Cause: But it cost him dear; for he was defeated at the bloody Battle of *Wurna* in the Year 1445, and fell himself in the Action.

Battle of
WARNA,
1445.

AMURAT
repulsed by
SCANDER-
BERG.

The Success of *Amurat* was however not so good against *Scanderberg* Prince of *Epirus*. This young Hero justly surnamed the *Great* made a Stand with a Handful of Men against the whole *Turkish* Power; and had the better in several Actions which he dared to risk in the open Field. Hereupon *Amurat* sat down before *Croia* his Capital: But being forced to raise the Siege it gave him so much Uneasiness that he died shortly after.

The JANIS-
SARIES im-
proved.

In his Time divers Improvements were made in the Discipline of the *Janissaries*, who have since made so great a Figure; and he ordained that they should be composed only of such Christian Children as their Parents, for Want of being able to pay the large Taxes required of them, were forced to deliver into the Hands of the *Turks*.

M. HOMER
II. 1451.

Mahomet Son of *Amurat* who succeeded in the Year 1451 continued the War in *Epirus*: But being twice repulsed from before *Croia* he grew weary of *Scanderberg*, from whom he got nothing but Blows; and resolved to turn all his Forces against *Constantinople* the Capital of the Eastern Empire. This City was after a long Resistance taken by Storm in *May* 1453: And with the Emperor *Constantine Paleologus* who perished in the

CONSTAN-
TINOPLE
taken, 1453.

facking

sacking thereof an End was put to the Eastern Empire. All Greece was hereby so terrified, that twenty eight Cities submitted to Mahomet without making any Resistance. Elated with this Success he laid Siege to Belgrade: But he was driven from thence with the Loss of 40,000 Men. This saved Hungary: But it cost the Christians dear; for Hunniade the Scourge and Terror of the Infidels received a Wound in the Battle, of which he died shortly after.

About the Year 1461 the City of Trebisond was taken by Mahomet; and its Emperor David Comnenus and his Children being slain an End was put to this Empire; which had for about 250 Years been independent of the Eastern Empire.

The Venetians being soon after attacked by Mahomet he after making himself Master of Argos, Patras and Corinth laid Siege to Negropont; which being taken he was so enraged at the obstinate Resistance of Eriza the Venetian Governor, for it cost him 40,000 Men; that he caused him to be cleft in sunder. Notwithstanding this barbarous Action the City of Scutari withstood two brisk Attacks, the first of which cost Mahomet 20,000; the latter 50,000 Men; nor did he succeed better at the Siege of Lepanto. Scanderberg being dead Crivia fell under Subjection to Mahomet: But in the mean Time the Venetians had taken Atbins and the Island of Lesbos. They afterwards restored the Prince of Carmania to his Dominions; sacked Smyrna; and burnt the Magazines which the Turks had at Gallipoli: But not being supported by the other Christian Powers, and being disappointed in a Diversion they expected on the side of Persia, all these Advantages were lost; and they were forced to make Peace. The Terms of this besides restoring all they had taken from the Turks were, that the Venetians should give up Scutari, Tenaro and the Island of Lemnos, and pay an annual Tribute of 80,000 Ducats for the Liberty of trading in the Black-Sea.

The Attempt made afterwards by Mahomet upon the Island Rhodes failed; But the Achmet Bashaw surprized with a Part of the Turkish Fleet Otranto, and caused some Fortifications to be built there. All Italy was

hereat alarmed, and *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* marched against him; but as the Garrison consisted of 8000 of the best *Turkish* Troops, his Success would not have been quite so certain if the Death of the Sultan had not happened. News of this, which happened in the Year 1481, being received the Garrison signed a Capitulation; the Articles however thereof were not well observed by the *Christians*. *Mahomet* ordered while he lay upon his Death Bed an Inscription for his Tomb: In which amongst other Things it was said, that if he had lived his Intention was to have subdued the Island *Rhodes* and proud *Italy*.

BAJAZET II.
1481.

Bajazet whose Party was stronger than that of *Zizimus* his Brother being now declared Successor, the latter fled into the Island of *Rhodes*; and from thence, because the Knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem* apprehended the harbouring of him might draw upon them the Indignation of the former, into *France*. Going afterwards to *Rome* where he died suddenly it was suspected from the bad Character of *Pope Alexander VI.* and from the Friendship that subsisted betwixt him and *Bajazet*, that *Zizimus* was poisoned by the Order of this *Pope*.^m

Death of
ZIZIMUS.

War with the
SULTAN of
EGYPT.

In the Beginning of *Bajazet's* Reign *Ibrahim* Prince of *Caramania* was vanquished, and his Dominions were annexed to the *Ottoman* Empire: But this drew upon *Bajazet* the Arms of *Cathbey* Sultan of *Egypt* who espoused the Cause of *Ibrahim*. A Battle ensuing near *Jasso* *Cathbey* lost 20,000 Men: But the *Ottoman* Army of which near 60,000 were cut off was defeated; and *Bajazet* for the Sake of Peace soon after ceded to him *Tarsus* and *Adena*.

Defeat of the
HUNGA-
RIANS, 1493.

The Troops of *Bajazet* being in other Parts more successful *Monastro* in *Bassarabia* was taken; and one of his Generals gained in the Year 1493 a Victory over the *Hungarians*, of whom 7000 were left upon the Field. In Order to shew the real Number of the Slain in this Battle their Noses were cut off and sent to the *Ottoman* Court.

War with
VENICE,
1497.

In the Year 1497 *Bajazet* at the Solicitation of *Lewis Sforza* commenced a War against *Venice*; and took *Lepanto*, *Modon*, *Coron* and *Durazzo*. The *Venetians* on their Side made themselves Masters of the Islands of *Cepha-*

Cephalonia and *St. Maurice*: But by a Treaty concluded three Years after they agreed to give up the former of these *Islands*, and that the *Turks* should keep all they had taken. This War being ended *Bajazet* attacked *Persia*; and his Generals had the Advantage in two Actions. The Commotions however which arose in *Turky* prevented his making any great Progress.

Being attacked by the Gout, which rendered him un-Intestine Trou-
able to bear the Fatigues of War, *Bajazet* neglected all military Affairs, and devoted himself wholly to reading the Works of *Averroes* the celebrated *Arabian* Physician. As this Conduct alienated the Minds of the Soldiers from *Bajazet* *Selim* his second Son, having engaged the *Janissaries* in his Interest, and being encouraged by the Kan of the *Tartars* whose Daughter he had married, endeavoured to dethrone him. The Party of *Selim* was defeated near *Ciorlo*, and he was very near being made Prisoner: But as *Achmet* his eldest Son had also revolted *Bajazet*, for the Army refused to march against *Achmet* except headed by *Selim*, was forced to send for him. On his Arrival the Soldiers flocked to him; and being immediately proclaimed Emperor he, to prevent the Odium which the deposing of his own Father might have drawn upon him, caused *Bajazet* to be poisoned by a Jew his Physician. This happened in the Year 1512.

The next Care of *Selim* being to march against *Achmet*, the latter was after a bloody Action made Prisoner and strangled: And in order to secure himself upon the Throne *Corcutus* his other Brother with seven other Princes of the *Ottoman* Family shared the same Fate.

Selim soon after marched against *Ismael* King of *Persia*; because he had given his Daughter in Marriage to *Amurat* second Son of *Achmet* who had fled to him for Shelter. Upon the Approach of the *Turks* *Ismael* shamefully gave up his Son-in-Law; yet for this did not satisfy *Selim* a Battle ensued. As the *Persian* Cavalry had not been accustomed to the noise of Fire Arms they were soon thrown into Confusion, and 16,000 of the *Persians* were left upon the Field. The loss however of the *Turks* was much greater; and although they after-

wards took *Tamul* they were forced, Provisions and Ammunition failing, to retire towards the *Euphrates*.

ALADULUS, . . . *Maduchut* an independent Sovereign, who reigned over *Meum Taurus* and the Country round it, having in this War sided with the *Perfians* he was attacked by *Selim*, and was after losing his Dominions beheaded. . . .

War with . . . His Alliance with *Perfia* was equally fatal to *Campson* *Gazi* Sultan of *Egypt*; for being defeated in the Year 1516 by *Selim* near *Aleppo* he in flying fell from his Horse, and was trod to Death by the Pursuers. This Victory was followed with the Submission of *Aleppo*, *Antioch*, *Tripoly*, *Damascus*, *Gaza* and many other Towns. The War was for some Time continued

Battle of . . . by *Tomar-Bei* Successor of *Campson*; but the Battle of *Matari*, in which the Turkish General *Sivan-Bayew* after an obstinate Resistance, entirely routed his Forces, was decisive. Hereupon *Grand-Caire* opened its Gates to *Selim*; and *Tomar-Bei* being taken Prisoner was hanged. With him the Power of the *Mamelukes* who had reigned over *Egypt* 260 Years ended; and his Dominions were annexed to the Turkish Empire. . . .

EGYPT an- . . . After this vast Success *Selim* resolved to turn his Arms against the *Christians*, and Preparations were made for an Expedition against *Rhodes*: But the carrying of this into Execution was prevented by his Death in the Year 1520.

SOLIMAN I. . . . *Soliman* his Son surnamed the *Magnific*, after suppressing an Insurrection raised by the *Mamelukes*, resolved to turn his Arms against the *Christians*, and began with laying Siege to *Weissenburg*. Notwithstanding the Inattention of *Lewis* of *Hungary*, for the Garrison was small and very ill provided, this Place made a brave Defence: But one of the Towers of the Citadel being blown up by a Mine, which two *Christians* Deserters had taught the *Infidels* to dig, it was at length forced to surrender. Elated with this Success *Soliman* laid Siege to *Rhodes*. The Emperor and Pope were at this Time engaged in a War with *France*; the other Christian Powers sent no Succours to the Knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem*; and one of their own Body named *Andro Amara*, disgusted, because he was passed by at the Election of a late *Grand Master*, did moreover hold a

WEISSEN-
BURG taken.

rependence with the Enemy. His Treachery was detected and paid for with his Life: Yet the Knights, being reduced to the greatest Extremity and seeing no Hope of Relief, were forced to deliver up *Rhodes* in *December 1522*. Thus did *Soliman* in a short Time make himself Master of two Places, which had baffled all the Designs of *Mahomet II.* when in the Meridian of his Power; and which were looked upon to be the Bulwarks of *Christendom*.

The *Turkish* Ambassadors sent to treat with *Lewis* War with of *Hungary* having been sent back without either Noses or Ears *Soliman*, to whom the Way was by having *Weissenburg* in his Hands always open, resolved to penetrate into this Kingdom. *Lewis*, who was governed entirely by *Paul Tamore* his Generalissimo formerly a Bishop, being determined, contrary to the Opinion of all his other Generals, whose Advice was that he should wait for the Reinforcements coming from *Transylvania*, *Croatia*, *Bohemia* and *Silesia*, to risk a Battle one was fought in the Plain of *Mohatz*: But it cost him his Life, and the Rout was so total that of 30,000 Men of which his Army consisted not above 8000 escaped. *Buda* hereupon opened its Gates to *Soliman*. In the midst however of this Success *Soliman* was called home to suppress an Insurrection, and forced to abandon his new Conquests. As *Lewis* died soon after the *Hungarians* were divided in the choice of a King: Some choosing *Ferdinand* Brother of *Charles V.* who had married *Anne* Sister to their late King; others *John* Waywode of *Transylvania*. As the Friends of the latter found themselves unable to support him against the powerful House of *Austria* they put themselves under the Protection of *Soliman*; who had returned in the Year 1529 at the Head of a powerful Army into *Hungary*.

After once more taking *Buda*, of which he put into Possession, he marched directly to *Vienna*: But the Governor *Philip* Count *Palatine* made so obstinate a Defence, that after loosing 20,000 Men *Soliman* raised the Siege of this City and retired with the utmost Precipitation: Three Years after he made another Attempt upon *Hungary*; but *Ferdinand* defended himself bravely, and the *Spanish* Fleet sent to cause a Division

version took in the Year 1533 *Patras* and *Coron* in the *Morea*. The *Spaniards* were however soon driven from these Places; and while *Soliman* was busy in preparing for a War with *Persia* the famous Pirate *Barberossa*, whom he had made his Admiral, deposed *Muley-Hassan*, and made himself Master of his Kingdom of *Tunis* in *Africa*.

War with
PERSIA.

The Success of *Soliman* against *Persia* was at first as great as could be wished, *Tauris* and *Babylon* being soon taken; but as these Places were at so great Distance he thought proper to quit them both; and his Army having suffered much by Hunger and Sickness he was glad to make Peace. Suspecting that *Ibrahim* his Grand Vizir had put him upon this Expedition, in order to give the *Christians* whom he loved in his Heart some Rest, *Soliman* upon his Return to *Constantinople* caused him to be strangled.

War with
VENICE.

The *Venetians* having during his Absence in *Persia* assisted the *Spaniards* *Soliman* at his Return made himself Master of *Sciro*, *Chio* and many other Islands in the *Archipelago*, which belonged to them; but *Tine* one of these soon shook off the *Ottoman* Yoke and submitted to its old Masters. For want of being supported by the *Spaniards*, who had drawn them into this War, the *Venetians* were by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1539 forced to give up *Laurans* in *Dalmatia*, *Napoli de Malvasia*, and *Napoli de Romania*, together with fourteen Islands in the *Archipelago*; and they moreover consented to pay 300 000 Ducats towards the Expences of this War.

Battle of Buda,
1541.

Upon the Death of *John* his Competitor for the Crown of *Hungary* in the Year 1541 *Ferdinand* sent General *Kockendorf* against *Buda*: But the *Turks* coming to the Relief thereof he was defeated with the Loss of 20000 Men; and the *Turks* under the Pretence of keeping this Place for *John Sigismund* Son of *John*, who was a Minor, made great Additions to its Fortifications. The *Christians* were equally unsuccessful at the Siege of *Pest*; which after great Loss they were forced to give over: But the Infidels in the mean Time made themselves Masters of *Weissenburg* and *Gnan*; and shortly after *Temiswar* and *Zelnock* fell into their Hands. They were however driven from before *Agria*, and afterwards from

GRAN taken.

from *Sigeth*; at which last Place they sustained a considerable Loss.

The *Spaniards*, who during the Absence of *Soliman* in *The SPANISH*
Perſia had restored *Alaley-Maffon* to his Dominions, Fleet destroyed,
 made a Descent in the Year 1555 on the Island of *Gerbi*: 1555.
 Upon which the *Turkish* Admiral *Pialis Bucha* was
 sent against them. This Admiral came up with their Fleet
 when the *Spaniards* did not in the least expect him, and
 attacked it so briskly that many Ships were burnt or
 sunk, and very few of the rest escaped. The Loss of the
Spaniards in this Action was supposed to be at least
 18,000 Men.

In the Year 1565 *Soliman* made an Attempt to con- Expedition
 quer the Island of *Malta*; but after losing 20,000 Men, against MAL-
 amongst whom was the famous Corsair *Dragut*, HeTA, 1565.
 quitted this Island. He afterwards invested *Sigeth* with
 an Army of above 100,000 Men. Notwithstanding
 however their Number the *Turks* were several Times
 repulsed by the brave *Nicholas de Serin* the Govern-
 nor; which so provoked *Soliman* that it hastened his
 Death. This Place, which had cost the *Turks* above Death of So-
 30,000 Men, being taken a few Days after the Death LIMAN.

Soliman, who may be justly reckoned among the His Character.
 greatest Princes that ever lived, was amongst other good
 Qualities remarkable for hearing the Complaints of all
 his Subjects; and he never failed to do strict Justice to
 the poorest of them. He was very temperate; and his
 Continence was such that although it was permitted by
 the Law of *Mahomet*, to which he always paid the high-
 est Regard; he never after his Marriage with *Roxelana*
 indulged himself in any Liberties with the other Ladies
 of the *Seraglio*:

Selim his eldest Son by *Roxelana* was upon the Death SELIM II.
 of *Soliman* in the Year 1566 advanced to the Sultanſhip; 1566.
 his Way thereto having been opened by his Mother;
 who under the Pretence of his tampering with the *Ja-*
nissaries had caused *Mustapha* an elder Son of *Soli-*
man by a *Circassian* Woman to be strangled about twelve
 Years before. This Prince, who was much addicted Treaty with
 to drinking, soon after his Accession concluded a Treaty the EMPE-
 with the Emperor *Maximilian II.* The Terms thereof ROR,
 were

were that the *Turks* should keep *Sigab*; but the rest of their Conquests in *Hungary* were to be restored to the Emperor.

FAMAGOSTA In the Year 1571 *Selim* at the Persuasion of *John Miguel* a Jew attacked *Cyprus*, and *Famagosta* the Capital of this Island was after an obstinate Defence taken; This City was however dearly bought; for it cost the *Turks* 20,000 Men; and their Fleet was shortly after entirely ruined by the combined Fleet of *Spain* and *Venice* off *Lepanto*; which was the most fatal Stroke to the *Turks* that they ever met with. Twenty Thousand *Christian* Slaves and 5000 *Turks* were taken Prisoners; near 30,000 *Christian* Slaves and *Turks* were destroyed in the Action; and besides eighty which were burnt or sunk 140 *Turkish* Gallies fell into the Hands of the *Christians*. As the *Spaniards* instead of following this Blow were quite irresolute, and would come into no Scheme proposed by the *Venetians*, the latter were forced by a Treaty concluded two Years after to leave the *Turks* in Possession of the Island of *Cyprus*. In the Year 1575 *Selim* died, and *Amurat* his Son succeeded.

Treaty with
VENICE.

AMURAT III. This Prince engaged in a War with *Persia* and took *Tauris*; but while he was meditating new Conquests his Army was defeated with the Loss of 40,000 Men. By the Negligence however of the *Persian* Monarchy, who gave himself up entirely to his Pleasures, the *Sakan* so restored his Affairs, that the former for the Sake of Peace consented by a Treaty concluded in the Year 1589 to cede *Tauris*, *Chert*, *Tiflis* and some other Places to the *Turks*.

Treaty with
PERSIA,
1589.

War with
HUNGARY.

Peace being made with *Persia* *Amurat* resolved to employ his Forces against *Hungary*; but he was in the beginning of the War which ensued very unsuccessful. The *Bashaw* of *Bosnia* was defeated by the *Imperialists* with the Loss of 10,000 Men, amongst whom was *Mahomet* Son of this *Bashaw*; and he in another Action near *Weissenburg* lost 8000: Nor could he prevent the *Imperialists* from making themselves Masters of *Fil-lack* and *Neuigrad*. The *Grand Vizir* having in the Year 1593 taken the Command of the Army upon himself *Raab* was besieged; and by the Cowardice or Treachery of Count *Hardeck* the Governor this important

turn Fottrell soon fell into his Hands: (But) *Amurat*, who *RAAB* taken. died in the same Year, did but just live to hear the good News thereof.

Mahomet the Son and Successor of *Amurat* was of *MAHOMET* a most cruel and voluptuous Disposition. He caused III 1593. nineteen of his Brothers to be strangled, and ten of his Father's Concubines to be thrown into the Sea; because these were supposed to be pregnant. The War in *Hungary* was continued, and *Mahomet* entered into one with *Persia*: But he dearly repented of the latter, which gave Occasion to a dangerous Insurrection in *Assa*, and the former succeeded very ill.

The Imperialists in spite of the Attempts of the *Ottoman* Army to relieve those Places took *Graz* and *Vindobona* defeated. *Sigismund* *Battori* Prince of *Transylvania* obtained two Victories over the *Turks*. In the first they lost 18,000 Men; in the second 16,000. Thinking thereby to retrieve his Affairs in *Hungary* *Mahomet* in the Year 1596 took upon himself the Command of his Army; and having laid Siege to *Eszek* and *Agria* these Places after being defended bravely both fell into his Hands. The Archduke *Maximilian* came up with and attacked *Mohács* in *October* the same Year, and the *Turks* after an obstinate Resistance began to give Way: But the Folly of the *Christians* in beginning to Plunder too soon gave the *Turks* Time to rally, and falling on with fresh Vigour a most horrid Slaughter ensued; and they remained *The CHRIS-* Masters of the Field. This Disaster to the *Christians* TIANs routed. was in Part made amends for by the Surprize of *Raab* 1596. in the following Year. *Canise* being soon after besieged by the *Turks* the Duke of *Mercour* endeavoured to relieve it. He failed therein; but he made so good a Retreat, that notwithstanding the whole *Turkish* Army was upon his Back his Loss was inconsiderable. The Imperialists did not succeed in the Attempt made in the next Campaign to take *Canise*; they however carried *Waisenburg* by Storm.

In the Year 1604 *Mahomet* died of a Plague which *Death of* made great Havock in *Constantinople*, and was succeeded *MAHOMET.* by *Achmet* his Son. He had another Son elder than *Achmet*; but he was strangled with his Mother during *Mahomet's*

his Life: It being suspected that a Scheme had been laid by these two for dethroning him.

ACHMET I.
1604.

Achmet was in the Beginning of his Reign defeated in two Battles with the *Persians*, in the last of which he lost 30,000 Men; but his Affairs went on very well in *Hungary*: For the Violences committed there by the *German* Soldiers, together with the Persecution sent out upon the Account of Religion, had so disheartened the Minds of the People from the House of *Austria*, that many of them submitted to *Stephen Botskay* Prince of *Transylvania*, who had put himself under Protection of the *Ross*. *Gran* being also taken a finishing Hand was in the Year 1606 put to a Treaty, which had been long upon the Carpet. By this it was agreed that the *Emperor* and *Sultan* should each keep what he was in Possession of in *Hungary*; and that *Botskay* should not be disturbed in the Enjoyment of *Transylvania*.

Treaty with
the Emperor,
1606.

War with
PERSIA.

Not long after Achmet attacked *Persia* and laid Siege to *Erituan*; but the *Persian* Monarch came to the Relief thereof, and forced him after losing 10,000 Men to retire. This ill Success obliged him to sign up a Treaty in the Year 1614 by which the *Persians*, who had made a considerable Progress, were left in Possession of all they had taken.

Treaty with
PERSIA,
1614.

MUSTAPHA
I. 1617.

Osman the Son of Achmet, who died three Years after, being only 16 Years of Age *Mustapha* the Brother of Achmet was advanced to the Throne; but being a weak Prince he was soon deposed and *Osman* succeeded to it.

OSMAN.

This young Prince raised an Army of 300,000 Men with a Design to chastise the Insolence of the *Cossacks*; whose Piracies upon the *Black Sea* were grown intolerable. Hereupon an Army of *Poles* commanded by *Uladislaus* their King marched to the Assistance of the *Cossacks*, and entrenched themselves very advantageously near *Choczim*. *Osman* made several Attempts to force their Entrenchments; but their Conduct and Courage made such Amends for their Want of Number, that notwithstanding his vast Army the *Sultan* after losing many Men made Offers of Peace.

He is assassinated.

Suspecting that the *Janissaries* had not behaved well in this Campaign *Osman* had a Mind to disband them, and to raise an *Arabian* Militia in their Stead; but as he

knew this could not be done safely at *Constantinople* he pretended to make a Visit to *Mahomet's Tomb*. His real Design, which was to remove his Residence to *Damascus*, being perceived the *Janissaries*, for there was no persuading him to lay it aside, assembled in a tumultuous Manner; and took away his Life in the Year 1622.

Hereupon *Mustapha* was restored; but it being soon found that his Incapacity remained he was a second Time deposed; and *Amurat* Brother to *Osman* succeeded.

This Prince had vast Courage, but he was of a cruel Disposition and much addicted to Drinking. Being of a Dissolute Turn he made a Joke of all religious Systems, and which sufficiently shewed how little Regard he had for the *Mahometan Religion* he caused the *Musti*, who is the Head thereof, to be hanged. The Reign of *Amurat* was however in many Respects prudent; for he caused Justice to be administered with the utmost Impartiality; and punished rigorously the least Infraction of the Law. He would often go in Disguise; and if he could detect any Seller of Tobacco, or any Fraud in a Person who sold Bread or other Provisions, he was put to Death upon the Spot: For *Amurat* always had some Persons ready the least Notice to execute his Orders.

Amurat attacked *Persia* in the Year 1635, and *Erivan* was treacherously delivered up to him; but it was retaken in the following Campaign, and the *Cossacks* made themselves in the next Year Masters of *Asoch*. Having in the Year 1638 taken *Bagdat*, at the Siege of which *Amurat* commanded, he in Revenge for the Death of his Grand Vizir, who was killed before this Place, caused the whole *Persian* Garrison consisting of 24,000 Men to be put to the Sword.

Upon the Death of *Amurat* in the Year 1640 *Ibrahim* his Brother, for he left no Children that were of a sufficient Age to succeed, was raised to the Throne. This Prince naturally stupid was so addicted to Voluptuousness, that he caused the Floors of the Rooms in which he sometimes danced with the Ladies of the Seraglio to be covered with Sables. As he took no Care of his Finances, and was at the same Time very extravagant in his Pleasures, he not only exhausted the publick

MUSTAPHA restored, 1622.

AMURAT IV. 1623.

PERSIA, 1635.
1636.
1637.
BAGDAT taken, 1638.

IBRAHIM, 1640.

lick Treasury: But it was after his Death found, that he had anticipated the Revenue of the Empire for seven Years to come.

War with
VENICE.

The Knights of *Malta* having in the Year 1644 seized some Gallies, as they were going with the customary annual Present to *Mecca*, and sheltered themselves in *Candia*, *Ibrahim* attacked this Island which belonged to the *Venetians*: But being wholly devoted to his Pleasures little Progress was made there in his Time. Having, such was his unbridled Lust, violated the Chastity of the *Musi's* Daughter a Conspiracy was entered into by her Father and many of the principal Officers of State, whom his Conduct had disgusted; and the *Janissaries* being brought into their Views *Ibrahim* was deposed in the Year 1648 and strangled.

IBRAHIM
strangled.

MAHOMET
IV. 1648.

Mahomet his Successor continued the War in *Candia*; it was however for some Time very unsuccessful. The *Turkish* Fleet, which had already been thrice worsted, was in a fourth Action near the *Dardanellis* quite ruined; only fourteen Gallies, notwithstanding that it consisted of seventy four Gallies and forty other Vessels, escaping. This was followed with the Loss of the Islands of *Tenedos* and *Stalimeh*; but after the Death of the *Venetian* Admiral *Mocenigo* both these Islands fell again into the Hands of the *Turks*. By the prudent Conduct of *Mahomet Kleuperli* the new Grand Vizir the Face of Affairs in *Candia* was much altered for the better; yet he did not live long enough to see the Reduction

Battle of
DARDANEL-
LES.

Siege of CAN-
DIA, 1669.

of the Capital thereof. After a Siege of near three Years, during which the Besiegers lost 108,000 Men and the besieged above 80,000, this important Place submitted to the *Turks* in September 1669. By a Treaty shortly after concluded it was agreed, that the *Venetians* should keep some Towns they had taken in *Dalmatia*; but the whole Island of *Candia*, except *Suda*, *Spinalongo* and *Carabusa*, was ceded to *Mahomet*.

Treaty with
VENICE.
1669.

War with the
Emperor.

During this War the *Turks* were embarrassed with another on the Side of *Hungary*. *George Ragotski* Prince of *Transilvania* having, although forbid so to do by the *Sultan*, intermeddled in the War betwixt *Poland* and *Suzden* he was deposed; and endeavouring to recover his Dominions by Force he was himself slain in the

the Battle of *Fogaras*. The Successor of *George* pursued the same Measures, for which he shared the same Fate; and *Michael Apassy* was some Time after declared Prince of *Transylvania*. As the Emperor *Leopold* had in the mean Time seized *Clausenburg*, *Zathmar*, *Fort Serinswar* and some other Places, which had for some Time belonged to the Principality of *Transylvania*, the *Turks* fell into *Hungary* and took *Neubausel*. In the Course of the War which ensued the Imperialists were repulsed from before *Canise*, and *Fort Serinswar* whose Garrison the *Turks* cut to Pieces was retaken. On the other Hand the Infidels were worsted near *Leventz* by *Count de Souches*; and at *St. Godard* where they lost 8,000 of their best Troops by General *Montecuculli*: Yet by the Treaty made in the Year 1664 *Tran-Treaty with sylvania* and *Neubausel* in *Hungary* were ceded to the *the Emperor,* *Turks.* 1664.

In the Year 1672 Preparations were made for attack *War with ing Persia*; but it being insisted upon by the *Poles*, that *POLAND,* the *Sultan* should disown publicly the having given 1672. Protection to the *Cossacks* the Army raised for a War with *Persia* was employed against *Poland*. As the *Poles* at this Time split into Factions could make no Head against the *Turks* *Kaminieck* was easily taken: And for the Sake of Peace his *Polish* Majesty, besides giving up this important Place and great Part of the *Ukraine*, con-Treaty with sented to pay an annual Tribute of 30,000 Crowns. *POLAND.* War being soon after renewed the *Polish* General *John Sobieski* defeated the *Turks* with the Loss of 15,000 Men; and although *Kaminieck* could not be retaken, it was stipulated by a Treaty made in the Year 1676 that the Tribute should be no longer paid.

A Scheme being now laid by the Grand Vizir for *War with the penetrating* into the Heart of *Austria*, he after several *Emperor.* Years Preparation took the Field in the Year 1683. 1683. with the most formidable Army that had ever been seen. The Imperialists, who had taken the Field before the Grand Vizir and laid Siege to *Neubausel*, were soon forced to retire: And he pursued them with such Diligence that many Regiments were cut to Pieces, and the Remainder of the Imperial Army had but just Time to throw itself into *Vienna*.

Of T U R K Y.

This Capital being immediately invested the Siege was carried on with great Vigour; but Count *Stabrenberg* defended it so bravely, that a large *Christian* Army, composed of different Troops commanded by the King of *Poland*, the Electors of *Saxony* and *Bavaria*, and the Duke of *Lorrain*, had Time to come up. The Camp of the Grand Vizir, who not imagining that any Army sufficient to look his in the Face could be got together had taken no Care to secure the Passes of the Mountains, was hereupon forced; and after a horrid Slaughter all the Artillery of the *Turks* with great Part of their Baggage were taken.

Defeat of the
TURKS.

Battles of
BARCAN.

The City of *Vienna*, which was reduced to the greatest Extremity, being hereby relieved it was resolved to pursue the *Infidels*; but by the Imprudence of *John Sobieski*, who attacked the *Turks* before the *Germans* had joined him, the *Poles* were defeated with great Loss near *Barcan*. Count *Denhoff* Governor of *Pomerelia* was amongst the slain, and the King of *Poland* himself with his Son the Prince *James* were in the utmost Danger of their Lives. Upon the coming up however of the *Germans* a second Battle was fought; in which the *Turks* had their Turn of ill Fortune, many Thousands of them falling by the Sword or being pushed into the *Danube*. Amongst other Prisoners of Note there were the Vizirs of *Silistria* and *Caramania*; and this Victory was followed with the taking of *Gran* by the Allies.

1684.

Siege of
BUDA.

The *Venetians* Having afterwards entered into the Alliance against them the *Turks* were early in the next Campaign worsted in two Actions; and the Allies laid Siege to *Buda*: But after losing 20,000 Men by Sickness and Famine they gave this Siege over. *Vorowitz* and some Places in *Croatia* were in the same Campaign taken by the allied Army; and the Island of *St. Maure* together with the Town of *Previzza* submitted to the *Venetian* Fleet.

Progress of the
ALLIES,

1685.
1686.

In the Year 1685 the allied Army took *Neuhauzel* and repulsed the *Infidels* from before *Gran*; and the *Venetians* on their Side took *Coron* and *Calamita*. In the following Campaign the *Turks* lost *Buda*, *Segedin* and some other Places in *Hungary*; and the *Venetians*

made

made themselves Masters of *Navarin, Modon, Napoli de Romania* and the Fortrefs of *Sng*. These Misfortunes were followed with the Accession of the *Czar* to the Alliance against the *Turks*. His Expedition however against the *Torturs* in the next Campaign came to very little. The *Grand Vizir* being this Year defeated with the Loss of 7000 Men. together with all his Artillery and Baggage, near *Mohatz* by the Dukes of *Bavaria* and *Lorraine* all *Transilvania* submitted to these; And the Success of the *Venetians*, who took *Castle-Novo, Lepanto, Patras, Mistra* and *Athens*, was quite surprizing. The Minds of the People being alienated on the Account of these Losses from *Mahomet*, he was in the same Year deposed and shut up in Prison, where he continued until his Death in the Year 1673; and *Soliman* his Brother was advanced to the Dignity of *Sultan*.

1687.

Battle of MOHATZ.

Matters were not in the least mended by this Change of *Sultan's*; for the allied Army in the next Campaign took *Weissenburg, Belgrade, Sigeth, Nissa* and *Widia*; But the *Venetians*, after losing their General *Sbarca* and many Men before this Place, were obliged to give over the Siege of *Negropont*. The *Turks* were in the Year 1689 driven from before *Nissa* and *Widin*; yet both these Places fell into their Hands before the End of the Campaign. After having in the next Year gained some Advantage over General *Hessler* *Belgrade* was taken by the *Turks*, and *Essech* was invested; but by the prudent Conduct of the *Duke de Croy* its Governor this Place was kept out of their Hands: And the *Venetians* in the mean Time took *Napoli de Malvasia, Ralona* and *Canina*. In the same Year *Soliman* died.

SOLIMAN II. 1688.

1689.

1690.

Achmet his Brother and Successor received in the first Year of his Reign the disagreeable News, that his Army was defeated by Prince *Lewis* of *Baden* near *Salankemen*. In this Action the *Turks* lost 12,000 Men, and all their Artillery and Baggage. In the next Year *Great-Waradin* submitted to the *Imperialists*; and the *Venetians* subdued the Island of *Cbio*. These Losses helped to shorten the Days of *Achmet*, who died in the next Year; and *Mustapha* eldest Son of *Mahomet IV.* succeeded.

ACHMET II. 1690.

SALENKE-MEN. 1691.

1692.

CHIO lost.

- MUSTAPHA** II. 1693. As the Cowardice of his Predecessors had contributed a good deal to the Misfortunes of the *Ottoman* Empire, this *Sultan* resolv'd to take the Command of his Army upon himself. In the Year 1695 the *Allies* were defeated with great Loss near *Lugos*, *Veterani* their General being slain in the Action: And in the same Year the Island of *Chio* was abandoned by the *Venetian*. In the next Year the *Russians* took *Asoph*, and the *Allies* had invest'd *Temeswaer*: But being inform'd that the *Turkish* Army headed by the *Sultan* approach'd they quitted this Place; and going to meet it a Battle ensued near *Olofcb*. In this Action, which was very bloody, the Loss was pretty near equal; but the Defeat of the *Turks* by Prince *Eugene* in the next Year, which cost them above 30,000 Men, was decisive.
- Battle of*
LUGOS,
1695.
1696.
- Battle of*
OLASCH.
- Treaty of*
CARLOWITZ,
1699. The vast Loss in this Battle, which was fought on the Banks of the *Tetisi*, determin'd *Mustapha* to enter into a Negotiation for a Peace, and a Treaty was concluded under the Mediation of *England* and *Holland* at *Carlowitz* in the Beginning of the Year 1699. By this it was agreed, that the *Russians* should keep *Asoph*; that all conquer'd by the *Venetians* in the *Morea* and *Dalmatia*, together with the Island of *St. Maurice*, should be ceded to them; that the Emperor should keep what he was in Possession of in *Hungary*; and that *Kaminitck* should be ceded to the *Poles*.
- Deposition of*
MUSTAPHA. From this Time *Mustapha* gave evident Proofs, that he desired nothing so much as to cultivate a good Understanding with all the neighbouring Powers: But he was guilty of a great Mistake in suffering himself to be guided entirely by the *Mufti* his Favourite. Jealousies being hereby rais'd in the *Grand Vizir* and other principal Officers of State, it came in the Year 1703 to an Insurrection of the *Fanissaries*: During which the *Mufti* was beheaded; *Mustapha* was depos'd; and *Achmet* Brother of *Mustapha* was advanced to the *Sulthan*-ship.
- The MUFTI*
beheaded.
- ACHMET III.** 1703. This Prince, in order to please those who had rais'd him to the Throne, banish'd the *Sultanesse* his Mother from Court; to whom the imprudent Steps in the latter Part of *Mustapha's* Reign were imputed. *Achmet* gave Shelter

Shelter to *Charles XII.* of *Sweden* after the Battle of *Pultowa*; and the Slight put upon this Monarch on his first coming into the *Ottoman Territories* cost the *Bashaw* of *Oczakow* his Head.

War being at the Solicitation of *Charles* entered into War with by *Achmet* against *Russia*, the Grand Vizir in the Year RUSSIA, 1711 passed the *Danube* with the *Ottoman Troops*, and 1711. came up with the *Russians*, whom the *Czar* commanded in Person, a little below *Falixin* upon the Banks of the *Pruth*. The *Russian Camp* was defended only by *Chevaux de Frise*; yet the *Russians* defended themselves so well, that during a brisk Attack which lasted three Days no Impression was made upon their Camp by the *Turks*, who lost a great Number of Men.

Névertheless as Provisions began to fail the *Czar* de-Treaty of fired a Truce for two Days; and during this a Treaty of PRUTH. Peace was concluded betwixt him and the Grand Vizir. This Treaty did not please *Charles*, who commanded a separate Body of 20,000 Men: But as the Diversion expected from the *Swedens* in *Pomerania* was not made; and the *Czar* consented to give up *Asoph*, and to demolish some Forts that gave Umbrage to the Court of *Constantinople*; which was perhaps as much or more than could have been obtained by continuing the War, it was ratified by the *Sultan*.

After several Years Preparation for War, which alarm- War with ed all the *Christian Powers*, the *Turks* in the Year VENICE, 1715 attacked the *Morca*. The *Knights of Malta* 1715. joined their Fleet to that of *Venice*, yet the Loss of the *Morca* could not be prevented; and had it not been for the Operations of an Imperial Army in *Hungary*, pursuant to a defensive Treaty entered into with the *Venetians*, the latter could have made no Stand against the *Ottoman Forces*. A large Body of Troops was afterwards landed by *Achmet* upon the Island of *Corfu*; but by the Courage and Conduct of General *Schulemburgh*, for which a Statue was decreed him in the Palace thereof, the Siege of *Corfu* was rendered ineffectual. As *Hungary* became afterwards the principal Theatre of this War, nothing considerable happened betwixt the *Turks* and the *Venetians*.

- War with the Emperor. 1716. *Achmet* having in the Year 1716 sent a large Army into *Hungary*, a Battle was fought with the *Imperialists* upon the fifth of July near *Peterwaradin*; in which the *Turks* were entirely routed, and the *Grand Vizir* and ten *Bashaws* fell in the Action. 170 Pieces of Cannon with all their Artillery and Baggage fell into the Hands of the *Imperialists*; and *Prince Eugene* afterwards made himself Master of *Temiswaer*. The next Campaign being opened with the Siege of *Belgrade*, which held out obstinately, the *Turks* attempted on the 15th of August to relieve it; but they were a second Time defeated with the Loss of 131 brass Guns, 37 Mortars, 52 Colours and 9 Horse-Tails; and this City surrendered two Days after. *Achmet* was so dismayed at these Losses, that he proposed entering into a Negotiation for Peace; and a Treaty, whereby the *Imperialists* were left in Possession of all they had taken, was concluded in the Year 1718 at *Passarowitz*.
- Treaty of PASSAROWITZ, 1718. *Achmet* at first made great Advantage of the Troubles that arose in the *Persian* Empire: But by the Conduct of *Thomas Kouli-Kan* a compleat Victory was gained over the *Ottoman* Army near *Tauris*; and not content with retaking what had been taken from *Persia*, he carried the War into the *Turkish* Dominions. Alarmed hereat *Achmet* called Part of his Forces from *Europe*, and it was expected that the whole *Ottoman* Court, which did pass the *Bosphorus* to a Camp marked out at *Scutari*, would for the Sake of being near the Seat of War have went to *Aleppo*.
- War with PERSIA. The *Turkish* Army increased daily: But *Achmet* having agreeably to the cruel Policy of the *Turks* demanded the Heads of some *Bashaws*, accused of failing in their Duty, a Fellow of the very Dregs of the People erected on the 28th of September 1730 a Flag all rent in Pieces in one of the most publick Places in *Constantinople*, and cried out with a loud Voice that all good *Musselmenn* ought to follow him. Every Thing continued pretty quiet that Night; but as Numbers flocked in to this Fellow next Day the *Sultan* returned to *Constantinople*. The *Janissaries* took the Opportunity of the Conteration hereby occasioned to demand, that the *Grand Vizir*, the *Reis Effendi* and the *Captain Bashaw*, should

be punished with Death: And the Tumult came in the End to such a Pitch, that notwithstanding these three were put to Death the *Sultan* was deposed; and *Mahomet* Son of *Mustapha* II. was taken out of Prison and advanced to the Throne.

In the Time of *Achmet*, who was himself very learned, *The Sciences* the Study of the Sciences was much encouraged; and in order to promote this the Art of Printing, for which the *Turks* had the utmost Aversion, was introduced into *Constantinople*.

The Person who was the first Mover in this Infurrection received great Marks of Favour from the new *Sultan*; but as he continued to make new Demands it was thought proper to take him off, lest being of a daring Temper he should stir up another Infurrection. Soon after the Accession of *Mahomet* an Army was sent against the *Persians*, whom the Success at *Tauris* and the Infurrection in *Constantinople* had greatly encouraged; but by the prudent Conduct of the *Seraskier* who commanded against the *Persians* they were in a short Time brought into such Terms of Peace as were very advantageous to the *Turks*.

In the Year 1732 *Kouli-Kan*, under the Pretence of this Treaty's having been extorted, demanded in the Name of *Schah Abbas* III. an Infant, the Restitution of what was thereby ceded to the *Turks*. Receiving a haughty Answer he commenced a War; and Things were pushed so vigorously, that besides conquering the Provinces lately ceded a good deal which had been lost some Time before by the *Persians* was recovered. In the Year 1733 *Kouli-Kan* laid Siege to *Babylon*; but being attacked by an Army under the Command of *Topak Osman*, who had a little while before been deposed at the Desire of the *Jamissaries* from the Office of Grand Vizir, he was forced although the Loss was near equal on both Sides to give this over. The *Turkish* General had also the Advantage in a second Action; and it was believed by the *Turks* that *Kouli-Kan* fell therein: But he soon convinced them of their Mistake; for before the End of the Campaign he fell upon them when they were not in the least aware of it. In this Battle, besides losing *Topak Osman*, the *Turks* were after an incredible Slaughter

The Sciences promoted.

MAHOMET V. 1730.

War with PERSIA, 17, 2.

1733. Battle of BABYLON.

Rout of the TURKS.

ter entirely routed. The *Turkish* Army being in the next Year unable to look him in the Face *Kouli-Kan* extended his Conquests; and in *June* 1735 gained a second Victory: Which was so compleat, that of 160,000 Men of which the *Turkish* Army consisted not above half escaped.

War with
RUSSIA,
1736.

The *Russians* having for some Time complain'd without obtaining any Redress of the Incursions of the *Tartars*, they thought no Time so proper to do themselves Justice in as the present. Hostilities being commenced by them in the Year 1736, they affect taking *Bacifera* laid siege to *Asib*.

Peace with
PERSIA.

Not content with the Title of *Generalissimo* *Kouli-Kan* had now, with the Consent of the *Grandees*, taken upon himself the Title of *Sopbi*. He continued however to act in this Campaign against the *Turks*; but being desirous of having his new Dignity acknowledged by the *Ottoman* Court, an Ambassador was towards the End thereof sent with full Power to make a Peace, and a Treaty was signed at *Constantinople* in *September*. By this the *Sultan* acknowledged *Kouli-Kan* as *Sopbi*, and engaged to assist him against all who should attempt to disturb him in the Possession of the *Persian* Throne; and to prevent the disagreeable Word *Cession* and the warning of the Provinces ceded it was agreed, that the Limits of the two Empires should be fixed as they were in the Time of *Amurat I.* Prisoners on both Sides were moreover delivered up; and it was stipulated, that the *Persians* should have Liberty to visit *Mohamet's* Tomb.

War with the
Emperor.

The Court of *Petersburg* was far from being pleas'd with this Treaty betwixt the *Turks* and *Persians*; and as the Emperor had by the Preliminaries of *Vienna* put an End to the War that arose on Account of the *Polish* Election, he caus'd his Minister at *Constantinople* to declare, that if Satisfaction was not made to the *Russians* for the Depredations of the *Tartars*, he was oblig'd to join with the *Empress* of *Russia* his good Ally against the *Turks*. The Court of *Constantinople* was hereat greatly surpriz'd; because the Imperial Minister there had upon the Expiration of the Treaty of *Passarowitz* declar'd, that his Master desired to continue in Amity

Amity with the Sultan. No Regard being paid to the Threats of the Emperor Preparations for War were made on all Sides; but it being impossible to act vigorously in two Places at once, it was resolv'd to act only upon the Defensive against *Russia*. This gave the *Russians* an Opportunity of taking *Asoph*, *Oczakow* and *Chodzin*; but Things took quite another Turn on the Side of *Hungary*. His Imperial Majesty's Troops took *Nissa* in the Year 1737, and sat down before *Widin*; but upon the Approach of the *Turkish* Army they thought proper to retire, and *Nissa* came again into the Hands of the *Turks*. General *Doxat* Governor thereof who capitulated was beheaded; and the *Imperial* General Count *Sackenborf* being called to an Account for the ill Success of this Campaign, in which a very fine Army was ruined without having done any Thing, he was disgraced and imprisoned. The *Turks* in the next Campaign made themselves Masters of old and new *Orsova*, and several inconsiderable Skirmishes happened: But the Battle of *Crotzka* was the fatal Stroke to the *Imperialists*; and it was the more so, because it rendered the Defence of *Belgrade* which was besieged in the next Campaign impracticable. The Negotiation which had been before carried on under the Mediation of *France* was hereupon renewed; and full Power being sent to the *Imperial* General *Wallis* Count *Neupurg* repaired by his Order to the *Turkish* Camp.

After a Conference of twelve Hours a Treaty was signed upon the first of *September* 1739; of which the principal Articles were, that *Belgrade* should after demolishing the Works be delivered up to the *Turks*; that for the Time to come the *Danube* and *Sava* should be the Boundaries of the two Empires; that the Emperor should have the *Bannat* of *Tamswaer*; and that the Limits of *Bosnia* should be as they were fixed by the Treaty of *Carlowitz*. This Treaty was certainly very disadvantageous to the Emperor, and the Persons concerned in the Negotiation thereof were under the Pretence that they had exceeded their Instructions disgraced; but as the Emperor was in no Condition to stop the Progress of the *Turkish* Army, it is probable he would

would if the War had continued have sustained greater Losses.

*Treaty with
RUSSIA.*

By a Treaty shortly after concluded with *Russia* it was agreed, that the *Russians* should keep *Ajoph* and *Orzoburn*; but that *Choczim* should be restored.

*Of the Man-
ners of the
TURKS.*

It is generally allowed that the *Turks* are superstitious, avaricious and lecherous; but if it be considered that they are by their Religion allowed to have four Wives, and as many Concubines as they please, this last is not much to be wondered at. On the contrary they are for the most Part temperate, courteous, and just in their Dealings; and they are remarkable for adhering to their Word with the utmost Faithfulness. The Devoutness and Zeal of the *Turks* in religious Matters ought to make some *Christians* blush; and the forgiving of Injuries is so practised among them that Duelling is never heard of in *Turky*. It is so customary in the Beginning of their Feast of *Bairam*, which in some Measure resembles the *Easter* of the *Christians*, for all the *Turks* who are at Enmity to be reconciled, that such as refuse to be so are thought to profane this Festival. They are naturally brave; and their Intrepidity in Battle is vastly increased by the Prevalence of a Notion, that every Man's Days which can neither be lengthned nor shortned are appointed, and that the Souls of such as fall in Battle are immediately carried to the Regions of Bliss. The Sciences are but little cultivated amongst the *Turks*, yet they do not want for good natural Sense, and they distinguish in most Cases very well. Upon the whole it appears, that the *Turks* are by no means such Monsters of Inhumanity as some imagine. This however must be understood of the Native *Turks*: For as to the *Renegades* found in *Turky*, who are generally the Scum of the Nation left by them, these are always a Disgrace to the Nation to which they go.

*Of the TUR-
KISH Domi-
nions and Com-
modities.*

The Dominions of the *Sultan* are commonly divided into *European* and *Asiatick Turkey*; but as a good Deal in *Africa* belongs to him this is not quite a just Division. *Turky* in *Europe* comprehends all *Greece*; the Islands in the *Archipelago*, and those of *Cyprus*, *Rhode* and *Candia*; *Thrace*, *Macedonia*, *Albania*, *Servia*, *Rascia*, *Bul-*

Bulgaria and good Part of *Hungary*; and *Crim-Tartary* and many Countries that lie along the *Black Sea*. The *Hospadars* of *Wallachia* and *Moldavia* are likewise dependent upon the *Sultan*. *Turky* in *Asia* comprehends the Provinces of *Natolia*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Mesopotamia*, *Turcomania* and *Georgia*. *Egypt* in *Africa* belongs also to the *Sultan*; and he maintains a kind of Sovereignty over *Algiers*, *Tripoli* and *Tunis*. The principal Commodities exported from *Turky* are Oil, Wine, Raisins, Cotton, Honey, Wax, Turpentine, Mastick, Cassia, Aloes, Senna, Opium, Coffee, Leather, Silk and Carpets.

The *Sultan* is so absolutely Master of the Lives and Fortunes of his Subjects, that when any Man dies he allows what he thinks proper for the Support of his Family, and takes the rest of his Estate to himself; and if he demands the Head of any Subject the Resignation to his Pleasure is such, that instead of opposing the poor Man comforts himself with the Notion of its being a kind of Martyrdom, and that it is a much shorter and surer Way to Paradise than by a natural Death. The ordinary Revenue of the *Sultan* amounts to about 8,000,000 Crowns, and the Confiscation of Estates makes a great Addition thereto: A Minister or principal Officer of State in *Turky* being often sacrificed for no other Reason than because he is rich. Notwithstanding however the Absoluteness of his Power it imports the *Sultan* to carry it well to the *Janissaries*; for not to mention the many Ministers who have fallen Victims to their Rage, it is plain from the Examples made of *Osman*, *Ibrahim* and others, that it is dangerous even for the *Sultan* himself to provoke these.

An Army of two or three hundred thousand Men can easily be raised in *Turky*; nor is it any Expence to the Publick: For the greatest Part of these are brought into the Field by the *Bashaws* or *Beglerbegs*, who hold Lands called *Timariots* on Condition of furnishing a certain Number of Men when called for, and the rest are paid out of the *Sultan's* Coffer. Of all the *Turkish* Troops the Body of *Janissaries* is much the best; yet these are fallen from their ancient Reputation. Amongst other Reasons to which this may be ascribed, the Deviation

ation from the Custom of admitting only *Christian* Children into this Body ought to be looked upon as one of the principal ones. The *Christians* have no Attachments; but as the native *Turks*, who for the Sake of enjoying the Privileges enjoyed by the *Janissaries* have contrived to get into this Body, have Relations and Friends, these are often governed by Motives inconsistent with true Valour, and sometimes by such as are hurtful to the State. The Wars moreover in *Candia* and *Hungary* have carried off great Numbers of the *Janissaries*, and it has been a Maxim since the Death of *Abraham* to restrain as much as possible their Power; which was heretofore carried to such a Pitch, that they made no Scruple of demanding whenever they pleased a Minister's Head, and they frequently went so far as to depose and murder the *Sultan* himself. The maritime Power of the *Turks* is by no means contemptible; yet as they have been usually worsted at Sea, and often by an inferior Force, they have a Proverb amongst them, *That God has given the Earth to the Turks and the Sea to the Christians*. Upon the whole the Power of the *Turks* is very considerable; and it is much increased by the Maxim, which prevails amongst them, of paying no Regard in the Disposal of Offices to Rank or Riches: For as military Merit is in *Turky* the only Way to Promotion in the Army, any Person, however low his Birth and Fortune is, may if he discovers uncommon Courage rise to the highest Command therein.

Interest of
TURKEY with
Regard to
PERSIA.

The *Turks* have the utmost hatred to the *Persians*, whom they look upon as Hereticks; yet they could never do any Thing considerable against these Forces notwithstanding the *Persians* were at that Time no Match for the *Turks*, they took such Care to carry away all Provisions, and to divert all the Waters, that the large Armies sent against *Persia* in the fifteenth and sixteenth Centuries suffered greatly from Famine. If therefore it was at that Time, when the *Persian* Monarchs were sunk in Luxury and Effeminacy, imprudent for the *Turks* to attack *Persia*, it must be much more so to do it at this Time, when the *Persian* Affairs are by the valorous and prudent Conduct of *Kotli-Kan* brought into a much better Condition. On the other Hand the Barrenness of the

the Provinces of *Turky*, which border on *Persia*; is a great Security to the *Ottoman Empire*; for it would be very difficult and expensive for the *Persians* to support a considerable Army long therein.

Russia is next to *Persia* the most formidable Enemy RUSSIA. to the *Turks*; for the Countries on the *Black Sea*, which border upon *Russia*, are the weakest of the whole *Turkish Empire*; and *Ajoph* the Key thereto is now in the Hands of the *Russians*. As it would however be a great Expence to the *Russians* to carry on War at so great a Distance, and in a barren Country; and the *Tartars*, who are tributary to the *Sultan*, would in such a Case annoy the *Russians* greatly, the *Turks* have not much to fear from them. Upon the whole it is for the Interest of these two Empires to be upon good Terms, that they may have each others Assistance in Case of a War with *Persia*.

As the Forces of the *Poles* bear no Proportion to those POLAND. of the *Sultan*, the latter are in no Danger from the former. On the other Hand, as the Court of *Petersburg* would not in all Probability choose to see the *Turks* make Conquests upon the *Poles*, it is not likely that they should get any Thing by attacking *Poland*.

The *Turks*, as appears plainly from the Event of the HUNGARY. late War, are more than a Match for the House of *Austria*; and they have ever since the Reign of *Solim II.* been intent upon making themselves Masters of *Hungary*. It is however a very great Expence to carry on War in *Hungary*; and a strong Confederacy would in all Probability be formed by the *Christian Princes* against them, as there was in the Year 1683, if they should attempt any Thing further on this Side: So that it seems their wisest Way, to think themselves well off with what was ceded by the Treaty of *Belgrade*, which was indeed vastly advantageous to them.

Venice cannot hurt the *Ottoman Empire*; and the Loss VENICE. of the *Morea* sufficiently shews that she is unable to withstand the Power thereof. It has moreover been so much a Maxim with the *Venetians*, whose Trade with *Turky* is vastly profitable, to avoid a Rupture with the *Turks*, that the *Spaniards* call the Republick of *Venice* the Concubine of the *Sultan*.

The

The AFRICAN POWERS. The King of *Æthiopia* is the most respectable Neighbour the *Turks* have on the Side of *Africa*; but as his Power is nothing if compared with that of the *Sultan* they are in no Danger from him. As to the other *African* Powers they are so far from having any Notion of making Conquests upon the *Turks*, that they make it Part of their daily Prayer to be free from the Attacks of the *Turks*.

Danger to the TURKS from a Confederacy. If *Venice*, *Hungary* and *Poland*, should join heartily in a War against the *Sultan*, they would undoubtedly be able to drive the *Turks* out of *Europe*: But as these Powers would soon grow jealous of each others Acquisitions, although at the Expence of the common Enemy of *Christianity*, such a Junction is scarce to be expected.

End of the SECOND VOLUME.

A N
I N D E X
T O T H E
T W O V O L U M E S.

The Numerals I. and II. denote *First* and *Second Volume*, and the smaller Figures which follow denote the *Pages*.

- A**BEL King of Denmark, I. 180. He is slain, *ib.*
 Abelgard Count of *Pouille*, II. 123. He is deposed by Robert his Brother, *ib.* His Attempt to recover the *Pouille* fails, 124.
- Abenaxa a Moorish General in Spain revolts and takes the Title of Miramolin, I. 53. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Achmet I. Emperor of Turkey, II. 366. He makes Peace with the Emperor of Germany, *ib.* He is worsted by the Persians, *ib.*
- Achmet II. Emperor of Turkey, II. 371. His ill Success against the Christians shortens his Days, *ib.*
- Achmet III. Emperor of Turkey, II. 372. He shelters Charles XII. of Sweden, 373. He attacks Russia, *ib.* He engages in a War with the Emperor of Germany and Venice, *ib.* Kou'i Kan defeats him, 374. The Sciences are encouraged by him, *ib.* He is deposed and strangled, 375.
- Achmet son of Bajazet is strangled, II. 359.
- Actions in France sink to half their Value, I. 299.
- Adolph Emperor of Germany, I. 354. He attempts the Recovery of Arles, *ib.* He is deposed and slain by his Rival, *ib.*
- Adrian Pope, II. 60. Charlemain confirms to him the Grant of his Father, *ib.*
- Ætius the Roman General is slain by his Master, I. 218.
- Agila King of the Visgoths, I. 25. He is deposed and slain, *ib.*
- Agnus King of Sweden, II. 198. He is hanged by his Wife, *ib.*
- Aladulus Prince of Taurus is beheaded, II. 360.
- Alans they are subdued by the Franks, I. 219.
- Alarick King of the Visgoths, I. 23. He is slain, *ib.*
- Albania is subdued by the Turks, II. 352.
- Albermarle Lord is taken Prisoner, I. 294.
- Alberoni Cardinal is disgraced, I. 101.
- Albert of Austria is made Governor of the Netherlands, I. 321.
- Albert I. Emperor of Germany, I. 354. He is murdered, *ib.*

Albert

I N D E X.

- Albert II. Emperor of Germany*, I. 356.
- Albert King of Sweden*, II. 260. He overcomes *Magnus* his rival, *ib.* Oppressing his Subjects they call in *Margaret* of *Denmark*, 109. Being made Prisoner he resigns the Crown and retires to *Muscklenburg*, *ib.*
- Albert Frederick Duke of Prussia*, II. 279. Becoming incapable of Governing he is deposed, *ib.*
- Albert Grand Master of the Teutonick Order*, II. 277. Teutonick *Prussia* is erected into a Dutchy for him, 278. He is put under the Ban of the Empire, *ib.* He embraces the Protestant Religion, *ib.*
- Alençon Duke of the Netherlanders* desire his Protection, I. 318. He accepts the Sovereignty of Part of the *Netherlands*, 319. Attempting to make himself absolute he is driven from thence, *ib.*
- Alexander the Great* his surprizing Progress, I. 7. His Conduct in conforming to the Manners of the *Persians* vindicated, 8. Contests betwixt his Generals upon his Death, *ib.*
- Alexander King of Poland*, II. 295.
- Alexander de Medicis Duke of Florence*, II. 42. He is assassinated, *ib.* His Murderers suffer Death, *ib.*
- Alexander II. Pope*, II. 67. His Election is declared void by the Emperor, *ib.*
- Alexander VI. Pope*, II. 93. His Intrigues, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Alexis Emperor of Greece* is drowned, II. 128.
- Alexis Michaelowitz Czar of Muscovy*, II. 329. He commits great Ravages in *Lithuania*, *ib.* The *Swedes* repulse him in *Livonia*, *ib.* A Rebellion against him, *ib.*
- Aloizo Mocenigo Doge of Venice*, II. 173.
- Aloizo Pisani Doge of Venice*, II. 173.
- Alope Pandolph* is put to Death, II. 138.
- Alphonso I. King of Austria*, II. 36. He signalizes himself against the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Alphonso II. King of Asturia*, II. 38. He refuses to comply with an infamous Treaty made by his Predecessor with the *Moors*, *ib.* His Reign is disturbed at Home, *ib.* He cuts off 50,000 *Moors*, *ib.*
- Alphonso III. King of Asturia*, I. 41. He is successful against the *Moors*, *ib.* He uses *Bernardo del Carpio* ill, *ib.* His Son forces him to resign the Crown, *ib.*
- Alphonso IV. King of Leon*, I. 43. He retires into a Monastery, *ib.*
- Alphonso V. King of Leon*, I. 46. He takes much from the *Moors*, *ib.* He is killed at the Siege of *Viscu*, *ib.*
- Alphonso VI. King of Castile*, I. 51. He makes Conquests upon the *Moors*, *ib.* He disgraces the *Cid*, *ib.* He takes *Toledo*, 52. Marrying a Moorish Princess he gives Assistance to her Father, 53. His Troops are worsted by the *Moors*, 54.
- Alphonso VII. King of Castile*, I. 55. He is deprived of part of his Dominions by *Uraca* his Wife and her Son, *ib.*
- Alphonso VIII. King of Castile*, I. 56. He defeats twelve Moorish Kings,

I N D E X.

- Kings**, 57. *Alphonso of Portugal* repulses him, *ib.* He takes the Title of Emperor, 58. He brings all the Christian Princes into a League against the *Moor*s, 59. He divides his Dominions, 60.
- Alphonso IX.** King of *Castile*, I. 60. The Kingdom is much disturbed during his Minority, *ib.*
- Alphonso X.** King of *Castile*, I. 61. An irreverent Expression of his, *ib.* He is well skilled in *Astronomy*, *ib.* His Son deprives him of the Crown, 62. His *Forces* are routed by the *Moor*s, *ib.*
- Alphonso XI.** King of *Castile*, I. 64. He suppresses a Rebellion 65. He defeats the united Forces of *Navarre* and *Aragon*, 66. He dies of a *Plague*, *ib.*
- Alphonso Perez de Gusman**, his great Constancy, I. 63.
- Alphonso I.** King of *Naples*, II. 139. He prevails over *Rene Duke of Anjou* his Rival, *ib.*
- Alphonso II.** King of *Naples*, II. 139.
- Alphonso I.** Count of *Portugal*, I. 120. He drives *Ferdinand Paen* out of *Portugal*, *ib.* He throws off all Subjection to *Leys*, 121. He is proclaimed King, *ib.* Five *Moorish Kings* are defeated by him, *ib.* He becomes Master of *Lisbon*, *ib.* He is taken Prisoner, *ib.*
- Alphonso II.** King of *Portugal*, I. 121.
- Alphonso III.** King of *Portugal*, I. 121. He is excommunicated, *ib.*
- Alphonso IV.** King of *Portugal*, I. 122.
- Alphonso V.** King of *Portugal*, I. 124. He takes some Places in *Africa*, *ib.*
- Alphonso VI.** King of *Portugal*, I. 129. He is attacked by the *Spaniards*, 130. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Aliena* is burnt by the *Suedes*, II. 190.
- Alvianso General** is made Prisoner, II. 160.
- Amadeus I.** of *Savoy*, II. 1.
- Amadeus II.** of *Savoy*, II. 1.
- Amadeus III.** of *Savoy*, II. 2. He distinguishes himself in *Palestine*, *ib.*
- Amadeus IV.** of *Savoy*, II. 2. He is made Duke of *Aoust*, *ib.*
- Amadeus V.** of *Savoy*, II. 3. He obtains the Surname of *Grand*, *ib.* He considerably enlarges his Dominions, *ib.* He saves *Rhodes* from the *Turks*, *ib.*
- Amadeus VI.** of *Savoy*, II. 3. He buys the *Pais de Vaux*, *ib.* He assists the Emperor of *Greece*, 4. He dies of a *Plague*, *ib.*
- Amadeus VII.** of *Savoy*, II. 4. He is killed by a Fall from a Horse, *ib.*
- Amadeus VIII.** of *Savoy*, II. 4. He buys *Geneva*, *ib.* He is made Duke of *Savoy*, *ib.* He resigns the Government, *ib.* He is chosen *Pope*, *ib.*
- Amadeus IX.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 4.
- Amalarick** King of the *Visigots*, I. 24. He is slain by his Wife's Brothers, *ib.*
- America* is discovered by *Columbus*, I. 76.
- Amurat I.** Sultan of *Turky*, II. 352. He comes into *Europe*, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- He makes *Adrianople* his Residence, *ib.* He institutes the Office of Grand Vizir, 353. He is stabbed, *ib.*
- Amurat II.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 355. His Rival *Mustapha* is strangled, *ib.* *Hunniade* repulses him, 356. He is worsted by *Scanderberg*, *ib.*
- Amurat III.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 364. The *Persians* rout him, *ib.* He attacks *Hungary*, *ib.*
- Amurat IV.* Sultan of *Turky*, II. 367. He attacks *Persia*, *ib.* His Cruelty to the Garrison of *Bagdat*, *ib.*
- Anabaptists*: Insurrection of these in *Westphalia*, I. 358.
- Andrea Contarini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154. A powerful Alliance is formed against him, *ib.*
- Andrea Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 153. He obtains Liberty to trade in *Egypt*, *ib.* He is unsuccessful against the *Genoese*, *ib.*
- Andrea Gritto* Doge of *Venice*, II. 161. The Republick flourishes under him, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Turks*, 162.
- Andrea Vendramino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Angelo Participatio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is attacked by *Pepin*, *ib.*
- Anbault* Prince of is slain, II. 291.
- Anjou* Duke of is appointed Heir to the *Spanish* Monarchy, I. 88.
- Anne* Empress of *Russia*, II. 339. *Augustus* is raised by her to the *Polish* Throne, *ib.* She attacks the *Turks*, 340. *Tamas Kouli Kan* courts her Friendship, *ib.* She punishes the *Dolgoruck's*, *ib.* *Walinski* and others are punished by her; 341.
- Anne* Princess of *Brunswick Wolfenbattel* obtains the Regency of *Russia*, II. 342. She is removed from it, 343. She is confined at *Riga*, 345.
- Anne* Queen of *Great-Britain*, I. 195. She pushes the War against *France*, *ib.* Her Ministry is changed, 197. She dismisses the Duke of *Marlborough*, 198. She makes Peace with *France*, 199.
- Ansgarius* Bishop of *Bremen* plants Christianity in *Denmark*, II. 178. He does the same in *Sweden*, 199.
- Anthony* King of *Navarre* is slain, I. 259.
- Antonio Grimani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 161.
- Antonio Memo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 165.
- Antonio Priuli* Doge of *Venice*, II. 166. The Authors of a Conspiracy against him are brought to Justice, *ib.* He frustrates the Designs of the *Spaniards* upon the *Vallakins*, 167.
- Antonio Trivisano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 162. He retires into a Monastery, *ib.*
- Antonio Veniero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 155. He renews the *Peduan* War, *ib.* *Corfu* submits to him, *ib.*
- Argyle* Duke of commands in *Scotland*, I. 201.
- Argyle* Earl of is beheaded, I. 192.
- Armado* *Spanish* is ruined, I. 78.
- Armenia* is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 353.
- Arminians* Dispute betwixt them and the *Gomarists*, I. 325.

Arminian

I N D E X.

- Arminius* *Janus* his Doctrines are condemned, I. 325.
- Arnolph* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 346.
- Aragon* is detached from *Navarre*, I. 48. It is annexed to *Castile*, 70. It is deprived of its Privileges, 195.
- Arthur* Duke of *Bretany* claims the *English* Crown; I. 154. He dies in Prison, *ib.*
- Asiart* *Paul* is put to Death, II. 60.
- Asmund* I. King of *Sweden*; II. 199. He is forced to quit the Throne, *ib.*
- Asmund* II. King of *Sweden*, II. 200. He is routed and slain, *ib.*
- Assyrian* Monarchy its Antiquity, I. 2. Arts of its Monarchs to awe the People, 3. Ruin thereof, *ib.*
- Astolph* King of *Lombardy* subdues the *Exercate*, II. 54. He ravages the Pope's Territories, *ib.* He is forced to give over the Siege of *Rome*, 55. He again attacks *Rome*, 57. He surrenders the *Exercate* to *Pepin*, 58.
- Athanasius* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26.
- Athenians* their imprudent Conduct, I. 5.
- Athens* the most famous State in *Greece*, I: 5. A Confederacy against it, *ib.*
- Atherbury* Bishop of *Rocheſter* is banished; I. 205.
- Attila* the *Hun* is defeated, I. 218.
- Atulph* King of the *Viſgoths*, I. 21.
- Audemar* Count of *Genoa* conquers *Corſica*, II. 17.
- Auguries* are founded on most uncertain Principles, I. 13.
- Auguſtino* *Barberigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158. He drives *Charles* VIII. from *Naples*, *ib.* The *Piſans* are ſupported by him, 159. He joins against *Lewis* Duke of *Milan*, *ib.*
- Auguſtus* I. King of *Poland*, II. 309. A remarkable Speech of his, *ib.* The *Conti* Party acknowledge him, 311. He invades *Livonia*, *ib.* *Poland* is overrun by the *Suedes*, 312. The *Polish* Throne is declared vacant, 313. He retires into *Saxony*, *ib.* He regains the *Polish* Crown, 316. A Conſpiracy against him; 317. He calls ſeveral Diets, 319.
- Auguſtus* II. King of *Poland*, II. 320. He makes his Election good against *Stanislaus*, *ib.*
- Arelio* King of *Aſturia*, I. 37. He makes an infamous Treaty with the *Moors*, *ib.*
- Aymon* of *Savoy*, II. 3.

B.

- B***ajamonte* *Tiepolo* his Conſpiracy, II. 152. He is trod to Death, *ib.*
- Bajazet* I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 353. He ſubdues *Bulgaria* and *Armenia*, *ib.* He is attacked by the Emperor of *Germany*, *ib.* *Tamerlane* takes him Priſoner, 354. His miſerable Death, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Bajazet H. Sultan of Turkey*, II. 358. His Rival *Zinzibus* is forced to fly, *ib.* The Sultan of *Egypt* works him, *ib.* He is successful in *Hungary*, *ib.* The *Venetians* are attacked by him, *ib.* His Sons take Arms against him, 359. He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Banier* General his Progress in *Germany*, II. 242.
- Barcelona* Count of succeeds to *Arragon*, I. 58.
- Barcelona* is taken by the Allies, I. 92. *Philip V.* takes it by Storm, 99.
- Bartolomio Gradenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 153.
- Basilius Siski* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. *Demetrius* prevails against him, *ib.* He is delivered into the Hands of the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Basilius V.* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 327. The *Cossack-Tartars* rout him, *ib.*
- Battle of *Alubera*, I. 125. *Aleppo*, II. 360. *Ajaborista*, I. 123. *Almanara*, 96. *Almanza*, 290. *Altenburg*, II. 241. *Alvada*, I. 40. *Antwerp*, 322. *Arles*, 24. *Arbione*, 195. *Arvones*, 82. *Augsbuig*, 347. *Auvergne*, 222. *Auxerre*, 227. *Avincourt*, 241. *Babylon*, II. 375. *Bad-jox*, I. 96. *Bannocksborough*, 157. *Banan*, II. 370. *Basil*, I. 401. *Bologna*, 383. Another there, II. 357. *Bellin*, 282. *Biccioni*, I. 73. *Bitonto*, II. 142. *Bornhou*, 180. *Bosworth*, I. 168. *Bovino*, II. 130. *Boyne*, I. 193. *Braunsfeld*, II. 236. Another there, 244. *Bresse*, 160. *Brisack*, 242. *Brudix*, 232. *Browall*, 198. *Buda*, I. 374. Another there, II. 362. *Cadix*, I. 78. *Callo*, 326. *Carion*, 49. *Carnovia*, II. 275. *Carpi*, I. 90. *Cassal*, 83. *Cassano*, 93. *Castro-Giovanni*, II. 124. *Colone*, 132. *Erifolei*, I. 253. *Chiari*, 90. *Chocnim*, II. 300. *Coai*, 10. *Copenhagen*, 187. *Courtray*, I. 234. *Contran*, 263. *Cressy*, 235. *Crevant*, 163. *Croia*, II. 356. *Crotzka*, 377. *Czasslaw*, 285. *Dalmatia*, 152. *Dantzick*, 232. *Dardanelles*, 169. *Denain*, I. 294. *Dieppe*, 265. *Dreux*, 299. *Dunlanguen*, 273. *Dundee*, 201. *Ekeren*, 287. *Eriwan*, II. 366. *Estremos*, I. 85. *Falcoping*, II. 209. *Falczin*, 373. *Falkirk*, I. 156. *Ferrara*, II. 161. *Fleury*, I. 330. *Fontarabis*, 272. *Friburg*, II. 244. *Fridlinguen*, I. 287. *Fogaras*, II. 369. *Gadebusch*, 256. *Gallipoli*, 152. *Gemblours*, I. 317. *Gerbi*, II. 362. *Giera*, I. 248. *Gieronne*, 87. *Gorzno*, 300. *Gran*, 370. *Granfon*, I. 402. *Grave*, 316. *Gravelines*, 255. *Guastalla*, II. 14. *Hagenau*, I. 289. *Hamel*, II. 241. *Hastings*, I. 147. *Helsinburg*, II. 190. The *Herrings*, I. 163. *Hockstet*, 288. Another there, 371. *Holowefin*, II. 254. *Hunsfeldt*, 291. *Janowitz*, 245. *Jasso*, 358. *Jury*, I. 265. *Kliffow*, II. 251. *Konings-Latern*, II. 168. *Lagos*, I. 284. *La Hogue*, 283. *Landscroon*, II. 188. *La Vieue*, 159. *Leith*, I. 188. *Lepanto*, II. 163. *Leucate*, I. 83. *Leuztra*, 8. *Leventix*, II. 369. *Leuse*, I. 330. *Lignitz*, II. 293. *Lincoping*, 208. *Lisfe*, I. 321. The *Loire*, 23. *Lysa*, 60. *Lugas*, 366. *Lunden*, II. 188. *Lutzen*, 239. *Luzara*, I. 91. *Maestricht*, 325. Another there, 330. *Malplaquet*, 293. *Marignan*, 249. *Marsaille*, 284. *Matari*,

I N D E X.

- Matari*, II. 360. *Marciano*, I. 255. *Mersbourg*, 346. *Mobatz*, II. 361. Another there, 371. *Mobiloff*, 332. *Molwitz*, 285. *Moncautour*, I. 260. *Mont-Cassel*, 235. *Mont-Catin*, II. 134. *Mount-L'Heri*, I. 244. *Montreuil*, 252. *Morat*, 402. *Morea*, II. 153. *Morgarten*, I. 401. *Mount-Stella*, II. 354. *Mulberg*, I. 357. *Musselborough*, 174. *Nancy*, 402. *Naples*, 226. *Narva*, II. 250. *Naumburg*, 239. *Negropont*, 20. *Nerwinde*, I. 284. *Nicopolis*, II. 353. *The Nieper*, II. 333. *Nieuport*, I. 322. *Nissa*, II. 371. *Nojara*, I. 67. *Novara*, 403. *Nordlinguen*, 273. Another there, II. 241. *Nuys*, 367. *Nyburg*, II. 247. *The Oplio*, I. 90. *Ollasch*, 366. *Orleans*, 218. *Ottagio*, II. 7. *Oudenarde*, I. 291. *Parma*, II. 14. *Pavia*, I. 251. *Pera*, II. 153. *Perleberg*, 242. *Peter-waradin*, I. 383. *Plozkow*, II. 273. *Poitiers*, I. 23. Another there, 237. *Praque*, 361. *Pultofik*, II. 313. *Pultarwa*, 255. *Punitz*, 314. *Ramilies*, I. 289. *Ravenna*, 348. *Retbel*, 274. *Rbinsfield*, II. 242. *Rocbelle*, I. 238. *Rocroy*, 273. *Radau*, II. 274. *St. Albans*, I. 165. *St. Andre*, II. 370. *St. Denis*, I. 259. *St. Godarts*, 363. *St. Omers*, 330. *St. Quintin*, 255. *St. Sophia*, II. 356. *Salankemen*, 371. *Santa Vittoria*, I. 91. *Saragossa*, 96. *Sardinia*, II. 153. *Sempach*, I. 401. *Steneff*, 329. *The Seven Counts*, 54. *Sicily*, 330. Another there, II. 150. *Sintziem*, I. 279. *Smolensko*, II. 298. *The Sound*, I. 328. *Spigno*, II. 8. *Spire*, I. 287. Another there, 354. *The Spurs*, 249. *Stangbroo*, II. 229. *Staffarde*, I. 283. *Stetin*, II. 234. *Steenkirk*, I. 87. *Stockholm*, II. 213. Another there, 214. *Stoloff'n*, I. 290. *Strangpelle-Bridge*, II. 200. *Strangness*, 229. *Stull-Weissenburg*, 364. *Stumi*, 232. *Sweinitz*, 244. *Tannsburg*, 275. *Taoro*, I. 125. *Tariff*, 66. *The Taro*, 247. *Tawris*, II. 374. *The Teifs*, I. 366. *Tercera*, 263. *Thionville*, 272. *Tirnaw*, 373. *Tomin-guen*, II. 250. *The To*, I. 284. *Tournavento*, II. 8. *Trenschin*, I. 377. *Treves*, 279. *Turin*, 290. *Turnboot*, 321. *Vaila*, II. 160. *Vecchio*, 27. *Verneuil*, I. 163. *Verona*, II. 160. *Vienna*, I. 365. *Vico*, 195. *Villa-Vicioja*, 85. Another there, 97. *Vincenza*, II. 161. *Ulm*, 131. *Upsal*, 201. *Waizen*, 370. *Warna*, 294. *Warsaw*, 303. *The White-Sea*, I. 290. *Wilmansfrand*, II. 343. *Wilmerguen*, I. 409. *Worcester*, 188. *Xeres*, 34. *York*, 186. *Zulpich*, 221.
- Batteri Sigismund* his Progress against the *Turks*, II. 365.
- Bawaria* Elector of his Success against the *Turks*, II. 370.
- Bawaria* Elector of declares for *France*, I. 370. He flies into the *Netherlands*, 372. He is put under the Ban of the Empire, 374. He lays Claim to the *Austrian* Succession, 389.
- Beaufort* Duke of is killed, I. 277.
- Becket* Thomas of is assassinated, I. 152.
- Bedford* Duke of is made Regent of *France*, I. 162. Contest between him and the Duke of *Burgundy*, 163.
- Benedict* IX. Pope, II. 64. he is driven from *Rome*, *ib.* He resigns the Papal Dignity, *ib.*
- Berauld* of *Savoij*, II. 1.

I N D E X.

- Bernard del Carpio* his Exploits against the *Moors*, I. 41.
Bero King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He is banished, 199.
Bertuccio Valerio Doge of *Venice*, II, 169. He is successful against the *Turks*, *ib*.
Beurre Denis is murdered, II. 223.
Birger administers the Affairs of *Sweden*, II. 203. He seizes the *Folkungers*, *ib*. He founds *Stockholm*, *ib*.
Birger King of *Sweden*, II. 204. He is forced to abdicate the Crown, 205. He is restored to it, *ib*. He perfidiously seizes his Brothers, 206. He flies into *Denmark*, *ib*. His son is beheaded, *ib*.
Biron Count is made Duke of *Courland*, II. 340. He is appointed Regent of *Russia*, 341. He is banished, 342. He is recalled from Exile, 344.
Biron Marshal is beheaded, I. 268.
Boccanegra Captain General of *Genoa*, II. 19. He is deposed, *ib*.
Boemond the Son of *Guisard* reigns at *Antioch*, II. 125.
Bohemia is annexed to the *Austrian* Dominions, I. 353.
Boleslaus I. King of *Poland*, II. 290. His Wars are very successful, *ib*.
Boleslaus II. King of *Poland*, II. 291. He is successful in his Wars, *ib*. He is excommunicated, *ib*. The Bishop of *Cracaw* is beheaded by him, *ib*. He dies by his own hands, *ib*.
Boleslaus III. Prince of *Poland*, II. 291. He gains many Victories, *ib*. His Treatment of a Coward, *ib*. He divides his Dominions, 292.
Boleslaus IV. Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He frustrates the Attempts of the Emperor to restore his Brother, *ib*. He cedes *Silesia* to his Brother, *ib*. The *Prussians* rout him, *ib*.
Boleslaus V. Prince of *Poland*, II. 293. His Reign is greatly disturbed, *ib*.
Bonde Thord is murdered, II. 212.
Bombardment of *Algiers*, I. 280. *Brussels*, 88. *Dieppe*, 284. *Genoa*, 280.
Boniface a Monk greatly promotes papal Power, II. 81.
Boniface of *Savoy*, II. 2. He dies in Prison, *ib*.
Boniface IX. Pope, II. 93. He reduces *Rome* to Obedience, *ib*. He builds the Castle *St. Angelo*, *ib*.
Boris Gudnew Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. His Right is disputed by *Demetrius*, *ib*. He dies overwhelmed with Misfortunes, *ib*.
Bosnia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Bourbon Duke of goes over to the Emperor, I. 250. He takes *Francis I.* Prisoner, 251.
Bourbon Duke of becomes first Minister, I. 300. He is disgraced, *ib*.
Braganza Duke of is stabbed, I. 125.
Brandt General his Progress in *Prussia*, II. 310.
Brask Bishop his Intrigues in *Sweden*, II. 217.
Brazil Discovery thereof, I. 127. The *Dutch* make Settlements there, 325. It revolts from the *Dutch*, 326.

I N D E X.

- Britany* is annexed to the *French Crown*, II. 245.
Brynteson Magnus is beheaded, II. 220.
Britain the largest Island formerly known, I. 142. Ancient State thereof, *ib.* The *Romans* conquer it, *ib.* It is ravaged by the *Picts* and *Scots*, 143. The *Saxons* come into it, *ib.*
Britons they build a Wall across *Scotland*, I. 142. They settle in *Gaul*, 217.
Bruce Robert his honest Answer to *Edward I.* I. 156.
Buckingham Duke of is beheaded, I. 168.
Bulgaria is subdued by the *Turks*, I. 353.
Bullen Anna is married to *Henry VIII.* I. 172.
Burgundy Duke of is assassinated, I. 241.
Burgundy Duke of is reconciled to *Charles VIII.* I. 243.
Burgundy Duke of is slain, I. 245.
Burgundy is annexed to the *Austrian Dominions*, I. 216.
Burgundians they settle in *Gaul*, I. 216.
Bythynia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.

C

- Cadwallader* the last King of the old *British Race*, I. 143. He goes into *France*, *ib.*
Cæsar Borgia his Attempt in *Italy*, II. 93. He is forced to fly from *Rome*, 94.
Cambout Marquis of is slain, I. 286.
Campulus is banished from *Rome*, II. 63.
Canary Islands their Commodities, I. 114.
Candia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 368.
Canute II. King of Denmark, II. 179. He compleats the Conquest of *England*, *ib.*
Canute III. King of Denmark, II. 179.
Canute IV. King of Denmark, II. 179. He is slain in a Tumult, *ib.* He is canonized, *ib.*
Canute V. King of Denmark, II. 179. He is assassinated, *ib.*
Canute VI. King of Denmark, II. 180. He conquers *Estonia* and *Livonia*, *ib.*
Canute King of England, I. 145. His just Reproof of Parasites, 146.
Canute King of Sweden, II. 202. The *Danes* are routed by him, *ib.*
Caponi Peter his Courage saves *Florence*, II. 41.
Cappadocia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Caramania is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 355.
Cardinal Patron, II. 105.
Cardinals the College of, II. 104.
Carelia is annexed to *Sweden*, II. 328.
Carloman King of Germany, I. 345. He conquers *Italy* and takes the Title of Emperor, *ib.*
Carloman Brother of Pepin opposes the Pope, II. 56. He is confined in a Monastery, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Carlo Ruzzini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 173.
- Carlos Don* takes Possession of *Parma* and *Placentia*, I. 107. He becomes King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 143. He accedes to the Preliminaries of *Vienna*, *ib.*
- Caren* his Intrigues against the *Portuguese* at *Japan*, I. 139.
- Carrario* Lord of *Padua* brings the Republick of *Venice* into imminent Danger, II. 154. His unhappy End, 156.
- Carthage* its fine Situation for Trade, I. 9. The *Romans* ruin it, 10.
- Carthaginians* their mistaken Policy, I. 9.
- Casimir I.* King of *Poland*, II. 291. He flies and goes into a Monastery, *ib.* *Mosovia* is taken from the *Poles*, *ib.* He is recalled to the Throne. *ib.* He vanquishes *Maslas*, *ib.*
- Casimir II.* King of *Poland*, II. 292. He makes *Prussia* tributary, *ib.*
- Casimir III.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He subdues part of *Russia*, *ib.* He forces the Duke of *Mosovia* to do him Homage, *ib.*
- Casimir IV.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. Part of *Prussia* revolts from the *Teutonic Order* and submits to him, *ib.*
- Castile* its Counts are seized perfidiously, I. 42. It becomes independent of *Leon*, I. 43. Great Progress of its Counts, *ib.*
- Catalonians* their Sufferings, I. 98.
- Catherine Alexiowna* Empress of *Russia*, II. 338. A Conspiracy against her, *ib.*
- Catherine Cornaro* is adopted by the State of *Venice*, II. 157.
- Catherine de Medicis* obtains the Regency of *France*, I. 257.
- Catolick Majesty* origin of this Title, I. 72.
- Catinus* Marshal commands in *Italy*, II. 10.
- Charlemain* King of *France*, I. 225. He is crowned King of *Lombardy*, *ib.* He subdues Part of *Spain*, 226. He completes the Conquest of *Germany*, *ib.* He goes to the Assistance of the Pope, II. 60. He confirms his Father's Grant to the Holy See, 61. He is proclaimed Emperor, *ib.* His Descendants lose the Imperial Dignity, I. 346.
- Charles II.* King of *France*, I. 227. He obtains the Imperial Dignity, *ib.*
- Charles III.* King of *France*, I. 228. Several Governors throw off their Obedience to him, *ib.* He dies in Prison, *ib.*
- Charles IV.* King of *France*, I. 234.
- Charles V.* King of *France*, I. 238. He takes much from the *English*, *ib.* The Emperor pays him a Visit, 239.
- Charles VI.* King of *France*, I. 239. His Expedition to *Naples* fails, *ib.* His Subjects take Arms against him, *ib.* He loses his Senses, 240. The *English* attack him, *ib.* His Queen is banished, 241. The Dauphin his Son is excluded, *ib.*
- Charles VII.* King of *France*, I. 242. The *English* bring him into great Straits, *ib.* He concludes a Truce with the *English*, 243. His Forces are routed at *Basil*, *ib.* He gains much from *English*, 244. He dies of Grief, *ib.*

Charles

I N D E X,

- Charles VIII.** King of France, I. 245. He annexes *Bretany* to the Crown, *ib.* He cedes the *Roussillon* to Spain, 246. He conquers *Naples* but loses it again, *ib.*
- Charles IX.** King of France, I. 245. His Reign is all along disturbed by civil War, *ib.*
- Charles I.** Emperor of Germany, see *Charlemain.*
- Charles II.** Emperor of Germany, see *Carloman.*
- Charles III.** Emperor of Germany, I. 346. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Charles IV.** Emperor of Germany, I. 355. He causes his Rival to be poisoned, *ib.* He annexes *Silesia* to *Bohemia*, *ib.* He publishes the *Golden Bull*, *ib.* He sells all that belonged to the Empire in *Italy*, *ib.*
- Charles V.** Emperor of Germany, I. 356. He causes *Luther* to be outlawed, 357. He attacks the Protestants, *ib.* He suppresses several Insurrections, *ib.* The *Turks* are repulsed by him, *ib.* His Intrigues in *Genoa*, II. 25. He resigns the Imperial Dignity, I. 358.
- Charles VI.** Emperor of Germany, see *Charles III.* of Spain.
- Charles I.** King of Great-Britain, I. 181. He makes Peace with France and Spain, *ib.* Mistakes in his Education, *ib.* He raises Money without a Parliament, 182. He oppresses the Puritans, 183. He endeavours to establish Episcopacy in *Scotland*, *ib.* He revokes Grants there, *ib.* He marches against the *Scotch*, 184. He makes large Concessions, 185. He seizes six Commoners, *ib.* It comes to a Rupture between him and the Parliament, 186. He is delivered by the *Scotch* to the *English*, *ib.* He is beheaded, 188.
- Charles II.** King of Great-Britain, I. 190. He is proclaimed in *Scotland*, 188. Being routed at *Worcester* he flies to France, *ib.* He is restored, 190. He attacks the *Hollanders*, *ib.* He is forced to make Peace with them, *ib.* He refuses to pass the *Exclusion Bill*, 191. The Duke of *Monmouth* is banished by him, *ib.*
- Charles I.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 132. He defeats *Mainfroy*, *ib.* He routs *Conradin*, *ib.*
- Charles II.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 132. His Life is spared in an extraordinary Manner, *ib.* *Sicily* is taken from him, 133.
- Charles III.** King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 137. He obtains the Surname of Peace-maker, *ib.* He is crowned King of *Hungary*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Charles I.** King of Spain, I. 72. He succeeds to the Imperial Dignity, *ib.* He takes *Francis I.* Prisoner, 73. He subdues the *Milanese*, *ib.* He shuts the Pope up in the Castle *St. Angelo*, *ib.* He restores *Mulay Hassan* King of *Tunis*, 74. He penetrates into France, 75. He resigns the Crown, 76.
- Charles II.** King of Spain, I. 85. He is attacked by the *French*, 86. He joins against France, 87. He is disgusted at the Partition Treaty, 88. He appoints the Duke of *Anjou* to succeed him, *ib.*

Charles

I N D E X.

- Charles III.** King of *Spain*, I. 91. He arrives in *Portugal*, *ib.* Several Powers declare for him, *ib.* He is proclaimed at *Saragossa*, 94. He gains Ground in *Italy*, 95. The Pope acknowledges him, 96. *Naples* submits to him, *ib.* *Sardinia* is subdued for him, *ib.* He is advanced to the Imperial Dignity, 97. He leaves *Spain*, *ib.* *Great-Britain* grows cool to his Interest, 98. He continues the War alone, 380. He exchanges *Sardinia* for *Sicily*, 384. He suspends the *Ostend* Company, 385. He institutes the *Pragmatick Sanction*, *ib.* He supports the Election of *Augustus II.* to the *Polish* Throne, 387. *France*, *Spain* and *Sardinia* unite against him, *ib.* His War with the *Turks* costs him dear, 388. His Daughter the *Archduchess* is attacked on all Sides, 389.
- Charles** King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He is put to Death, *ib.*
- Charles VIII.** King of *Sweden*, II. 212. He is made Regent, 211. He is chosen King, 212. He is driven out of the Kingdom, 213. He is restored, *ib.* He is forced to resign the Throne, *ib.* He is again restored, 214.
- Charles IX.** King of *Sweden*, II. 230. He refuses to admit the *Catholick* Religion into his *Dutchy of Sundermania*, 225. He is made Regent, 228. He repulses the Forces of *Sigismund*, *ib.* He is raised to the Throne, 230. The *Poles* worst him, *ib.* His Son *Gustavus Adolphus* repulses the *Danes*, *ib.*
- Charles X.** King of *Sweden*, II. 246. He revokes the Grants of his Predecessors, *ib.* He attacks *Poland*, *ib.* His surprizing Progress against the *Danes*, 247.
- Charles XI.** King of *Sweden*, II. 247. He attacks *Brandenburg*, 248. He establishes the Grand Commission, *ib.* He raises the Value of Coin, *ib.* He supports the Duke of *Holstein*, 249.
- Charles XII.** King of *Sweden*, II. 249. *Denmark*, *Poland* and *Russia* unite against him, *ib.* He routs the *Russians*, 250. He deposes *Augustus* and causes *Stanislans* to be elected King of *Poland*, 251. His Cruelty to Count *Paskul*, 253. He penetrates into *Russia*, 255. He retreats into *Turky*, *ib.* The Allies take much from him, 256. He returns from *Turky*, 257. He is killed before *Frederickshal*, 258.
- Charles I.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Charles II.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Charles III.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 5. His Dominions being overrun by the *French* he dies of Grief, *ib.*
- Carolo Contarini** Doge of *Venice*, II. 169.
- Charles Emanuel I.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 6. His Insult upon *Henry III.* is revenged, *ib.* His Attempt on *Geneva* fails, *ib.* He attacks *Montferrat*, 7. The *Genoese* are attacked by him, *ib.* His Dominions are ravaged, *ib.* His unhappy End, 8.
- Charles Emanuel II.** Duke of *Savoy*, II. 8. He cuts a Passage thro' Mount *Viso*, 9. A Fright kills him, *ib.*
- Charles Emanuel III.** King of *Sardinia*, II. 13. He joins in a War against the Emperor, 14.
- Charnock** and others are executed, I. 194.

I N D E X.

- Charter of Forests*, I. 154. The great one, *ib.*
- Childerick King of the Franks*, I. 219. He flies into *Germany*, *ib.* He is recalled, *ib.* He routs the *Saxons*, *ib.* He subduces the *Alans*, *ib.*
- Childerick King of the Visigoths*, I. 30.
- Cbio* is taken by the *Turks*, II. 171.
- Christian I. King of Denmark*, II. 183. He forces the *Swedes* to acknowledge him but they soon revolt, *ib.*
- Christian II. King of Denmark*, II. 184. He is proclaimed in *Sweden*, *ib.* The *Swedes* drive him from thence, *ib.* He flies into the *Netherlands*, *ib.* He dies in Prison, 185.
- Christian III. King of Denmark*, II. 185. He prevails over *Christian II.* and his Adherents, *ib.*
- Christian IV. King of Denmark*, II. 185. He joins with the Protestants in *Germany*, 186. He cedes much to *Sweden*, *ib.*
- Christian V. King of Denmark*, II. 187. *Sweden* is attacked by him, 188. He invades *Holstein*, *ib.* He attacks *Hamburg*, *ib.* The Quarrel with *Holstein* is revived by him, 189.
- Christian VI. King of Denmark*, II. 191. A Misunderstanding between him and *Hamburg*, *ib.* He encourages Commerce, 192. He lays Claim to *Steinborst*, *ib.*
- Christian I. King of Sweden*, II. 213.
- Christian II. King of Sweden*, II. 216. A Rebellion against him, *ib.* He flies into the *Netherlands*, 217.
- Christiana Queen of Sweden*, II. 240. She continues the War in *Germany*, *ib.* Most of her Allies desert her, 241. She attacks *Denmark*, 244. The Crown is resigned by her, 206.
- Christopher I. King of Denmark*, II. 180. Being excommunicated he is poisoned with the Host, *ib.*
- Christopher II. King of Denmark*, II. 181. He is driven out of the Kingdom, *ib.* He is mortally wounded, *ib.*
- Christopher III. King of Denmark*, II. 183.
- Christopher King of Sweden*, II. 212.
- Christopbus* deposes the Pope, II. 58. He is disgraced, 59. His Friends are recalled from Exile, *ib.*
- Christophoro Moro Doge of Venice*, II. 157. The *Turks* take much from him, *ib.*
- Cid* his Exploits against the *Moors*, I. 51.
- Cinq-Mars* conspires against Cardinal *Richelieu*, I. 272. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Clarence Duke of* is murdered, I. 167.
- Clement James* stabs *Henry III.* I. 264.
- Clement II. Pope*, II. 65.
- Clodion King of the Franks*, I. 217. He is driven out of *Gaul*, *ib.* He reenters it, *ib.*
- Clothaire II. King of France*, I. 124.
- Clovis King of France*, I. 220. He puts an End to the *Roman Power in Gaul*, *ib.* Regulations in the Government made by him,

I N D E X.

- him, *ib.* He embraces Christianity, 221. He is successful against the *Germans*, *ib.* He obtains the Name of eldest Son of the Church, *ib.* The *Britons* are subdued by him, 222. He conquers *Burgundy*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Visigoths*, *ib.* He subdues many petty States, 223.
- Cobham* Lord suffers Death, I. 180.
- Cologne* Elector of is put under the Ban of the Empire, I. 374.
- Compromis* an Association of the *Netherlanders* so called, I. 314.
- Conde* Prince of joins with the *Huguenots*, I. 258. He is killed, 260.
- Conde* Prince of is confined by Cardinal *Maximilien*, I. 274. He goes over to the *Spaniards*, 275.
- Conferences* at *Gertrudenberg*, I. 293. *Poissy*, 285.
- Congress* of *Cambray*, I. 300. *Courtray*, 86. *Soissons*, 301.
- Conrad* I. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 346.
- Conrad* II. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 348. His Reign is disturbed by Civil War, *ib.* He annexes *Burgundy* and *Arles* to the Empire, *ib.* He is successful against the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Conrad* III. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 350. He overcomes *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*, *ib.* His Expedition to *Palestine* is unsuccessful, *ib.*
- Conrad* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 131. He quarrels with the *Pope*, *ib.*
- Conrad* Duke of *Masovia* his Country is ravaged, II. 271. He calls the *Knights* of the *Teutonic Order* to his Assistance, *ib.*
- Conradin* Duke of *Snabia* is beheaded at *Naples*, II. 132.
- Constance* of *Sicily* Prophecy concerning her, II. 128.
- Constant* surprizes and slays his Brother *Constantine*, II. 49. He is supplanted by *Magnencius*, *ib.*
- Constantine* is slain by *Constant*, II. 49.
- Constantine* the Great divides the Empire, II. 48. He stops the Persecution of the *Christians*, *ib.*
- Constantinople* is made the Imperial Residence, I. 19. Divisions in the Imperial Family there, 149. It is taken by the *Turks*, II. 356.
- Constantinus* overcomes *Magnencius*, II. 49.
- Constitution* a military one is bad, I. 11.
- Constitution* *Unigenitus*, I. 298.
- Conti* Prince of arrives at *Dantzick*, II. 309. He is proclaimed King of *Poland*, *ib.* He returns to *France*, 311.
- Convention* betwixt *Great-Britain* and *Spain*, I. 208.
- Copenhagen* is burnt, II. 101.
- Corfeau* Bell is ordered to be rung in *England*, I. 148.
- Corfu* is saved by General *Schulemburg*, II. 172.
- Corinth* the Wall at its *Isthmus* is demolished, II. 355.
- Corfica* is taken from the *Saracens* by the *Genoise*, II. 17. Some Imperial Troops are sent to quell an Insurrection in this Island, 29. A Treaty is concluded with the *Malecontents*, 30. They fly to Arms again, 31. They proclaim *Theodore*, 32. They are reduced to Obedience by the *French*, 35.

I. N. D. E. X.

- Cosmo* Lord of *Florence*, II. 38. He is banished, *ib.* The People invite him back, *ib.* He is called *Father of his Country*, 39.
- Cosmo* I. Duke of *Florence*, II. 43. He enlarges his Dominions, *ib.* He loses both his Sons in one Day, *ib.* He is made Grand Duke, *ib.*
- Cosmo* II. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 44. He succours the Duke of *Mantua*, *ib.* The Emperor is assisted by him, *ib.*
- Cosmo* III. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 45.
- Cossacks they are civilized, II. 296. Their Exploits against the *Turks*, *ib.* A Quarrel betwixt them and the *Poles*, 301.
- Covenant or Directory is confirmed by the *Scotch* Parliament, I. 184.
- Courland* is erected into a Dutchy, II. 295.
- Cracus* Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. He founds *Cracow*, *ib.* His Son assassinates him, *ib.*
- Crescence the Consul is executed at *Rome*, I. 348.
- Cromwell* *Oliver* brings the Army into an Association against the Parliament, I. 187. He is successful against the *Scots*, *ib.* He suppresses the Royalists in *Ireland*, 188. He is made Protector, *ib.* He forces the *Hollanders* into his Terms, 189. *Jamaica* is conquered by him, *ib.* His Friendship is sought by divers Powers, *ib.* Some Account of his Conduct, *ib.*
- Cromwell* *Richard* is removed from the Protectorship, I. 190.
- Crusades are first set on foot, I. 230. Reflections upon them, *ib.*
- Cyprus* is ceded to the *Turks*, II. 163.
- Cyrus* his wise Institutions, I. 4.
- Czarowitz* Son of *Peter* the Great is condemned for conspiring against his Father, II. 336.

D.

- Dagobert* King of *France*, I. 224.
- Dalmatius* is put to Death, II. 48.
- Damader* King of *Sweden*, II. 198. His Subjects sacrifice him, *ib.*
- Damascus* II. Pope, II. 65.
- Danes* they settle in *England*, I. 141. Manners of them, II. 193.
- Darius* his imprudent Conduct, I. 7.
- Darnley* Lord marries *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, I. 177. He stabs *David* *Ritz*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- David* King of *Scotland* is taken Prisoner, I. 159.
- Dauphin* why the eldest Son of *France* is so called, I. 236.
- Dauphins* three die within a very short Time, I. 291.
- D'Aucne* Marshal suffers Death, I. 269.
- D'Aylva* Duke conquers *Portugal*, I. 128. His cruelty in the *Netherlands*, 316.
- De Groy* Duke saves *Buda* from the *Turks*, II. 371.
- D'Egmont* Count is beheaded, I. 315.
- Defender of the Faith* Origin of this Title, I. 172.

De

I N D E X:

- De Foix Gaffon* is slain, II. 161.
De Hare Don John is beheaded, I. 65.
De la Marck Count takes *Brill*, I. 315.
De Wis Cornelius and *John* are torn to Pieces, I. 329.
Demetrius the *Poles* support his Claim to *Russia*, II. 297. He is proclaimed but the *Russians* soon throw off all Allegiance to him, 299.
Denboff Count is slain, I. 370.
Denis King of *Portugal*, I. 222. He founds many magnificent Buildings, *ib.*
Denmark a very ancient Kingdom, II. 178. Great Confusion in it, 179. An Interregnum there, 181. Its Sovereignty is made absolute, 187. Manners of its Inhabitants, 193. Its Soil 194. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
Depredations of the *Spaniards* upon *British* Ships, I. 106.
Derwentwater Earl of is beheaded, I. 202.
Devolution Right of a Custom in *Brabant*, I. 86.
Didier King of *Lombardy*, II. 58. He seizes some Places in the *Exercate*, *ib.* He stirs up an Insurrection against *Pepin*, *ib.* He deposes the Pope, *ib.* He lays Siege to *Rome*, 59. He is sent Prisoner into *France*, 61.
Dish a famous one of *Emerald* in *Genoa*, II. 17.
Dolgbrucki's executed, II. 340.
Dominico Monogario Doge of *Venice*, II. 145.
Dominico Cantarino Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He is successful against *Guiscard*, *ib.*
Dominico Cantarini Doge of *Venice*, II. 169. He loses *Candia*, *ib.*
Dominico Fiabenco Doge of *Venice*, II. 147.
Dominico Michiele Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He assists *Baldwin* King of *Jerusalem*, *ib.* He takes much from the *Eastern* Empire, *ib.*
Dominico Morisfni Doge of *Venice*, II. 148.
Dominico Silvio Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He is deposed, *ib.*
Doria his brave and disinterested Conduct, II. 25. His Artifice to bring *Venice* into a War, 161.
Doxat General is beheaded, II. 377.
Dregon Count of *Penille*, II. 123. He supports himself against the *Greeks*, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

E.

- E**AST-Indies the Way to them by Sea is discovered, I. 226.
Ecclesiastick Court one is erected in the *Netherlands*, I. 312.
Eclipse a remarkable one, I. 30. Another, I. 93.
Eckius disputes at *Baden*, I. 404.
Edict of *Spire* the *Lutheran* Princes protest against it, I. 357.
Edmund Ironside King of *England*, I. 145. *Canute* shares the Kingdom with him, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Edward the Confessor King of England*, I. 146. He introduces the Custom of Touching for the Evil, *ib.*
- Edward I. King of England*, I. 155. He subdues the Principality of *Wales*, *ib.* He makes the King of *Scotland* Prisoner, 156.
- Edward II. of England*, I. 157. The *Scotch* are too many for him, *ib.* He defeats the Barons, *ib.* He is murdered in Prison, *ib.*
- Edward III. King of England*, I. 157. He is successful against the *Scotch*, 158. He makes great Progress in *France*, *ib.* He quits all Pretensions to the *French* Crown, 159. He loses much in *France*, 160.
- Edward IV. King of England*, I. 166. He defeats *Henry* his Rival, *ib.* The Earl of *Warwick* makes him Prisoner, *ib.* He routs *Warwick*, *ib.*
- Edward V. King of England*, I. 167. He is murdered in the Tower, 168.
- Edward VI. King of England*, I. 174. He establishes the Protestant Religion, *ib.* *Jane Gray* is appointed to succeed him, *ib.*
- Edward Son of Edward III. of England* signalizes himself in *France*, I. 159. He takes *John* of *France* Prisoner, *ib.* He is made Duke of *Guyenne*, *ib.* He assists *Peter* of *Castile*, *ib.*
- Edward King of Portugal*, I. 124. He dies of a Plague given him by a Letter, *ib.*
- Edward of Savoy* II. 3.
- Egbert King of England*, I. 144. All the *Saxons* Kingdoms are united under him, *ib.*
- Egbert Landgrave of Thuring* is slain, I. 348.
- Egica King of the Visigoths*, I. 32.
- Egypt* is annexed to the *Persian* Empire, I. 4. The *Romans* subdue it, 9. It is annexed to the *Turkish* Empire, II. 360.
- Elizabeth Empress of Russia*, II. 343. She confines the Princes of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle* and her Family, *ib.* She recalls the Duke of *Courland* from Exile, 344. She banishes the Counts *Osterman* and *Munich*, *ib.* *Finland* is conquered by her Troops, 346.
- Elizabeth Queen of England*, I. 176. She refuses to marry *Philip* of *Spain*, *ib.* She reestablishes the Protestant Religion, *ib.* The *Puritans* and *Papists* are kept under by her, *ib.* She makes *Mary* Queen of *Scots* Prisoner, 178. She assists the Protestants in *France*, *ib.* She supports the United Provinces, *ib.* She plays off her Lovers artfully, 179. Trade and Manufactures flourish under her, *ib.* She maintains her Superiority at Sea, *ib.*
- Emanuel King of Portugal*, I. 125. The Emperor *Maximilian* claims his Crown, *ib.* He banishes the *Moors* and *Jews*, 126. He makes great Conquests in the *East-Indies*, *ib.* He makes Settlements on the *African* Coast, *ib.* He does the same in *Brazil*, 127.
- Emanuel Philibert Duke of Savoy*, II. 5. He commands at the Battle of *St. Quintin*, *ib.* His Dominions are restored to him, 6. The *Vand-se* rebel against him, *ib.*

Engelbrecht

I N D E X.

- Engelbrecht Engelbrechtson* heads the *Dalecarlians*, II. 111. He is
 assassinated, *ib.*
- England* is so called from the *Angles*, I. 143. Its seven Kingdoms
 are united under *Egbert*, 144. Its Commons are admitted to
 Parliament, 150. Its Barons take up Arms against *John*, 154.
 They do the same against *Henry III.* 155. It begins to trade
 to the *East-Indies*, 179. It plants Colonies in the *West-Indies*,
 181. *Scotland* is united to it, 195. See *Great-Britain*.
- English* Managers of them, I. 299.
- Eponindar* takes *Thebes* famous, I. 6.
- Erosmus* paves the Way for the Reformation, II. 96.
- Eric I.* King of *Denmark*, II. 178.
- Eric II.* King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He dies on a Pilgrimage, *ib.*
- Eric V.* King of *Denmark*, II. 180. He is slain in a Quarrel with
 his Brothers, *ib.*
- Eric VI.* King of *Denmark*, II. 181. The Bishop disturbs his
 Reign, *ib.* He is murdered by his own Subjects, *ib.*
- Eric VII.* King of *Denmark*, II. 181.
- Eric VIII.* King of *Denmark*, II. 182. He is deprived of his
 Dominions, *ib.*
- Eric I.* King of *Sweden*, II. 199.
- Eric II.* King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He greatly extends his Do-
 minions, *ib.*
- Eric III.* King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He reforms the Laws, *ib.* He
 is slain, *ib.*
- Eric IV.* King of *Sweden*, II. 202.
- Eric V.* King of *Sweden*, II. 202. He overcomes the *Falkenbergers*,
 203. He suppresses a Rebellion in *Finland*, *ib.*
- Eric XII.* King of *Sweden*, 210. The *Dalecarlians* rebel against
 him, 211. The Senate renounces all Allegiance to him, *ib.*
- Eric XIV.* King of *Sweden*, II. 221. He gives over his Voyage
 to *England*, 222. He offers Marriage to several Princesses, *ib.*
 He throws his Brother *John* into Prison, *ib.* The House of
Sture suffer much from him, *ib.* The *Danes* are repulsed by
 him, 223. He lays a Scheme for cutting off his Brothers, *ib.*
 They depose him, *ib.*
- Eric Alrfon* Regent of *Sweden*, II. 213.
- Eric Puck* defeats *Charles Canutson*, II. 211. He is beheaded,
ib.
- Erizzo Paul* is cleft asunder with a Scimitar, II. 157.
- Ervice* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 32.
- Essex* Earl of takes *Cadix*, I. 179. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Essex* Earl of is found dead in the Tower, I. 191.
- Ethelred II.* of *England*, I. 144. He flies into *Normandy*, 145.
 He returns from thence, *ib.*
- Eude* King of *France*, I. 228.
- Eugene* Prince his Progress in *Italy*, I. 98. He signalizes him-
 self against the *Turks*, 366. His Progress in *Hungary*, 383.

I N D E X.

- Eurick** King of the *Visgoths*, I. 23. He drives the *Romans* out of *Spain*, *ib.*
Exclusion Bill in *England* passes both houses, I. 191.
Exercise is conquered by the *Lombards*, II. 54. It is given to the *Pope*, 58.

F.

- F. Avila** King of *Asturia*, I. 36. He is killed by a *Bear*, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 358. He annexes *Hungary* and *Bohemia* to the *Austrian* Dominions, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 360. He ravages the *Palatinate*, 361. His *Troops* overrun lower *Saxony*, *ib.* He is robbed of all his *Conquests* by *Gustavus Adolphus*, *ib.* He makes a separate *Peace* with *Saxony*, 362.
Ferdinand III. Emperor of *Germany*, I. 363.
Ferdinand I. King of *Naples*, II. 139. He prevails against *Jabu* Duke of *Arjen*, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. King of *Naples*, II. 139. *Charles VIII.* of *France* deprives him of his *Dominions*, *ib.* He is restored to them, *ib.*
Ferdinand King of *Portugal*, I. 122. He lays claim to *Castile*, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. King of *Castile*, I. 49. He succeeds to *Leon*, *ib.* He gains *Advantages* over the *Moors*, *ib.* He takes the *Title* of Emperor, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. King of *Castile*, I. 61. He succeeds to *Leon*, *ib.* His *Progress* in *Moorish Spain*, *ib.*
Ferdinand III. King of *Castile*, I. 63. His *Right* to the *Crown* is disputed; *ib.* A *cruel Sentence* of his, 64. He dies in an *uncommon Manner*, *ib.*
Ferdinand IV. King of *Castile*, I. 69. *Jane* Daughter of *Henry* disputes his *Right* to *Castile*, *ib.* He establishes the *Inquisition*, *ib.* He succeeds to *Aragon*, 70. He puts an *End* to the *Moorish Power*, *ib.* He becomes *Master* of *Naples*, 71. He treats *Gonsalvo* the *Great Captain* ill, *ib.* *Naxarre* is conquered by him, *ib.* His *Son Philip* reigns in *Castile*, *ib.* He is restored to *Castile*, *ib.* He obtains the *Surname* of *Carbolick*, 72. *Tripoli* is taken by him, *ib.*
Ferdinand I. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 44. He throws off the *Yoke* of *Spain*, *ib.* He assists *Henry IV.* of *France*, *ib.*
Ferdinand II. Grand Duke of *Tuscany*, II. 45. He supports *Edward* Duke of *Parma*, *ib.* He assists the *Frentians*, *ib.*
F. E. R. T. Origin of this *Motto*, II. 3.
Fier-a-bras signalizes himself in *Sicily*, II. 122. He becomes *Master* of the *Pomille*, *ib.* The *Greeks* are driven by him from thence, *ib.*
Fisqus a *Conspiracy* headed by him, II. 25.
Finland is annexed to *Sweden*, II. 299. It is conquered by the *Russians*, II. 346.
Fisher Bishop of *Rocheſter* is beheaded, I. 172.
Flatterers are prudently reprov'd, I. 146.

I N D E X.

- Flavius Claudiusphat* King of the *Visigoths*, I. 30.
Flavius Recessinte King of the *Visigoths*, I. 30. The *Laws* are reformed by him, *ib.*
Fleury Cardinal becomes *Prime Minister* in *France*, I. 300.
Florence the *House of Medicis* is banished from thence, II. 40. The *Designs* of *Charles VIII.* of *France* thereupon are baffled by a single *Man*, 41. The *House of Medicis* is restored, *ib.* Being forced to fly again it is a second Time restored by *Charlequint*, *ib.* It is made a *Grand Dorchy*, 34.
Florida the *Rape* of her is followed with a *Revolution*, I. 34.
Pohluogots are beheaded, II. 203. Their *Power* in *Sweden* is quite broken, 204.
Fore de Sobrabe, I. 40.
France when first so called, I. 220. It is divided into several *Kingdoms*, 223. *Dispute* betwixt its *Ambassadors* and the *Court of Lisbon*, 233. Its *Kings* lose all their *Authority*, 224. Many *independent Sovereignties* therein, 229. It is ravaged by the *English*, 237. *Origin* of its *Claim* to *Milan*, 240. The *Jesuits* are banished from this *Kingdom*, 267. *Contest* betwixt its *Ambassador* and that of *Spain*, 276. It is well peopled, 304. *Manners* of its *Inhabitants*, *ib.* Its *Strength*, 305. Its *Soil*, *ib.* Its *Commodities*, *ib.* Its *Settlements*, 306. Its *Government*, *ib.* Its *Interest* with *Regard* to other *States*, 307.
Francis I. King of *France*, I. 249. He recovers the *Milanese*, 250. He is taken *Prisoner* by the *Spaniards*, 251. He enters into an *Alliance* against *Spain*, *ib.*
Francis II. King of *France*, I. 256.
Francis Grand Duke of Tuscany, II. 144. He is poisoned, *ib.*
Francis Stephen Grand Duke of Tuscany, II. 46.
Francis Duke of Savoy, II. 8.
Francisco Dandolo Doge of Venice, II. 152.
Francisco Foscari Doge of Venice, II. 156. He attacks *Rothom*, *ib.* He assists *Francis Sforça*, *ib.* The *Turks* fall upon him, 157. He is deposed, *ib.*
Francisco Contarini Doge of Venice, II. 167.
Francisco Donato Doge of Venice, II. 162.
Francisco Brinno Doge of Venice, II. 168. He joins with *Edward Duke of Parma* against the *Pope*, *ib.*
Francis Fregosa Doge of Genoa, II. 24.
Francisco Melino Doge of Fenice, II. 168. The *Turks* attack him, *ib.*
Francisco Morosini Doge of Venice, II. 170. He signifies himself against the *Turks*, *ib.* A *Statue* is erected in *Honour* of him, *ib.*
Francisco Vettori Doge of Fenice, II. 162. He is called *Princeps pacis*, *ib.*
Franks *Origin* of this *Name*, I. 217. They enter into a *League* of *Defence*, *ib.* They are driven out of *Gaul* by the *Romans*, *ib.* They reenter and extend themselves in *Gaul*, *ib.*

Frederick

I N D E X.

- Frederick I. King of Denmark, II. 185. He throws Christian his Rival into Prison, ib.*
- Frederick II. King of Denmark, II. 185. He attacks Sweden, ib.*
- Frederick III. King of Denmark, II. 186. His War with Sweden costs him dear, ib.*
- Frederick IV. King of Denmark, II. 189. He is attacked in his Capital, ib. He asserts his Right to Lubeck, 190. He attacks the Swedes, ib.*
- Frederick I. Emperor of Germany, I. 351. He loses all Authority in Italy, ib. He is dethroned in Palestine, ib.*
- Frederick II. Emperor of Germany, I. 352. He recovers Jerusalem from the Infidels, ib. He is excommunicated and deposed, ib. He opposes the Pope's ambitious Designs, ib.*
- Frederick III. Emperor of Germany, I. 356. He engages in a War with Hungary, ib.*
- Frederick King of Naples, II. 139. The French and Spaniards subdue Naples, ib. He dies a Prisoner in France, 140.*
- Frederick King of the Two Sicilies, II. 130. He succeeds to the Empire, ib.*
- Frederick I. King of Sicily, II. 133.*
- Frederick II. King of Sicily, II. 136.*
- Frederick King of Sweden, II. 259. He signs a Capitulation, ib. He succeeds to the Landgraviate of Hesse, 262. The Laws are reformed by him, 263. He after resigning the Crown re-assumes it, ib. He attacks Russia, 264.*
- Frederick Duke of Brunswick being elected Emperor is assassinated in his Way to be crowned, I. 356.*
- Frederick Elector Palatine accepts the Crown of Bohemia, I. 360. His Affairs are quite ruined, 361.*
- Frederick Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, II. 277. He throws off all Subjection to Poland, ib.*
- Frederick Henry Prince of Orange Stadtholder, I. 325. He defeats Papenstin, ib.*
- Frederick Duke of Prussia, II. 282. He joins in the first Grand Alliance against France, ib. He takes the Title of King, ib. He comes into the second Grand Alliance, 283. He claims the Succession of Orange, ib.*
- Frederick William Duke of Prussia, II. 280. Some Bishopricks in Germany are secularized for him, ib. He assists Charles Gustavus, ib. Prussia is declared independent of Poland, 281. The Swedes are repulsed by him, ib.*
- Frederick I. King of Prussia, II. 282. He joins in a War against France, 283. He claims the Dominions of the House of Orange, ib.*
- Frederick II. King of Prussia, II. 284. He assists in driving the Swedes from Pomerania, ib. His prudent and generous Conduct in Prussia, ib.*
- Frederick III. King of Prussia, II. 284. He attacks Silesia, ib. French Manners of them, I. 304.*
- Froila King of Asturia, I. 37. He causes his Brother to be assassinated, ib. He is himself murdered, ib.*

I N D E X.

- Froila I.* King of *Leon*, I. 37.
Froila II. King of *Leon*, I. 42.
Froths III. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He becomes Master of
 several other Kingdoms, *ib.* He subdues the *Fendals*, *ib.*
Froths King of *Sweden*, II. 198.

G.

- Gabel* is first imposed in *France*, I. 236.
Galatia is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 352.
Galla Peter disputes in *Sweden*, II. 218.
Galius is deposed by *Constantius*, II. 49.
Garcia King of *Asturia*, I. 42.
Garcias Sanebo Count of *Castile* his untimely End, I. 47.
Gaul its ancient State, I. 216. The *Romans* conquer it, *ib.* The
 barbarous Nations settle therein, *ib.*
Generals it is dangerous to invest them with too much Power, I. 18.
Genova an Attempt to surprize this City, II. 6.
Genoa its ancient State, II. 17. It is sacked by the *Lombards*, *ib.*
 It is governed by Counts, *ib.* It throws off Subjection to these,
ib. Its naval Strength becomes considerable, *ib.* It assists *Bald-*
win King of *Jerusalem*, *ib.* It engages in a War with the *Pisans*,
 18. It sides with the Pope, *ib.* It has Wars with *France* and
Pisa, 19. Its Sovereignty is conferred upon the King of *Naples*,
 20. It submits to the Duke of *Milan*, *ib.* It becomes Mistress
 of *Leffos*, *ib.* It engages in Wars with *Cyprus* and *Venice*,
 21. It submits to *France*, 22. It submits to *Manfred*, *ib.*
 Its Liberty is purchased, *ib.* It is rent in Pieces by the Factions
 of *Guelphs* and *Giblines*, *ib.* It submits to *Milan*, *ib.* It sub-
 mits again to *France*, 23. It recovers its Liberty, *ib.* It en-
 gages in a War with *Florence*, *ib.* It submits again to *Milan*, *ib.*
 It is conquered by *France*, *ib.* It drives out the *French* and
 chooses a Duke, 24. It is taken by the *Spaniards*, *ib.* *Doria*
 restores its Liberty, *ib.* *Fisque* conspires against the *Doria*, 25.
 It seizes *Final*, 26. Divisions amongst its Nobility, *ib.* *France*
 and *Savoy* attack it, *ib.* It is bombarded by the *French*, 27.
 It buys *Final* of the Emperor, 28. Its Dominions, 35. Man-
 ners of its People, *ib.* Its Government, 36. Its Revenue
 and Trade, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
Gnoso Manners of them, II. 36.
George I. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 200. He suppresses a Rebellion,
 202. He destroys a *Spanish* Fleet, 203. He sends a Fleet upon
 the *Spanish* Coast, 205.
George II. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 206. He carries *Don Carlos*
into Italy, 207. He sends a Fleet to *Lisbon*, 208. He engages
 in a War with *Spain*, *ib.*
George Prince of *Darmstadt* is killed, I. 92.
George, *Ragotski* Prince of *Transylvania* is slain, II. 258.
George William Duke of *Prussia*, II. 280. He assists the *Prote-*
stants in *Germany*, *ib.*

German

I N D E X

- Germany* Manners of them, II. 389
Germany ancient State thereof, I. 345. It is annexed to the Empire of the *Franks*, *ib.* It becomes independent of *France*, *ib.* Its Princes throw off Subjection to the Emperor, 346. It is miserably torn to Pieces, 351. Interregnum there, 353. Manners of its People, 389. Its Soil, 390. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its different Princes, *ib.* Its Constitution, 391. Inconveniencies which this is subject to, 392. Union amongst its Members not to be expected, 394. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 395.
- Gesalick* King of the *Visigothi*, I. 23. He is slain, 24.
- Gibelines* a Faction in *Italy*, I. 352.
- Gibraltar* taken by the Allies, I. 52. Its Restitution is demanded, 204. It is besieged, 206.
- Gilon* the Roman Governor is chosen King of the *Franks*, I. 219. They soon throw off their Allegiance to him, *ib.*
- Giovaani Bembo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 165. He puts an End to the Piracies of the *Uscques*, 166.
- Giovaani Cornaro I.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 168. He assists *Charles Duke of Nevers*, *ib.*
- Giovaanni Cornaro II.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 172. The *Turks* fall upon him, *ib.*
- Giovanni Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 151. Ducats are first coined by him, *ib.*
- Giovanni Delpino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Giovanni Galbani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is banished, *ib.*
- Giovanni Gradensis* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Giovanni Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158. He forces *Hercules* of *Ferrara* to his Terms, *ib.*
- Giovanni Partecipatio I.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Giovanni Partecipatio II.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 146.
- Giovanni Pisano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 169.
- Giovanni Suranzo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 152. He makes Conquest in *Dalmatia*, *ib.*
- Giustiniano Partecipatio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145.
- Glocester* Duke of is Regent of *England*, I. 162. He is successful in *Flanders*, 164. He is murdered in Prison, 165.
- Gondebaud* becomes Master of *Burgundy*, I. 221.
- Gonsalvo* King of *Sobrad* is assassinated, I. 49.
- Gonsalvo* the Great Captain is used ill, I. 71.
- Gonsalvo Nunes* Count of *Castile*, I. 43. He signalizes himself against the *Moor*s, *ib.* His unhappy End, 45.
- Harro* II. King of *Denmark*, II. 178.
- Gotbard Kessler* Duke of *Courland*, II. 318.
- Goths* settle in *Spain*, I. 21. In *Gaul*, 216. Their Kingdom is annexed to that of the *Swedes*, II. 200.
- Government* Civil none before the Flood, I. 1. Origin thereof, 2. Its first Form was heroical, *ib.* Sudden Changes therein liable to Defects, 15. Monarchic not proper for a large and populous City, 141.
- Grandes* Origin of this Order, I. 37.

I N D E X.

- Grand Vixir* Institution of this Office, II. 353.
- Granville* Cardinal his violent Proceedings in the *Netherlands*, I. 313.
- Gray* Lord suffers Death, I. 180.
- Great-Britain* its Soil, I. 210. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements, 211. Its Constitution, 212. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest in General, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 214.
- Græce* many independant States there, I. 5.
- Gregory* III. Pope, II. 51. He refuses to pull down Images, *ib.*
- Gregory* VI. Pope, II. 64. He rectifies Disorders in the Holy See, *ib.*
- Gregory* VII. Pope, II. 68. He greatly extends the Power of Rome, *ib.* He excommunicates the Emperor, *ib.* The Emperor shuu him up in Rome, *ib.*
- Grisser* his Insolence in *Switzerland*, I. 399. His Cruelty to *William Tell*, 400.
- Grisons* are assisted by France, I. 271.
- Gritto* General is made Prisoner, II. 160.
- Grotius* Hugo is condemned to Prison for Life, I. 160.
- Grumbach* stirs up a Commotion in *Germany*, I. 359.
- Guelphs* a Faction in *Italy*, I. 352.
- Guildford* Lord is beheaded, I. 175.
- Gui*'s an Instance of the Difficulty to conceal it, I. 48.
- Guise* Duke of is murdered, I. 259.
- Guise* Duke of his Intrigues to get the *French* Crown, I. 262.
- Guise* Duke of is carried Prisoner into *Spain*, II. 141.
- Guises*, manage every thing in *France*, I. 257.
- Guise* the Duke and Cardinal of are both assassinated, I. 264.
- Gustavus* I. King of *Sweden*, II. 217. He heads the *Quakers*, *ib.* The Clergy give him much Trouble, *ib.* He offers to resign the Crown, 219. He establishes the Protestant Religion, 220. He suppresses several Insurrections, *ib.* He repulses the *Danes*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Lubeckers*, 221.
- Gustavus* II. King of *Sweden*, II. 230. He takes much from the *Poles*, 231. He goes to the Assistance of the Protestants in *Germany* and does Wonders there, 233. He is slain in a Battle, 240.
- Gundemar* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28.

H.

- Hacquin* I. King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He sacrifices nine of his Children, *ib.*
- Hacquin* II. King of *Sweden*, II. 200.
- Halfan* King of *Sweden*, II. 200.
- Hamburgh* an Insurrection there, I. 377. It is attacked by the *Danes*, II. 188.
- Hannibalian* suffers Death, II. 48.
- Harald* VI. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He loses much in *Germany*, *ib.*

Harald

I N D E X.

- Harald VII.** King of Denmark, II. 179.
- Harold-canute** King of England, I. 146. He is a remarkable Eater, *ib.*
- Harold I.** King of England, I. 145. He causes *Emma* to be assassinated, *ib.*
- Harold II.** King of England, I. 146. He defeats *Harold Harfager*, 147. He falls in Battle, *ib.*
- Helvetic Body* see *Switzerland*.
- Heemskirk** James dies in bursting a Spanish Fleet, I. 322.
- Henry I.** King of Castile, I. 61. His Sister *Berengera* has the Management, *ib.* He is killed by the Fall of a Tyle, *ib.*
- Henry II.** King of Castile, I. 667. His Right to the Crown is contested, *ib.*
- Henry III.** King of Castile, I. 68.
- Henry IV.** King of Castile, I. 69. He hires one to lie with his Queen, *ib.*
- Henry I.** King of England, I. 149. He annexes *Normandy* to the English Crown, 150. He engages in a War with *France*, *ib.*
- Henry II.** King of England, I. 151. His Son joins with *France* and *Scotland* against him, 152. He conquers *Ireland*, *ib.* He has a long Quarrel with *Thomas of Becket*, *ib.*
- Henry III.** King of England, I. 155. He drives the French out of England, *ib.* The Barons take him Prisoner, *ib.*
- Henry IV.** King of England, I. 161. He is while Duke of *Hereford* banished, 160. The English invite him over, *ib.* He repulses the *Scotch*, 161. The *Welsh* are routed by him, *ib.* Several Conspiracies against him, *ib.*
- Henry V.** King of England, I. 161. His Youth is very unpromising, *ib.* He signalizes himself in *France*, 162.
- Henry VI.** King of England, I. 163. He is crowned at *Paris*, *ib.* His Affairs in *France* are quite ruined, 165. He is confined in the Tower, 166. He is restored to the Throne, *ib.* He is slain in Prison, 167. His Son *Edward* is assassinated, *ib.*
- Henry VII.** King of England, I. 169. He lands in *Wales*, 168. *Richard* is defeated by him, *ib.* He marries *Elizabeth* of the House of *York*, 169. He defeats *Lambert Symnel*, *ib.* He causes *Warbeck* an Impostor to be hanged, *ib.*
- Henry VIII.** King of England, I. 170. He marries his Brother's Widow, 169. He repulses the *Scotch*, 170. He divorces *Catherine*, *ib.* He disgraces *Woolsey*, *ib.* He marries *Anna Bullen*, *ib.* He annuls the Pope's Authority, *ib.* The Monasteries are dissolved by him, *ib.* He is successful against the *Scotch*, 173. He engages in a War with *France*, *ib.* He marries four other Wives, *ib.*
- Henry I.** Emperor of Germany, I. 346. He defeats the *Huns*, *ib.* The *Sarabes* and *Vandals* are vanquished by him, *ib.*
- Henry II.** Emperor of Germany, I. 348. He is successful against the *Poles*, *ib.* He is canonized, *ib.*
- Henry III.** Emperor of Germany, I. 348.

I N D E X.

- Henry IV.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 349. The *Saxons* rebel against him, *ib.* He is excommunicated and deposed, *ib.* His overcomes *Rodo'ph* his Rival, *ib.* He deposes the Pope, *ib.* Being deposed a second Time he dies miserably, I. 350.
- Henry V.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 350. The *Saxons* rebel against him, *ib.* He gives up the Right of collating to Benefices, *ib.*
- Henry VI.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 351. He is crowned kneeling by the Pope, *ib.*
- Henry VII.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 352.
- Henry VIII.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 354. He attempts to recover his Authority in *Italy*, *ib.* He is poisoned by a Monk, *ib.*
- Henry I.* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Henry II.* King of *France*, I. 254. He attacks *Charlemaign*, *ib.* He is slain in Tilting, 256.
- Henry III.* King of *France*, I. 261. He comes from *Poland*, *ib.* He is excommunicated for Assassinating the *Caiser*, 264. He joins with the *Huguenots*, *ib.* He is stabbed by a Monk, *ib.*
- Henry IV.* King of *France*, I. 264. He defeats the Duke of *Maine*, 265. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He embraces the Catholic Religion, 266. Many Cities submit to him, *ib.* He declares War against *Spain*, 267. An Attempt upon his Life, *ib.* The Pope absolves him, *ib.* He publishes the Edict of *Nantz*, *ib.* He attacks *Savoy*, *ib.* He establishes the Silken Manufacture, 268. He is stabbed in his Coach, 269.
- Henry King of Poland*, II. 296. He quits *Poland* in order to take Possession of the *French Crown*, *ib.*
- Henry King of Portugal*, I. 127.
- Henry King of the Two Sicilies*, II. 129. He overcomes *Tancred* his Rival, 128. He is very cruel, 129. He annexes the *Two Sicilies* to the Empire, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Henry Count of Nassau* is slain, I. 316.
- Henry Count of Portugal*, I. 120.
- Henri Dandolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 149. He gains much from the Eastern Empire, *ib.* He buys *Candia*, 150.
- Henry Knipperrodde* Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, II. 274. His prudent Conduct, *ib.*
- Herrings* quit the Coast of *Prussia* and go upon the *British Coast*, II. 273.
- Henry Peter* takes the *Spanish Fleet*, I. 305.
- Hieronymo Priuli* Doge of *Venice*, II. 162.
- Hilichman* a Monk his Intrigues in *Germany*, II. 66. He is chosen Pope, 68.
- Holland* Foundation of this Republick, I. 318. His Sovereignty is conferred upon the Duke of *Alençon*, 319. It is supported by *Elizabeth* of *England*, 320. It makes great Conquests in the *East-Indies*, 321. It concludes a Truce with *Spain*, 323. Don't conflict themselves there, 324. It is declared a free Republick, 326. It makes a Settlement at *Brazil*, 325. Divisions arising in its States, 326. It goes to *Cromwell* for Peace, 328. It

I N D E X.

- It joins with *Denmark* against *Sweden*, *ib.* It is successful against the *English*, *ib.* It is invaded by *France*, 329. Its States are forced to chuse a Stadtholder, *ib.* It favours the Design of the Prince of *Orange* upon *England*, 330. It enters into the *Grand Alliance*, *ib.* It enters into the second *Grand Alliance*, 331. It is very well peopled, 337. Manners of its Inhabitants, *ib.* Its Soil, 338. Its Settlements, *ib.* Reasons for its extensive Trade, 340. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Government, 341. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 342.
- Hollanders* Manners of them, I. 337.
- Holstein* Duke of is declared Successor to *Russia*, II. 346.
- Horn* Count is beheaded, I. 315.
- Horn Gustavus* is taken Prisoner, II. 241.
- Hovst Matthias* is beheaded, II. 279.
- Hugh Capet* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Humbert* I. of *Savooy* II. 1. The Emperor gives him the Valley of *Aoust* for his Assistance, *ib.*
- Humbert* II. of *Savooy*, II. 2. He acquires the *Tarentose*, *ib.*
- Humbert* III. of *Savooy*, II. 2. He sides with the Pope, *ib.* *Turin* is taken from him, *ib.*
- Humbery* Count of *Penille*, II. 123. He reduces the *Apubans* to Obedience, *ib.* The Pope whom he makes Prisoner confirms him in his Dominions, *ib.*
- Hungary Ragotzki* is proclaimed there, I. 376. Its Malecontents are reduced to Obedience, 378.
- Hunniade* *John* signalizes himself against the *Turks*, II. 356. He is slain, 357.
- Huns* make an Irruption into *Italy*, II. 144. They make great Progress in *Gaul*, I. 218. They make vast Havock in *Germany*, 346.
- Husi John* is put to Death, I. 356.

I.

- Jacopo Contarini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 151. He abdicates the Dogeship, *ib.*
- Jacopo Tiropolo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He conquers *Negropont*, *ib.*
- Jagellon* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He annexes *Lithuania* to *Poland*, *ib.* He overcomes the Teutonick Order, *ib.*
- Jaffer* discovers a Plot against the Senate of *Venice*, II. 167.
- Jamaica* is conquered by the *English*, I. 189.
- James* I. King of *England*, I. 180. Conspiracy against him, *ib.* He takes the Title of King of *Great-Britain*, 181. He plants Colonies in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Mistakes in his Reign, 182.
- James* II. King of *Great-Britain*, I. 191. He in his Brother's Reign goes into *Holland*, *ib.* A Bill is brought into Parliament for excluding him, *ib.* Divers suffer for conspiring against him, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- ib.* The Papists are countenanced by him, 192. He flies into France, 193. He is defeated in Ireland, *ib.*
- Jane Gray* is proclaimed Queen of England, I. 174. She is beheaded, 175.
- Jane I. Queen of Naples*, II. 135. She is put to Death, 136.
- Jane II. Queen of Naples*, II. 137. Her Gallants suffer Death, 138. She takes the Power into her own Hands, *ib.* She adopts *Alfonso of Arragon*, *ib.* She adopts *Rena of Anjou*, *ib.*
- Jannissaries* the Body of is formed, II. 352. It is much improved, 356.
- Jansinists* their Dispute with the *Jesuits*, I. 296. They are banished, 298. A Stop is put to the Persecution of them, *ib.*
- Ibrahim Sultan of Turkey*, II. 367. He devotes himself to his Pleasures, *ib.* *Candia* is attacked by him, 368. He is deposed and strangled, *ib.*
- Ibrahim Grand Vizir* is strangled, II. 362.
- Jeffreys* Chief Justice his Cruelty in the West of England, I. 192.
- Jerusalem* is annexed to the Kingdom of Sicily, II. 130.
- Jews* are banished from Spain, I. 70. From Portugal, 116. From England, 156. From France, 2.4.
- Independents* get the upper Hand in England, I. 185. They resolve to treat no more with the King, 186.
- Ingalus King of Sweden*, II. 198. His great Cruelty, *ib.* He burns himself and Family in his Palace, *ib.*
- Ingo I. King of Sweden*, II. 199. He is slain, *ib.*
- Ingo II. King of Sweden*, II. 200. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Ingo III. King of Sweden*, II. 200. His Queen is canonized, *ib.* He is poisoned, *ib.*
- Ingria* is annexed to Sweden, II. 328.
- Inquisition* a Court of is erected in Spain, I. 69.
- Joan of Arc* her Exploits, I. 243. She is burnt at *Raan*, *ib.*
- John I. King of Castile*, I. 68. He is worked by the *Portugueses*, *ib.* He is killed by a Fall from his Horse, *ib.*
- John II. King of Castile*, I. 68. His Subjects rebel against him and force him to deliver up a Favourite, *ib.*
- John King of Denmark*, II. 183. He obtains the *Swedish Crown*, *ib.* The *Stures* give him much Trouble, *ib.*
- John King of England*, I. 153. He overcomes *Arthur of Brittany*, *ib.* He loses *Normandy*, 154. He resigns his Crown to the Pope's Legate, *ib.* The *Barons* take Arms against him, *ib.* He signs the Great Charter, *ib.*
- John King of France*, I. 236. He is taken Prisoner by the *English*, 237. He sells his Daughter, *ib.* He dies in England, 238.
- John I. King of Portugal*, I. 123.
- John II. King of Portugal*, 125. A Conspiracy against him, *ib.*
- John III. King of Portugal*, I. 127.
- John IV. King of Portugal*, 128. The *Dutch* take much from him in the *East-Indies*, *ib.*

John

I N D E X.

- John V. King of Portugal, I. 192.* He sides with Duke Charles of Austria, *ib.* He has a Difference with Holland, 133. He quarrels with the Pope, 194. He has an Interview with the King of Spain, 135. A Misunderstanding betwixt him and the Court of Madrid, 137. He is attacked in the *Bay of India* by the Natives, *ib.*
- John I. King of Poland, II. 295.* The *Falavians* rebel against him, *ib.*
- John II. King of Poland, II. 302.* He accommodates *Adwers* with the *Cassacks*, *ib.* The *Souedes* treat with him, 303. He is successful against *Ragatzki*, *ib.* He resigns the Crown and dies in a Monastery, 304.
- John III. King of Poland, 305.* He is successful against the *Turks*, *ib.* He is defeated at *Barcan*, *ib.*
- John I. Czar of Russia, II. 327.* He throws off the Yoke of the *Tartars*, *ib.* He subdues many petty States, *ib.*
- John II. Czar of Russia, II. 328.* He annexes *Casán* and *Astracan* Tartary to *Muscovy*, *ib.* *Livonia* revolts from him, *ib.*
- John III. Czar of Russia, II. 330.* He shares the Government with his Brother *Peter*, *ib.*
- John IV. Emperor of Russia, II. 341.* His Mother removes the Duke of *Courland* from the Regency, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Suedes*, 343. He is sent out of *Russia*, *ib.*
- John Baptist King of Stockholm* appears before the *English* Parliament, I. 156. He is taken Prisoner by the *English*, *ib.*
- John I. King of Sweden, II. 202.*
- John II. King of Sweden, II. 214.* He loses the Crown, *ib.*
- John III. King of Sweden, II. 224.* He cedes some Provinces to Charles his Brother, *ib.* The *Russians* attack him, 225. He endeavours to reestablish the Catholic Religion, *ib.* He persecutes the Protestants, 226. He causes his Brother *Eric* whom he had before deposed to be poisoned, *ib.*
- John Frederick Elector of Saxony* heads the Protestants, I. 357. He is deprived of his Dominions, 358.
- John Grand Duke of Tuscany, II. 45.*
- John XII. Pope, II. 64.* He is deposed by the Emperor, *ib.*
- John of Austria* governs the *Netherlands*, I. 317.
- John of Leyden* heads the *Anabaptists*, I. 358.
- John Sigismund Duke of Prussia, II. 280.* He takes Possession of *Cleves*, *ib.*
- John Tiffin* Grand Master of the *Teutonic Order*, II. 277. His remarkable Words, *ib.*
- Joseph Emperor of Germany, I. 373.* He continues the War against France, *ib.* The *Hungarians* combine in Arms against him, 374. He has a Quarrel with the Pope, 376.
- Jovian Emperor of the Romans, II. 50.*
- Lish* Manners of them, I. 220.
- Italy* its Division on the Division of the *Roman Empire*, II. 220. The *Athenians* make an Insurrection thereinto, 224. Its Inhabitants fly to

I N D E X

- to the *Lagunas*, *ib.* The *Lombards* become Masters thereof, I. 20.
 It is split into the Factions of *Gaspe* and *Gibellins*, I. 32. It
 is divided into many independent States, II. 131.
Jubilee one is instituted in *Spain*, I. 64. The Time of its Ce-
 lebration is reduced from 200 to 29 Years, *ib.*
Julian reigns at *Antioch*, II. 49. He renounces Christianity, *ib.*
 He succeeds to the Empire, *ib.*
Julian de Medici is assassinated, II. 39.
Juliers Origin of the House of *Brandenburg's* Claim thereof, II. 179.
Julius II. Pope, II. 94. He renounces much to the Holy See, *ib.*
Julius of Capua is put to Death, II. 178.
Justicia Institution of an Officer so called in *Spain*, I. 176.

K

- Kermur* Lord is beheaded, I. 202.
Kiuprli Mahomet his brave Conduct in *Candia*, II. 258.
Krumholtz stirs up an Insurrection in *Hamburg*, I. 277.

L

- Lacy* General subdues *Finland*, II. 346.
Ladislaus King of *Naples*, II. 136. He overcomes the Duke
 of *Anjou* his Rival, *ib.* He obtains the Crown of *Hungary*,
 137. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He is poisoned in a sur-
 prizing Manner, *ib.*
Lagune Islands are governed by Tribunes, II. 240. They are
 united by Bridges and make a City afterwards called *Venice*, *ib.*
Lancaster John Duke of lays claim to *Castile*, I. 222. He accom-
 modates Matters with *Peter* of *Castile*, II. 224.
Lancaster the House of and that of *Touren* united, I. 269.
La Tour stirs up a War against *Genoa*, II. 27.
Laurentio Lord of *Florence*, II. 39. His Brother is assassinated,
ib. He hangs the Archbishop of *Pisa*, *ib.* He is excom-
 municated, *ib.* He encourages the Sciences, *ib.* He is poi-
 soned, *ib.*
Laurentio de Medici is murdered, II. 42.
Laurentio Princi Doge of *Venice*, II. 262.
Laurentio Tiepolo Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He attacks the *Bohe-
 mians*, *ib.*
Laws the Populace of *France* are enraged against him, II. 209.
Laver Christopher is hanged, I. 205.
Lazarus Prince of *Serbia* is slain, II. 352. One of his Domes-
 ticks revenges his Death, *ib.*
League of Brun, I. 401. Of *Cambray*, II. 159. Of the *Calvinists*
 in *Germany*, I. 360. Of the *Catholics* in *Germany*, *ib.* Against
France, II. 160. Or holy Union in *France*, I. 262. Of *Sax-
 halz*, I. 387.
Lechus I. Duke of *Poland*, II. 288. He founds a new State in *Po-
 land*, *ib.*

Lechus

I N D E X.

- Lacbus II.** Prince of Poland, II. 289. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Leicester** Earl of is made Governor of the *Netherlands*, I. 320. He is recalled from thence, *ib.*
- Leo III.** Pope, II. 62. He is shut up in a Monastery, *ib.* He is tried and acquitted, *ib.*
- Leo IX.** Pope, II. 83. He endeavours to root out *Simony*, *ib.*
- Leo X.** Pope, II. 94. He sells many Indulgences, *ib.* His imprudent Conduct with Regard to *Luther*, 97.
- Leo Ysaurus** Emperor of the East, II. 50. He pulls down the Images in the Churches, *ib.* His Order for doing the same in *Rome* is disobeyed by the Pope, *ib.* His *Exarch* is murdered at *Ravenna*, 52. An Association is entered into against him, *ib.*
- Leoa** is united to *Gastilia*, I. 61.
- Leonardo Donato** Doge of *Venice*, II. 165. He maintains his Authority against the Pope, *ib.*
- Leonardo Loridano** Doge of *Venice*, II. 159. A League is formed against him, *ib.* He enters into an Alliance against *France*, *ib.* He makes some Cessions to the Pope and to *Spain*, 160.
- Leopold** Emperor of *Germany*, I. 363. He attacks the *Saxons*, *ib.* He joins against *France*, *ib.* He is successful against the *Turks*, 364. He is attacked by *France*, 367. He supports the Pretensions of his Son to *Spain*, 369. He is extricated from great Difficulties, 371. The *Hungarians* take Arms against him, 373.
- Leopold** Archduke of *Austria* is routed by the *Switzers*, I. 401.
- Lescab I.** Prince of Poland, II. 289.
- Lescus II.** Prince of Poland, II. 289. He is unexpectedly raised to the Sovereignty, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Lescus III.** King of Poland, II. 289.
- Lescus IV.** Prince of Poland, II. 290.
- Lescus V.** Prince of Poland, II. 292. His Right is disputed by *Mucislans*, *ib.* He loses *Pomerania*, *ib.*
- Lescus VI.** Prince of Poland, II. 293. He is successful against the *Russians*, *ib.*
- Lestis Alexander** subdues the Island of *Rügen*, II. 233. He heads the *Presbyterians* in *Scotland*, I. 184.
- Lewva I.** King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26.
- Lewva II.** King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28. He is slain by *Witterick*, *ib.*
- Lewvigilde** King of the *Visgoths*, I. 26. He causes his Son to be beheaded, 27. His Intrigues at the Court of *France*, *ib.*
- Lewis I.** Emperor of the *Franks*, I. 227. He is very unhappy in his Sons, *ib.* He divides his Dominions, *ib.*
- Lewis II.** King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis III.** King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis IV.** King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis V.** King of *France*, I. 228.
- Lewis VI.** King of *France*, I. 230. Divers Lords take up Arms against him, *ib.*
- Lewis VII.** King of *France*, I. 230. He is unfortunate in the *Holy Land*, *ib.* He has a Quarrel with *England*, *ib.*

Lewis

I N D E X

- Lewis VIII.* King of France, I. 231.
- Lewis IX.* King of France, I. 231. He is taken Prisoner in *Palestine*, *ib.* He is slain before *Tunis*, 232.
- Lewis X.* King of France, I. 234.
- Lewis XI.* King of France, I. 244. His Artifices to make himself absolute, 245. He annexes *Burgundy*, *Provence*, *Anjou* and *Maine* to the French Crown, *ib.* He dies miserably, *ib.*
- Lewis XII.* King of France, I. 247. He conquers *Milan*, *ib.* He joins with *Spain* in conquering *Naples*, *ib.* He enters into a League against *Venice*, 248.
- Lewis XIII.* King of France, I. 269. He entirely ruins the Power of the *Huguenots*, 270. He supports the Duke of *Nevers*, 271. He assists the *Grisons*, *ib.* He attacks the Emperor, *ib.*
- Lewis XIV.* King of France, I. 273. His unexpected Birth, 274. He continues the War against the Emperor, *ib.* He attacks *Spain*, 275. He quarrels with the Pope, 276. He attacks the *Netherlands*, 277. He engages in a War with *Holland*, 278. The Empire and *Spain* declare against him, 279. Ambassadors come to him from *Siam*, 280. He revokes the Edict of *Nantz*, 281. A grand Alliance is formed against him, 282. A second grand Alliance is formed against him, 286. He embarks Troops in Favour of the Pretender, 291. He concludes Treaties with most of the Allies, 295.
- Lewis XV.* King of France, I. 298. He puts a Stop to the Persecution of the *Jansenists*, *ib.* He sends home the *Infanta* of *Spain*, 300. He enters into a War with the Emperor, 302. He sends two Squadrons into the *West-Indies*, 304. He joins against the *Archduchess*, *ib.*
- Lewis I.* King of Germany, I. 345.
- Lewis II.* Emperor of Germany, I. 346. The *Huns* force him to pay Tribute, *ib.*
- Lewis III.* Emperor of Germany, I. 354. He takes *Frederich* his Rival Prisoner, *ib.* He supports the *Gibelines*, 355. He is excommunicated and deposed, *ib.*
- Lewis* King of Poland, II. 294.
- Lewis* King of Sicily, II. 135.
- Lewis* King of Spain, I. 102.
- Lewis* Count of *Nassau* is slain, I. 316.
- Lewis* Duke of *Anjou* his Attempt upon *Naples* fails, I. 239.
- Lewis* Duke of *Milan* dies a Prisoner, I. 247.
- Lewis* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 4. He establishes *Francis Sforza* in *Milan*, *ib.*
- Lewis Contarini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 170.
- Lewis Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 163. The *Turks* attack him, *ib.*
- Lisbon* is taken from the *Moors*, I. 121.
- Lithuania* is annexed to *Poland*, II. 294.
- Eivonia* revolts from the *Russians* and submits to the *Poles*, II. 295.

Lombards

I N D E X

- Lombards* become Masters in *Italy*, II. 120.
Lorenzo *Celsi* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
Lorrain Duke of is successful against the *Turks*, II. 370.
Lothaire King of *France*, I. 228.
Lothario Emperor of *Germany*, I. 350.
Ludeck a Dispute concerning the Succession thereto, II. 190.
Luitprand King of *Lombardy* attacks *Rome*, II. 52.
Luther writes against *Indulgences*, II. 95. The Circumstances of the Times are favourable to him, *ib.* The Emperor connives at the spreading of his Doctrines, 97. Reasons for their spreading no further, 98.
Luxemburg Marshal his Success in *Flanders*, I. 283.

M.

- Macedonian* Empire is founded, I. 6. Division thereof, 8. It is quite ruined, 9.
Madeira the Island of is discovered, I. 124.
Magna Charta is signed, I. 154.
Magnencius usurps the Dominions of *Constant*, II. 49. He lays violent Hands upon himself, *ib.*
Magnus King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Magnus I. King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He is slain, *ib.*
Magnus II. King of *Sweden*, 204. He suppresses the House of *Folckunger*, *ib.*
Magnus III. King of *Sweden*, II. 207. *Scania* submits to him, *ib.* He is excommunicated, *ib.* He abdicates the Throne, *ib.* He remounts it, *ib.* He causes his Son to be poisoned, *ib.* His Subjects call in *Albert* of *Mecklemburg*, 208. Being taken Prisoner he resigns the Crown, *ib.*
Magnus Son of *Birger* of *Sweden* is beheaded, II. 206.
Mahomet I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 354. He is successful against the *Christians*, 355.
Mahomet II. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 356. He takes *Constantinople*, *ib.* He becomes Master of *Trebisonde*, 357. He attacks the *Venetians*, *ib.* He makes a Descent on *Italy*, *ib.* Inscription upon his Tomb, 358.
Mahomet III. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 365. He causes nineteen of his Brothers to be strangled and ten of his Father's Concubines to be drowned, *ib.* He continues the War in *Hungary*, *ib.* He dies of the *Plague*, *ib.*
Mahomet IV. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 368. He takes *Candia*, *ib.* He attacks *Poland*, 369. He loses much in *Hungary*, *ib.* He is deposed, 371.
Mahomet V. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 375. He is unsuccessful in a War with *Persia*, *ib.* He is attacked by *Russia* and the Emperor, 376.
Maine Duke of is made Head of the League in *France*, I. 265. He is worsted by *Henry* IV. *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Mainfroy* usurps the Thrones of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 122. He is slain, *ib.*
- Mamelukes* an End is put to their Reign in *Egypt*, II. 260.
- Manza* Duke of is put under the Ban of the Empire, I. 276.
- Manufacture* of Bays is introduced into *England*, I. 179. The Silken one is established in *France*, 268.
- Mar* Earl of is defeated at *Dundas*, I. 201.
- Marcello Tessallino* Doge of *Venice*, II. 144.
- Marcello* Admiral is slain, II. 169.
- Martin* Marshal is slain, I. 290.
- Marcantonio Justiniani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 170. He takes much from the *Turks*, *ib.* The *Morlaques* revolt to him, *ib.*
- Marcantonio Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 171.
- Marcus Barberigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Marcus Cornaro* Doge of *Venice*, II. 154.
- Margaret* Queen of *Denmark*, II. 182. She is acknowledged by the *Suedes*, *ib.* She unites the two Northern Crowns, 210. She redeems *Gothland* from the *Teutonic Order*, *ib.*
- Marino Bocconio* suffers Death for a Conspiracy, II. 151.
- Marino Faliero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 153. Conspiring against the Senate he is beheaded, 154.
- Marino Giorgio* Doge of *Venice*, II. 152.
- Marino Grimani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 164. He despises a Bull of Excommunication, *ib.* He supports his Authority against the Clergy, *ib.*
- Marino Morosini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He recovers *Falace*, *ib.*
- Marlborough* Duke of his brave and successful Conduct, I. 195. 196. He is made a Prince of the Empire, 195. He is dismissed from his Command, 198.
- Marsel Charles* extends his Power as Mayor of the Palace, I. 224. He obtains a signal Victory over the *Moor*, *ib.* He takes the Title of Duke of *France*, *ib.*
- Mary of Medicis* her Intrigues in *France*, I. 271. She dies miserably, *ib.*
- Mary Queen of England*, I. 175. She restores the *Catholic Religion*, *ib.* She loses all in *France*, 176.
- Mary Queen of Scots*, I. 177. She takes the Arms of *England*, *ib.* She is confined, *ib.* She is made Prisoner by *Elizabeth*, *ib.* She is beheaded for a Conspiracy, 178.
- Massacre of the Danes* in *England*, I. 145. Of the *French* in *Genoa*, II. 23. Of the *French* in *Sicily*, I. 233. Of *Paris*, I. 260. Of the Protestants in *Ireland*, I. 185.
- Matilda* Countess of *Tuscany* her Donation to the See of *Rome*, II. 69.
- Matilda* Empress defeats *Stephen* of *England*, I. 151. Her Son is adopted by *Stephen*, *ib.*
- Matilda* of *Scotland* her rash Wish on marrying *Henry I.* of *England*, I. 150.
- Matthias* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 359. His Reign is disturbed by civil War, *ib.*
- Muregato* King of *Asturia*, I. 37.
- Murice* Elector of *Saxony* goes over to the Protestants, I. 358.

Maurice

I N D E X

- Maurice* Prince of *Orangi* Stadtholder of *Holland*, I. 319. His Success whilst he was Generalissimo, 321. His ambitious Designs are opposed, 324. He sides with the *Gomarists*, *ib.*
- Maximilian I.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 356. He annexes *Burgundy* to the *Austrian* Dominions, *ib.* He is unsuccessful against the *Swiss*, *ib.*
- Maximilian II.* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 359. *Grumbach* disturbs his Reign, *ib.*
- Maximiliano* stirs up an Insurrection in *Naples*, II. 140. A remarkable Inscription of his, *ib.* He is murdered and dragged through the Streets, 141.
- Maxepa* revolts from the *Czar*, II. 333. He is hanged in Effigy, *ib.*
- Maximilien* Cardinal is condemned by the Parliament of *Paris*, I. 274. He is banished, 275. He triumphs over all his Enemies, *ib.*
- Menzikow* Prince is disgraced, II. 339.
- Merci* Count is slain, II. 14.
- Merovius* King of the *Franks*, I. 218. He greatly extends his Dominions, 219.
- Michael Frederowitz* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 329.
- Michael* King of *Poland*, II. 304. He is very unfortunate, *ib.*
- Michele Morosini* Doge of *Venice*, II. 155.
- Mithiel* Steno Doge of *Venice*, II. 155. He puts an End to the *Paduan* War, *ib.* He loses much in *Hungary*, *ib.*
- Micislaus I.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 290. Being restored to Sight he embraces Christianity, *ib.*
- Micislaus II.* King of *Poland*, II. 290. He loses *Moravia*, *ib.*
- Micislaus III.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Milan* the Western Emperors reside there, II. 50. The Dutchy of is conquered by *France*, I. 247. *Maximilian* its Duke is restored, 248. It is re-conquered by the *French*, 250. It is annexed to the Dominions of *Austria*, 252.
- Minorea* is conquered by the *English*, I. 96.
- Miquis* *John* prevails on the *Turks* to attack *Cyprus*, II. 163.
- Missionari* a Settlement is projected there, I. 298.
- Monasteries* Dissolution of them in *England*, I. 172.
- Mont General* completes the Conquest of *Scotland*, I. 188. He restores *Charles II.* 190.
- Monmouth* Duke of is banished, I. 191. He is beheaded, 192.
- Montmorency* *Simon* is mortally wounded, I. 259. Speech of his in his last Moments, *ib.*
- Moor* are repulsed from the *Spanish* Coast, I. 31. They overrun *Spain*, 34. *Pisagus* routs them, 36. They are repulsed by *Charles Martel*, 224. The *Moor* of *Spain* unite under one Prince, 37. A signal Victory gained over them, 38. Sixty-thousand of them cut off in one Battle, 40. They lose Ground in *Spain*, 59. An End is put to their Power there and many of them are banished, 70. They are all banished from *Spain*,
 VAL. II. E c 80.

I N D E X.

- So.** *Alphonso* of Portugal takes much from them, 131. They are banished from Portugal, 126.
- Mortimer** is hanged, I. 157.
- Moscow** great Part of that City is reduced to Ashes, II. 296.
- Munich** Count his Intrigues in *Russia*, II. 344. He is banished, *ib.*
- Mustapha** I. Emperor of *Turky*, II. 366. He is deposed, *ib.* Being restored, he is again deposed, 367.
- Mustapha** II. Emperor of *Turky*, II. 372. He is unsuccessful in *Hungary*, *ib.* He is deposed and the *Muslims* his Favourers beheaded, *ib.*

N.

- Nantz** the Edict of is revoked, I. 281.
- Naples** its ancient State, II. 120. It is conquered by *Ferdinand*, and annexed to *Spain*, 140. *Charles* Archduke of *Austria* becomes Master of it, 141.
- Naval** Strength it is of the utmost Consequence to a trading Nation, I. 10. It is the natural Strength of an Island, 182. Prudence of *Elizabeth* of *England* with Regard to it, *ib.* Misfortune of its being neglected in *England*, *ib.*
- Navarre** that Kingdom is annexed to *Aragon*, I. 51. It is detached from *Aragon*, 57. An Addition to its Arms, 68. It is subdued by *Ferdinand* of *Castile*, 71.
- Netherlands** ancient State of them, I. 310. They are subdued by the *Franks*, *ib.* Division of them into 17 Provinces, *ib.* They become subject to the House of *Burgundy*, *ib.* They are annexed to the Dominions of *Austria*, 311. Civil War in them on Account of Religion, *ib.* An Ecclesiastick Court is erected in them, 312. The Duke *D'Alva*, is sent thither, 314. The Bloody Council is erected, 315. Seven of the Provinces form themselves into a Republick, 318.
- Nicholas** II. Pope he confirms the *Normans* in the Possession of *Naples*, II. 67.
- Nicholas Contarini** Doge of *Venice*, II. 168.
- Nicholas De Ponte** Doge of *Venice*, II. 164. He puts a Stop to the Depredations of the *Mantse*, *ib.*
- Nicholas Donato** Doge of *Venice*, II. 166. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Nicholas Marcello** Doge of *Venice*, II. 158.
- Nicholas Trono** Doge of *Venice*, II. 157. He gains *Cyprus*, *ib.*
- Noailles** Cardinal he sides with the *Janseists*, I. 267.
- Norfolk** Duke of is beheaded, I. 177.
- Normandy** is annexed to the *English* Crown, I. 126. It gives Title of Duke to the eldest Son of *England*, *ib.*
- Normans** Manners of them, II. 193. They ravage the Coast of *Spain*, I. 40. They settle in *France*, 227. They conquer *England*, 147. They settle in *Italy*, II. 121. They drive the *Saracens* from *Sicily*, 122.
- Norway** that Kingdom is annexed to *Denmark*, II. 181.
- Northumberland** Duke of he procures the Duke of *Somerset's* Death, I. 174. He is beheaded, *ib.*

I N D E X,

O.

- O** *Atas* a Plot discovered by him, I. 191.
Obelerio Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. He is deposed, *ib.*
Oecolempadius disputes at *Baden*, I. 404.
Oglethorpe General his Attempt on *Fort Augustine* Sailors, I. 208.
Olaus IV. King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Olaus VI. King of *Denmark*, II. 181. He succeeds to *Norway*, *ib.*
Olaus King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He embraces Christianity, *ib.*
Denmark is conquered by him, *ib.* He is sacrificed by his own Subjects, *ib.*
Olaus the Tributary King of *Sweden*, II. 199. He pays Tribute to *Rome*, *ib.* He annexes the Kingdom of the *Goths* to that of the *Sweedes*, 200.
Olaus disputes in *Sweden*, II. 218.
Olfuson Nilis is beheaded, II. 220.
Orange Foundation of the Claim of the House of *Brandenburg* on that Succession, II. 283. A Dispute concerning the Right to that Succession, I. 232.
Orange Prince of is invited into *England*, I. 192.
Orcan Emperor of *Turky*, II. 352. He conquers *Naxos*, *ib.* He institutes the Order of *Janissaries*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
Orco Participatio Doge of *Venice*, II. 146. He takes *Candia* from the *Saracens*, *ib.*
Orco Mastropetra Doge of *Venice*, II. 149. He goes into a Monastery, *ib.*
Ordelfaffo Faliero Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He is slain, *ib.*
Order of Annunciade is instituted, II. 4. Of *Dobrin* Institution of it, 271. Of *Grandees* Origin of it, I. 37. Of *Janissaries* Institution of it, II. 352. Of *Ricos Hombers*, I. 37. Of *St. Maurice*, II. 4. Of *St. Stephen*, II. 43. Of the *Sword*, II. 271. That Order is incorporated with the *Teutonick*, *ib.* Of *Templars*, it is ruined, I. 64. The *Teutonick*, see *Teutonick Order*.
Ordewio King of *Asturia*, I. 40. He is worsted by the *Moors*, 41.
Ordonio King of *Leon*, I. 24. He perfidiously seizes the Counts of *Castile*, *ib.*
Ordonio III. King of *Leon*, I. 44. He is successful against his Brother, *ib.* He joins against the *Moors*, *ib.*
Orkneys they are annexed to *Scotland*, II. 183.
Orleans Duke of is assassinated, I. 240.
Orleans Duke of is beheaded, I. 271.
Orleans Duke of his prudent Conduct as Regent, I. 298. He stops the Persecution of the *Jansenists*, *ib.* Intrigues of *Abbe Trone* against him, 299. He declares War against *Spain*, *ib.* He marries two Daughters to two *Spanish* Princes, *ib.*
Ormond Duke of is appointed to command in *Flanders*, I. 198. He goes into *France*, 200.
Orso Baduco Doge of *Venice*, II. 146.
Orso Ippato Doge of *Venice*, II. 144.
Osman Sultan, II. 366. He is assassinated, *ib.*

I N D E X

- Offend an East-India Company is erected there, I. 335. Its Charter is suspended, 336.*
- Offerman Count his Intrigues in Russia; II. 344. He is condemned to die but his Life is spared, ib.*
- Otbo I. Emperor of Germany, I. 347. Rebellion against him, ib. He is successful against the Danes, ib. He routs the Huns, ib. He conquers Italy and reserves to himself and Successors the Right of confirming Popes, II. 63.*
- Otbo II. Emperor of Germany, I. 347. The French attack him, ib. He is taken Prisoner, 348.*
- Otbo III. Emperor of Germany, I. 348. He is disturbed by the Romish Clergy, ib. He is poisoned, ib.*
- Otbo IV. Emperor of Germany, I. 352. He is excommunicated, ib. He is forced to resign the Empire, ib.*
- Ottoman Sultan of Turkey, II. 352. He takes the Title of Sultan, ib. He subdues Phrygia, Galatia, Cappadocia and Bithynia, ib.*
- Ottom Orseolo Doge of Venice, II. 146. He is banished, ib. He is restored, 147.*
- Otton of Savoy, II. 1. He annexes Susa and Part of Piedmont to Savoy, ib.*
- Oxenstern General commands the Swedes in Germany, II. 240.*

P.

- Padua its long War with Venice is put an End to, II. 150.*
- Palatinate is sacked by the French, I. 364. War on Account of the Succession thereto, 367. Disturbances there on the Account of Religion, 368.*
- Papists Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men amongst them, II. 112. No Reconciliation is likely between them and the Protestants, 115. Considerations upon their Strength compared with that of the Protestants, 116.*
- Parma Duke of governs in the Netherlands, I. 318.*
- Pascali Cicmia Doge of Venice, II. 164.*
- Pascali Malipiero Doge of Venice, II. 157.*
- Patkul Count is condemned to lose his right Hand, II. 253. He goes into the Service of Russia, ib. He suffers a most cruel Death, 254.*
- Patkul General is beheaded, II. 314.*
- Paul Pope, II. 58. He accommodates Matters with Didier King of Lombardy, ib.*
- Pavlutio Anastaso Doge of Venice, II. 144.*
- Pelagius King of Asturia, I. 35. He gains a signal Victory over the Moors, 36. He is called the Deliverer of his Country, ib.*
- Pepin King of Lombardy his Generosity to the Venetians, II. 145.*
- Pepin Mayor of the Palace in France, I. 224.*
- Pepin the younger Mayor of the Palace in France, I. 224. He deposes Childerick and is proclaimed, ib. Pope Zachary comes into his Views, ib. He subdues the Saxons, 225. He signifies himself against the Lombards, ib. He reduces the Dukes of Bavaria and Aquitaine to a State of Vassalage, ib. He is declared*

I N D E X.

- declared Patron of the Church, II. 56. He raises the Siege of Rome, 57. He gives the Exercate to the Pope, 58.
- Persian Monarchy* is founded by *Cyrus*, I. 3. Prudence of its Monarchs with Regard to *Greece*, 4. It is ruined, *ib.*
- Peter* King of *Castile*, I. 66. He marries three Wives at once, *ib.* He is deposed and put to Death, 67.
- Peter I.* King of *Portugal*, I. 122.
- Peter II.* King of *Portugal*, I. 130. He acknowledges *Philip V.* of *Spain*, *ib.* He declares for the Archduke, 131.
- Peter I.* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 330. His Brother resigns his Share in the Government, *ib.* He is successful against the *Turks*, *ib.* He visits the principal States of *Europe*, *ib.* A Conspiracy against him, 331. He engages in a War against *Sweden*, *ib.* The Duke of *Courland* is restored by him, *ib.* He is attacked by the *Turks*, 334. He sends a Body of Troops into the Empire, 335. He goes into *France*, *ib.* His Son conspires against him, *ib.* He obtains the Titles of *Father of his Country* and *Emperor of all the Russias*, 337. His Progress upon the *Caspian Sea*, *ib.* He settles the succession, *ib.*
- Peter II.* Emperor of *Russia*, II. 338. He dies of the Small Pox, 339.
- Peter* King of *Sicily*, II. 135. He is attacked by *Naples*, *ib.*
- Peter I.* Lord of *Florence*, II. 39.
- Peter II.* Lord of *Florence*, II. 40. He flies from *Florence* and is drowned, *ib.*
- Peter of Savoy*, II. 2.
- Peter's Pence* are first paid in *England*, I. 144.
- Pharamond* King of the *Franks*, I. 217.
- Philibert I.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Philibert II.* of *Savoy*, II. 5.
- Philip I.* King of *France*, I. 229.
- Philip II.* King of *France*, I. 231. He goes into the Holy Land, *ib.* He takes much from the *English*, *ib.*
- Philip III.* King of *France*, I. 233. He annexes *Tholouse* to the *French* Crown, *ib.* He attempts the Conquest of *Aragon*, 234.
- Philip IV.* King of *France*, I. 234. He attacks the Count of *Flanders*, *ib.* He suppresses the Order of *Knights Templars*, *ib.*
- Philip V.* King of *France*, I. 234. He banishes the *Jews*, *ib.*
- Philip VI.* King of *France*, I. 234. His Right to the Crown is disputed by *Edward III.* of *England*, 235. He annexes *Dauphiny* to the Crown, 236. He imposes the *Gabel*, *ib.*
- Philip* Emperor of *Germany*, I. 351. Another Emperor is chosen, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Philip* of *Macedon* founds the *Macedonian* Empire, I. 6. Character of him, *ib.*
- Philip I.* King of *Castile*, I. 71.
- Philip II.* King of *Spain*, I. 76. His Imprudence with Regard to the *Netherlanders*, *ib.* He fits out the Armado against *England*, 77. He supports the League in *France*, 78. He is attacked

I N D E X.

- tacked by *Henry IV. of France, ib.* His scandalous Behaviour to *Antonio Perez, 79.* He puts his Son to Death, *ib.* He conquers *Portugal, ib.*
- Philip III. King of Spain, I. 80.* He makes Peace with the *Netherlanders, ib.* He banishes the *Moors, ib.* He assists the Rebels in the *Valteline, 81.*
- Philip IV. King of Spain, I. 81.* He recommences the War with *Holland, ib.* He is attacked by *France, 82.* *Portugal* revolts from him, 83. The *Catalonians* rebel against him, *ib.*
- Philip V. King of Spain, I. 89.* He is acknowledged by many Powers, *ib.* His Right is disputed by *Charles of Austria, 91.* He is forced to give over the Siege of *Barcelona, 93.* He flies from *Madrid, 94.* He recovers this Capital, *ib.* He raises *Xativa, 95.* His Rival leaves *Spain, 97.* He takes *Barcelona* by Storm, 99. He attacks *Sardinia* and *Sicily, 100.* He is attacked by the *French, 101.* He abdicates the Crown, 102. He re-assumes it on his Son's Death, *ib.* He lays Siege to *Gibraltar, 105.* Depredations of his *Guard de Costas, 106.* He joins in a War against the Emperor, 107. He is attacked by *Great-Britain, 109.*
- Philip King of Sweden, II. 200.*
- Philip I. of Savoy, II. 2.*
- Philip II. of Savoy, II. 5.*
- Philip Landgrave of Hesse is made Prisoner, I. 358.*
- Phrygia* is subdued by the *Turks, II. 352.*
- Piastki King of Poland, II. 289.*
- Piedmont* its Soil and Commodities, II. 15.
- Pierre Barbelano Doge of Venice, II. 147.*
- Pierre Candiano Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He makes the *Slavonians* tributary, *ib.*
- Pierre Candiano II. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He is murdered, *ib.*
- Pierre Candiano III. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Pierre Gradenigo Doge of Venice, II. 145.* He is assassinated in a Church, *ib.*
- Pierre Gradenigo II. Doge of Venice, II. 151.* He renews the Government, *ib.* Conspiracies are formed against him, *ib.* He is worsted by the *Genoise, 152.*
- Pierre Grimani Doge of Venice, II. 173.*
- Pierre Lando Doge of Venice, II. 162.*
- Pierre Loridano Doge of Venice, II. 162.*
- Pierre Mocenigo Doge of Venice, II. 158.*
- Pierre Oseolo I. Doge of Venice, II. 146.*
- Pierre Oseolo II. Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He extends the Trade of the Republick, *ib.* The *Dalmatians* submit to him, *ib.*
- Pierre Polano Doge of Venice, II. 148.* He is successful against *Padua* and *Pisa, ib.*
- Pierre Tribuno Doge of Venice, II. 146.* He repulses the *Hungarians, ib.*

Pierre

I N D E X.

Pierre Zian Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He goes into a Monastery, *ib.*

Plague in *France*, I. 243. In *Portugal*, 124. In *Prussia*, II. 284. In *Spain*, I. 25. Another there, 66. In *Venice*, II. 148. Another there, 162. Another, 163. Another, 168.

Poland its ancient State, II. 288. It is governed by Dukes, *ib.* It is governed by *Waywodes*, *ib.* Why every King chosen from the Natives is called a *Piast*, 289. Nuncios first sent to their Diet, 295. Interregnum in *Poland*, 306. Manners of its People, 321. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, 322. Its Constitution, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 324.

Pol's Manners of them, II. 321.

Pomerania Division of this Province, II. 282.

Popes the Right of confirming them is reserved to the Emperors of *Germany*, II. 63. Three at one Time are set aside, 65. Quarrel between them and Emperors, 68. Their Dominions, 79. Their Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.* The Grants of his Predecessors to the Holy See is confirmed by *Rodolph*, *ib.* The Papal Power is inconsistent with civil Government, 72. It was founded upon the Abuse of the Practices of the Primitive Christians, 77. The Ignorance of the Times helped to promote it, 78. *Rome* was most proper for its Seat, 79. No just Reason for the Pre-eminence of the Bishop of *Rome* over other Bishops, *ib.* The Papal Power was increased by divers Arts, and Accidents, 80. *Boniface* did great Service to the Papal Power, 81. It has always been a Maxim with Popes to multiply Churchmen as much as possible, 82. Monks have been very useful to them, 84. They usurp an independent Power, 85. They throw off all Subjection to Emperors, 87. Their Intrigues in *England* and in *France*, 88. They assume a Power over all Princes, 89. Their Authority declines, 91. It is further hurt by *Schisms* amongst themselves, *ib.* The Removal of the Pope's Residence was a fatal stroke to the Papal Power, 92. *Luther* gives a great Blow thereto, 94. It is now recovered and likely to gain Ground, 100. It is not founded on Reason or warranted by Scripture, 102. The Papal Constitution is admirably contrived for preserving itself, *ib.* Rules observed in choosing Popes, 104. They commonly enrich their own Families, 105. They usually have a first Minister, called *Cardinal Patron*, 106. Their Subjects are of two Sorts, *ib.* Doctrines and Customs which serve to maintain the Pope's Authority, 107. Learning is prostitute to its Support, 110. Violent Methods are if necessary used, 111. Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men under Subjection to the Pope, 112. His Interest with Regard to *Protestants*, 115. The *Papists* Strength compared with that of the *Protestants*, 116.

Popiel I. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289.

Popiel II. Prince of *Poland*, II. 289. His Cruelty is punished in an uncommon Manner, *ib.*

Powder Plot, J. 180.

I N D E X.

Portugal is given with the Title of Count to *Henry of Burgundy*, I. 120. It becomes an Independent Kingdom, 121. Origin of its Arms, *ib.* It is conquered by *Castile*, 128. It recovers its Independency, 84. It loses much in the *East-Indies*, 129. Its people are driven from *Japan*, 138. Manners of the *Portuguese*, 137. Soil of *Portugal*, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements, 138. Its Interests in the general, 140. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

Portuguese Manners of them, 137.

Pracontal Marquis is slain, I. 287.

Pragmatick Sanction is instituted by the Emperor, I. 385. The *Germanick* Body confirm it, 386. Several Powers guaranty it, *ib.*

Preliminaries of the *Hague*, I. 292. Of *Paris*, 266. Of *Radstadt*, 382. Of *Vienna*, 303.

Premislans Prince of *Poland*, II. 293. He takes the Title of King, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*

Pretender is acknowledged by *France*, I. 194. He embarks for *Scotland*, 196. He publishes a Manifesto, 201. He arrives in *Scotland*, 202. Intrigues of *Charles XII.* in his Favour, *ib.* An Expedition from *Spain* in Favour of him, 204.

Primogeniture Right of, I. 375.

Protestants Origin of that Name, I. 357. They are attacked by the Emperor, *ib.* They are a second Time attacked in *Germany*, 361. No Reconciliation likely between them and *Papists*, II. 115. Considerations on their Strength with Regard to the *Papists*, 116. No Agreement amongst themselves to be expected, 118.

Prussia its ancient State, II. 269. The Knights of the *Teutonic* Order are invited thither, 271. Divers Princes make Expeditions there, 272. Part thereof is annexed to *Poland*, 295. That Part belonging to the *Teutonic* Order is erected into a secular Duchy, 278. The *Protestant* Religion is introduced thereinto, *ib.* Disputes there betwixt the *Ostendicks* and the *Morlinists*, *ib.* It is declared to be independent of *Poland*, 281. It is erected into a Kingdom, 283. It is brought into a flourishing State, 284. Its present Inhabitants are of different Nations, 272. Dominions belonging to it, 282. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

Prussians Manners of them while *Heathens*, II. 270. Their Idols are destroyed by *Boleslaus*, *ib.* They commit great Ravages in *Masovia*, 271.

R.

Rachis King of *Lombardy* embraces Christianity, II. 54.

Radzewowski Primate his Intrigues in *Poland*, II. 312. He is excommunicated, 314.

Ragotzki is proclaimed in *Hungary*, I. 376.

Ragwalde Knafholde King of *Sweden*, II. 201. He is murdered, *ib.*

Ramiro

I N D E X.

- Ranica* I. King of *Affrica*, I. 40.
- Ramiro* II. King of *Leon*, I. 43. He is successful against the *Moor*, *ib.*
- Ramiro* III. King of *Leon*, I. 45. The *Moor*s gain Ground upon him, *ib.*
- Ravillac* Francis he slays *Henry* IV, I. 269.
- Recarede* I. King of the *Visigoths*, I. 27. He abjures *Arianism*, 28.
- Recarede* II. King of the *Visigoths*, I. 29.
- Regnier* Zeno Doge of *Venice*, II. 150. He is successful against *Genoa*, *ib.*
- René* King of *Naples*, II. 139. He is forced to leave his Rival in Possession of this Kingdom, *ib.*
- Requesens* Lewis governs the *Netherlands*, I. 316.
- Religion State of it among the *Heathens* and *Jews*, II. 72. Origin of the War on Account thereof in *France*, I. 256. Hostilities are commenced there, 259. Fatal Effects of this War, 270. A War on Account thereof in *Germany*, 357. Another there, 359. A War on Account of it in *Switzerland*, 405.
- Religion *Catholic* Doctrines and Customs thereof which serve to keep the *Laity* under, II. 110. Violent Methods used to propagate this, 111. Reasons for the Continuance of sensible Men therein, 112. Some States have an Interest in maintaining it, 113.
- Religion *Christian* Reasons for its Universality, I. 73. It is for the Interest of Sovereigns to introduce and maintain this, *ib.* The civil Magistrate ought in every State to be the Head thereof, 74. It was first embraced by the lower Sort of People, *ib.* It spread itself in a surprizing Manner, *ib.* Its Progress amongst the *Romans*, 75. Its Professors are persecuted, *ib.* No Consequence to be drawn from the Power in Ecclesiastical Matters exercised by the primitive *Christians*, *ib.* Reasons for the Continuance of this Power, 76. Magistrates are capable of the supreme Direction in what concerns it, *ib.* It is planted in *Denmark*, II. 178. *Finland*, 201. *France*, I. 122. *Lombardy*, II. 54. *Poland*, 200. *Prussia*, 270. *Russia*, 327. *Sweden*, 199. *Turky*, 351.
- Religion *Mohometan* spreads itself in *Turky*, II. 351.
- Religion *Protestant* begins in *Germany*, I. 357. It is introduced into *Denmark*, II. 185. *England*, I. 174. *Prussia*, II. 278. *Scotland*, I. 177. *Sweden*, II. 220. *Switzerland*, I. 404. Reasons for its not having spread further, II. 98. It is in no Danger from open Force, 118. The best Means to preserve it, *ib.*
- Reusblin* *Joh*n triumphs over the *Monks*. II. 96.
- Revolution the Persons concerned in bringing one about are frequently influenced by ambitious Views, I. 14. One is easily brought about when the People in general have no Affection for their Governor. 84.
- Richard* I. King of *England*, I. 152. He undertakes an Expedition to *Palestine*, *ib.* He is made Prisoner in *Germany*, 153. He repulses the *French* in *Normandy*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Richard* II. King of *England*, 160. He is forced to give up his

I N D E X.

- his Favourites, I. 160. He submits to *Lancaster*, 161. He is dishonour'd and murdered in Prison, *ib.*
- Richard III.** King of *England*, I. 168. He kills *Henry VI.* 167. He causes his Brother *Clarence* to be assassinated, *ib.* He causes *Edward V.* to be murdered, 168. His Intrigues to get the Crown, 169. He is defeated and slain, *ib.*
- Richard Cardinal** becomes first Minister, I. 270. He advises the Banishment of the *Huguenots*, *ib.*
- Riporda Baron** resigns his Employments, I. 104. He is seized at *Madrid* in the House of the *British* Minister, *ib.*
- Robert King of France**, I. 229. He is excommunicated, *ib.*
- Robert Emperor of Germany**, I. 356.
- Robert King of Naples**, II. 134. He joins with the *Gascons*, *ib.* He is made Lord of *Genoa*, *ib.* He devotes himself to Books, 135.
- Robert Guiscard Duke of Pouille**, II. 123. His Brother *Roger* makes great Progress in *Sicily*, 124. He quarrels with his Brother, *ib.* He sides with the Pope against the Emperor, *ib.* He subdues some of the Isles of *Greece*, *ib.*
- Rodrick King of the Visigoths**, I. 33. His Rape of *Florinda* is followed with a Revolution, 34.
- Rodolph King of France**, I. 220.
- Rodolph I. Emperor of Germany**, I. 353. He deprives *Ottocar* of *Bohemia*, *ib.* He puts one of his Sons into Possession of *Suabia*, *ib.* He confirms the Grants of his Predecessors to the Holy See, II. 70. He introduces the Use of the *German* Language into all publick Acts, I. 354. He demolishes the Holds of Robbers, *ib.*
- Rodolph II. Emperor of Germany**, I. 359. The *Hungarian* War is very troublesome to him, *ib.* He cedes *Hungary* to his Brother, *ib.*
- Rodolph Duke of Suabia** is slain, I. 340.
- Rodrigo Dias De Brivar** or the *Cid* his Exploits, I. 51.
- Roger Duke of Pouille**, II. 125. A Rebellion is raised against him, *ib.*
- Roger I. Count of Sicily**, II. 125. He signalizes himself against the *Saracens*, 124. *Guiscard* his Brother uses him ill, *ib.* He supports his Nephew *Roger* in the *Pouille*, 125.
- Roger II. Count of Sicily**, II. 125. He succeeds to the *Pouille* and takes the Title of King of the *Two Sicilies*, *ib.* This Title is confirm'd to him by the Pope, 126. He distinguishes himself in *Palestine*, *ib.*
- Roman Empire** Causes of the Decline thereof, I. 15. It is divided by *Constantine the Great*, II. 48. It is divided into *Eastern* and *Western*, I. 19. The *Eastern* is weakened by the Quarrels in the Imperial Family, 20. It is put an End to by the *Turks*, *ib.* The *Western* is overtan by the Northern Nations, I. 19.
- Romans** their surprizing Constancy, I. 12. Regulations for encouraging Valour amongst them, 11. Their Mistake in putting

I N D E X

- too much Power into the Hands of Generals. I. 17. They subdue *Gaul*, 216. They drive the *Franks* out of *Gaul*, 217. They call the *Huns* to their Assistance in *Gaul*, 218. An End is put to their Power in *Gaul*, 220. They subdue *Spain*, 21. They are driven out of *Spain*, 23. They reestablish themselves there, 26. They are again driven from thence, 29.
- Rome* its first Inhabitants lived by Plunder, I. 10. Methods of *Romulus* to make it populous, *ib.* Its constitution was quite military, *ib.* The *Gauls* bring *Rome* into extreme Danger, 12. Its Religion was calculated to serve the Purposes of the State, *ib.* Its Priests enjoyed a great Share of civil Power, 14. Expulsion of its Kings, *ib.* Monarchy was not a proper Form of Government for *Rome*, *ib.* Contests betwixt the *Patricians* and *Plebeians*, *ib.* The Liberty of *Rome* is quite ruined by *Julius Caesar*, 18. The Soldiers engross all the Power, *ib.* *Christianity* spreads itself in *Rome*, II. 75. Its first Bishops suffer much from the *Heathens*, 48. They are much censured by the first *Christian* Emperors, 76. The Imperial Residence is removed from thence, 50. It is blocked up by the *Lombards*, 54. It is relieved by *Pepin*, *ib.* It throws off all Subjection to the *Eastern* Emperors, 86. The Exercate is annexed to the Sec of *Rome* by *Pepin*, 87.
- Ruffel* Lord is beheaded, I. 191.
- Russia* its ancient History very obscure, II. 327. It is subdued by the *Tartars*, *ib.* Manners of its People, 347. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Government, 348. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other Powers, *ib.*
- Russians* Manners of them, II. 347.
- Ruyter* Admiral is slain, I. 279.

S.

- Scheverel* Dr. is silenced for three Years, I. 196.
- St. Adalbert* preaches the Gospel in *Prussia*, II. 270. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- St. Andre* Marshal is slain, I. 259.
- St. Gall* the Abbot of oppresses the *Tegenbergers*, I. 408.
- St. Ruth* General is slain, I. 193.
- Salique* Law is reformed, I. 222.
- Sancho* King of *León*, I. 44. He is forced to quit the Throne, *ib.* He is restored thereto, *ib.*
- Sancho* II. King of *Castile*, I. 50. He deprives his Brother of *Leon*, 51. He overcomes *Ramire* King of *Navarre*, 50. He is murdered before *Zamora*, 51.
- Sancho* III. King of *Castile*, I. 60.
- Sancho* IV. King of *Castile*, I. 62. His Reign is much disturbed, 63.
- Sancho* the Great King of *Navarre*, I. 47. He is very unhappy in his Family, *ib.* He is assassinated, 48.
- Sancho* IV. King of *Navarre*, I. 51. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Sancho* of *Navarre* his Intrepidity at the Battle of *Laga*, I. 60.

Sancho

I. N. D. E. X.

- Sancho I. King of Portugal*, I. 128.
- Sancho II. King of Portugal* I. 121.
- Saracens* why so called, II. 351. They embrace *Christianity*, *ib.* The *Doctrines of Mahomet* spreads amongst them, *ib.* They overrun the *Eastern Empire*, I. 20. They are overcome by the *Turks*, II. 351. A remarkable Defeat of them, 124. They are driven from *Sicily*, 129.
- Sardinia* the Kingdom of is erected, II. 12. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
- Saxe* Count is chosen Duke of *Courland*, II. 319. He is forced to quit this Dutchy, *ib.*
- Saxe-Gottha* Prince of is slain, I. 291.
- Saxons* come into *Britain*, I. 143. All the South Part of this Island is subdued by them and divided into seven Kingdoms, *ib.*
- Savoy* Origin of the House of, II. 1. It is erected into a Dutchy, 4. Origin of its Claim upon *Cyprus*, *ib.* Its Soil, 15. Its Commodities, *ib.*
- Sbarco* General is slain, II. 371.
- Scanderberg* the Great his Exploits, II. 356.
- Scania* submits to *Sweden*, II. 207.
- Schmielinski* General is ignominiously treated, II. 301. He routs the *Poles*, *ib.*
- Schomburg* Duke of is slain, I. 284.
- Schulemburg* General a Statue is decreed him for saving *Consu*, II. 172.
- Scotch* take up Arms against *Charles*, I. 185. They deliver him into the Hands of the *English*, 186. They are vanquished by *Cromwell*, 187. Manners of them, 209.
- Sebastian* King of *Portugal*, I. 127. He is 120. enterprising, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Seckendorf* Count is disgraced, II. 377.
- Selim I. Sultan of Turkey*, II. 358. He causes his Father to be poisoned, *ib.* He causes his Brother and eight other Princes to be strangled, 359. He attacks *Perfia*, *ib.* He puts *Aludulus* to death, 360. He subdues *Egypt*, *ib.*
- Selim II. Sultan of Turkey*, II. 309. He makes Peace with the Emperor, *ib.* He attacks *Cyprus*, 364.
- Sebastiano Venier* Doge of *Venice*, II. 164.
- Sebastiano Ziani* Doge of *Venice*, II. 149. He joins with the Pope against the Emperor, *ib.*
- Sicilian Vespers*, II. 132.
- Sicily* its ancient State, II. 120. The *Saracens* become Masters thereof, *ib.* They are driven from thence, 125. It is detached from *Naples*, 133. It is annexed to *Aragon*, 137. It is annexed to *Castile*, 139. It is erected into a Kingdom for the Duke of *Savoy*, 141. The Emperor is put into Possession thereof, *ib.* The Two *Sicilies* the Kingdom of is erected, II. 125. It is ceded to the Emperor 129. It is conquered by *Don Carlos*, 142. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 143.

I N D E X

- Sidney Algernoon* suffers Death, I. 191.
Siege of Agrigentum, II. 125. *Amwerp*, I. 319. *Bagdad*, II. 367.
Barcellona, I. 95. *Belgrade*, 383. *Buda*, II. 370. *Cambrai*,
 368. *Casah*, I. 277. *Charlevoix*, 88. *Colberg*, II. 234. *Co-*
penhagen, 247. *Danzick*, 303. *Djhan*, I. 403. *Famagusta*,
 II. 163. *Friderichshal*, 258. *Harlem*, I. 316. *Lerida*, 85.
Leipsick, II. 244. *Leyden*, I. 316. *Lifo*, 292. *Louvain*, 272.
Luxemburg, 27. *Maastricht*, 278. *Magdeburg*, II. 235. *Meaux*,
 I. 368. *Messina*, II. 123. *Namur*, I. 284. *Naples*, 252.
Negropent, II. 157. Another of it, 371. *Newhaussel*, I. 364.
Nice, 289. *Orleans*, 242. *Ostend*, 322. *Pavia*, II. 57.
 Another of it, 61. *Raab*, 364. *Riga*, 304. *Rochelle*, I. 261.
 Another of it, 270. *Scutari*, II. 357. *Smolensko*, 208. *Ste-*
tin, 282. *Stockholm*, 223. *Stralsund*, 191. *Toledo*, I. 51.
Tournay, 293. *Toulon*, 290. *Turis*, 289. Another of it, II.
 19. *Vienne*, 365. Another of it, II. 361. *Weissburg*, 360.
Zirichsee, I. 317.
Sigebert King of the *Visgoths*, I. 28.
Sigerick King of the *Visgoths*, I. 22.
Sigismund Emperor of *Germany*, I. 356. He causes *John Huss*
 to be put to Death, *ib.* The Followers of *Huss* give him much
 Trouble, *ib.*
Sigismund I. King of *Poland*, II. 295. He is successful against
Russia, *ib.* He accommodates Matters with the *Teutonic* Or-
 der, *ib.*
Sigismund II. King of *Poland*, II. 295. *Livonia* and *Estonia* sub-
 mit to him.
Sigismund III. King of *Poland*, II. 297. He is successful against
Maximillian his Rival, *ib.* He succeeds to *Sweden*, *ib.* He is
 deposed by the *Swedes*, *ib.* He supports *Demetrius*, *ib.* His
 Son is proclaimed by the *Russians*, 298. He is attacked by the
Turks, 309. He loses much in *Livonia*, *ib.*
Sigismund King of *Sweden*, II. 227.
Silesia its Princes submit to *Bohemia*, II. 293. It is detached
 from *Poland*, 292. It is ceded to the King of *Prussia*, 285.
Silo King of *Asturia*, I. 37.
Sinclair Baron is assassinated, II. 262.
Sixenand King of the *Visgoths*, I. 29.
Slingers a Party in *France* so called, I. 274.
Steffen Count of stirs up a Rebellion in *France*, I. 272.
Soliman I. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 360. *Rhodes* surrenders to him,
 361. His Progress in *Hungary*, *ib.* He deposes *Maley Hassan*,
 362. He attacks *Persia*, *ib.* The *Venetians* join against him,
 363. Great Character of him, *ib.*
Soliman II. Sultan of *Turky*, II. 371. He is unsuccessful in his
 Wars, *ib.*
Somerfet Duke of is slain, I. 165.
Sophia Princess her Intrigues in *Russia*, II. 330.
South-Sea *Schemé*, I. 205.

I N D E X

- Spacens* the Body of is formed, II. 353.
- Spaniards* Manners of them, I. 110.
- Spain* its ancient State, I. 21. The *Romans* subdue it, *ib.* It is overrun by the *Goths* and *Suevi*, *ib.* The *French* invade it, 25. It is subdued by the *Moor*, 34. Six independent *Christian* States therein, 48. The *Moorish* Power there is quite put an End to, 70. Manners of its Inhabitants, 110. Reasons for its being thinly peopled, *ib.* Its Soil, 111. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Settlements in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Its Settlements in the *East-Indies*, 115. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Revenue, 116. Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*
- Sparta* its wise Laws, I. 5. It gains the Superiority in *Greece*, *ib.* It is brought into feeble State, 6.
- Spencers* suffer Death, I. 157.
- Stanbops* General is taken Prisoner, I. 97.
- Stanislaus* King of *Poland*, II. 314. His Election is declared void, 317. He lives in *France*, 320. He is again elected to the *Polish* Throne, *ib.* He renounces his Pretensions thereto, 321.
- Stanislaus* Bishop of *Cracow* is beheaded at the Altar, II. 291.
- Steinbeck* Count is taken Prisoner, II. 256.
- Stenchild I.* King of *Sweden*, II. 199. His *Heathen* Subjects assassinate him, *ib.*
- Stenchild II.* King of *Sweden*, II. 200. He is successful against the *Danes*, *ib.*
- Stephen* King of *England*, I. 151. His Right to the Crown is disputed, *ib.* He is made Prisoner, *ib.* *Henry* of *Anjou* is adopted by him, *ib.*
- Stephen* King of *Poland*, II. 296. He is successful against the *Russians*, *ib.* The Laws are reformed by him, *ib.* He civilizes the *Cossacks*, *ib.*
- Stephen* Pope, II. 54. *Pepin* comes to his Assistance, *ib.* He goes into *France* and procures the Settlement of the *French* Crown upon the Sons of *Pepin*, 55.
- Stephen III.* Pope, II. 58. He is cajoled by *Didier*, *ib.*
- Stephen IX.* Pope, II. 66.
- Strains* Count is slain, I. 371.
- Strafford* Lord is beheaded, I. 185.
- Strozzi* stabs himself, II. 42.
- Sture Steen* Regent of *Sweden* resigns his Power, II. 214. He is restored to the Regency, 215. He dies as is supposed by Poison, *ib.*
- Sture Svanse* Regent of *Sweden* defends himself bravely against *John* of *Denmark*, II. 215.
- Sture Steen* the Younger Regent of *Sweden* makes *Gustavus Trolle* Prisoner, II. 216. He is excommunicated, *ib.* He is mortally wounded, *ib.* His Body is dug up and quartered, *ib.*
- Sture* the House of suffers much, II. 223.
- Suevi* settle in *Spain*, I. 21. Their Kingdom in *Spain* is put an End to, 26.
- Suffolk* Duke of is beheaded, I. 175.

I. N. D. I. E. X.

- Stainbila* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 29. He is deposed, *ib.*
Superstition a remarkable Instance thereof, I. 40.
Sweden a very ancient Kingdom, II. 197. It is brought into a deplorable State, 208. It is united to *Denmark*, 209. Its *Crown* is declared Hereditary, 221. Its Form of Government is regulated, 250. An *East-India* Company is erected there, 252. Manners of its People, 264. Its Soil, 265. Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Government, 260. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 265.
Swerin Count revenges the Insult done to his Wife, II. 180.
Swedes their Kingdom and that of the *Goths* are united, II. 200. Divisions betwixt them and the *Goths*, 201. Manners of them, 264.
Swercher I. King of *Sweden*, II. 210. He is murdered, *ib.*
Swercher II. King of *Sweden*, II. 202. He is slain in *West-Gothland*, *ib.*
Sweyn I. King of *Denmark*, II. 178. He is ransomed by the *Danish* Women, *ib.*
Sweyn II. King of *Denmark*, II. 179.
Sweyn III. King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He is slain, *ib.*
Sweyn King of *England*, I. 145. He is slain at *St. Edmunds Bury*, *ib.*
Swiss they gain Victories over the *Austrians*, I. 401. They are successful against *Burgundy*, 402. They signalize themselves in the Service of *France*, *ib.* They scandalously desert the *Duke of Milan*, *ib.* They go into the *Pope's* Service, 403. Their Alliance with *France* is renewed, *ib.* They assist the *Genoese*, 405. They are attacked by *Savoy*, 406. They send some Troops to join the Allies, 407. A civil War amongst them, 408. They enter into new Engagements with *France*, 409. They assist in quelling an Insurrection in *Geneva*, 410. Manners of them, *ib.*
Switzerland formerly belonged to *Germany*, I. 399. The Nobility are driven out of the *Swiss* Cantons, *ib.* They submit to the House of *Austria*, *ib.* First League amongst them, 400. They renew their League at *Brun*, 401. The Attempt of the House of *Austria* to reduce them to Obedience fails, *ib.* They are excluded from the *Germanick* Body, 401. Their Number and Allies, 410. Soil of *Switzerland*, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Strength, 411. Its Constitution, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 412.
Sylvester *Palier* Doge of *Venice*, II. 171. He loses *Chio*, *ib.*
Synnet *Lambert* he is proclaimed in *Ireland*, I. 169.
Syria is subdued by the *Romans*, I. 9.

T.

- Talga* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 30.
Tallard Count is taken Prisoner, I. 288.
Tamerlane makes *Bojazet* Prisoner, II. 354.

I N D E X.

- Tancred King of the Two Sicilies*, II. 128. His Right to the Crown is contested, *ib.* He makes *Castles* *Palermo*, 129.
- Tancred Lord of Hauteville* his ten Sons go into *Italy*, II. 128.
- Tell William* his brave Conduct, I. 400.
- Teutonic Order* Origin of it, II. 268. Different Names thereof, *ib.* It is removed to *Venice*, *ib.* It is led in *Prussia*, 271. It has a long War with *Pomerania*, 272. It builds *Marienburg*, *ib.* It acquires *Pomerelia*, 273. The *Poles* attack it, *ib.* It is very flourishing, 274. Its War with *Lithuania* costs it dear, 275. Great Confusion therein, *ib.* The *Poles* take much from it, 276. Its Dominions in *Prussia* are erected into a secular Dutchy, 278.
- Tetzal John* he writes against *Luther*, II. 95.
- Thomas Kouli Kan* his Progress against the *Turks*, II. 374. He usurps the Sovereignty of *Persia*, 376.
- Thebes* becomes considerable, I. 6.
- Theodato Ippato* Doge of *Venice*, II. 145. His eyes are put out and he is banished, *ib.*
- Theodore I* Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. He loses *Archangel*, *ib.*
- Theodore II*. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 329.
- Theodore III*. Czar of *Muscovy*, II. 328. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Theodore Baron De Neuboff* arrives in *Corsica*, II. 94. He institutes the Order of Deliverance, 33. He disappears, *ib.* He comes again into *Corsica*, 34.
- Theodored King of the Visigoths*, I. 22. He joins against the *Huns*, *ib.* He is trampled to Death, *ib.*
- Theodorick King of the Visigoths*, I. 23. He is successful against the *Suevi*, *ib.* He is murdered, *ib.*
- Theresa* her implacable Hatred to *Gonsalvus*, I. 45.
- Theudis King of the Visigoths*, I. 25. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Thomas of Savoy*, II. 2. He assists the *Emperors*, *ib.* He is made Vicar of the Empire, *ib.*
- Thomas Mocenigo* Doge of *Venice*, II. 156.
- Thorn* a Quarrel there between the *Jesuits* and the *Townsmen*, II. 318.
- Tilly General* is killed by a Cannon Ball, II. 238.
- Togenburg* its Quarrel with the *Abbot of St. Gall*, I. 408.
- Toledo* Resolutions of a Council held there, I. 29. An Interview there betwixt several crowned Heads, 59.
- Toum-Bei Sultan of Egypt* is beheaded; II. 360.
- Torkel Canutson* Regent of *Sweden* suddenly *Carries*, II. 204. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Torristmand King of the Visigoths*, I. 23. He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Torstenson General* he commands in *Germany*, 243.
- Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle*, I. 86. *Altena*, II. 188. *Alt-Ranstadt*, II. 253. *Baden*, I. 296. *Barrier*, I. 333. A second, I. 334. *Belgrade*, II. 277. *Breda*, I. 328. *Bressan*, II. 285. *Bretigny*, I. 159. *Broomsbros*, II. 244. *Gambrey*, I. 252. *Carlowitz*, II. 372. *Chateau Cambresis*, I. 255. *Chiarasco*, II. 8. *Copenhagen*, II. 187. *Crespy*, I. 254. *Falentin*, II. 373. *Grand Alliance*,

I N D E X.

- Alliance*, I. 193. A second, 331. *Hanover*, 104. *Kalisch*, II. 274. *Lyons*, 6. *Lubeck*, 186. *Munster*, I. 363. *Neustadt*, II. 3, 6. *Nimeguen*, I. 279. *Oliva*, II. 304. *Osnabrug*, 266. *Partition*, I. 286. *Passarowitz*, 383. *Passau*, 358. *Pavia*, II. 57. *Pyrenees*, I. 276. *Quadruple Alliance*, 203. *Roschan*, 409. *Roschild*, II. 187. *Ryfwick*, I. 368. *St. Germain*, II. 282. *Seville*, I. 105. *Stetin*, II. 185. *Stockholm*, 191. *Stolbova*, 231. *Trarwendall*, 189. *Tripple Alliance*, I. 202. A second, 277. *Vervins*, 267. *Vienna*, 103. *Utrecht*, 295. *Westphalia*, 363.
- Transilvania* submits to the *Turks*, II. 361.
- Trebisonde* an Empire is erected there, I. 20. It is subdued by the *Turks*, II. 357.
- Tribuno Memo Doge of Venice*, II. 146. He enters into the *Monastick State*, *ib.*
- Trolle Gustavus* his Intrigues against *Steen Sture*, II. 216.
- Troops* hired ones are dangerous and not to be trusted, I. 9.
- Turenne* Marshal is killed, I. 279.
- Turks* Manners of them, II. 378.
- Turky* Origin of the Empire of, II. 351. Manners of its People, 378. Provinces thereto belonging, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Government, 379. Its Revenue, *ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, 380.
- Tuscans* Manners of them, II. 46.
- Tuscany* its ancient State, II. 38. Dominions thereto belonging, II. 46. Its Soil, *ib.* Its Commodities, *ib.* Its Revenue, 47. Its Strength, *ib.* Its Interest with Regard to other States, *ib.*

V.

- Vacher* plots against *Genoa*, II. 27. He is beheaded, *ib.*
- Valentinian* Emperor of the East resides at *Milan*, II. 50.
- Valier* Admiral his brave Death, II. 170.
- Van Hutten Ulrich* exposes *Monks* and *Priests*, II. 96.
- Vanda* Princess of *Poland*, II. 289. She drowns herself, *ib.*
- Venetians* Manners of them, II. 173.
- Venice* Origin of this Republick, II. 144. It is governed by *Tribunes*, *ib.* A *Doge* is chosen, *ib.* The *Body of St. Mark* as it was supposed being brought there he is taken for the Patron of *Venice*, 145. The *Dominions* of this Republick are enlarged by *Pepin*, *ib.* Origin of the *Ducal Horn*, *ib.* Great Part of *Venice* is destroyed by *Fire*, 147. The *Power* of its *Doge* is limited, 148. A famous *Interview* there in which the *Pope* is said to have set his *Foot* upon the *Emperor's Neck*, 149. The *Custom* of wedding the *Adriatick* is instituted, *ib.* *Ducats* first coined at *Venice*, 151. It is overflowed by the *Adriatick*, *ib.* Its *Government* is new modelled, *ib.* The *Council of Ten* is erected, *ib.* The *Adriatick* rises much higher than usual, 153. It is afflicted with *Famine*, *Fire* and *Sword* at the same Time, 162. Manners of its *Inhabitants*, II. 173. Its *Dominions*,

I N D E X.

- ib.* Its Strength, *ib.* Its Revenue, 174. Its Government, 175. Its Interest with Regard to other States, 176.
- Varemond I.* King of *Asturia*, I. 38. He quits the Throne and reenters into the Monastick State, *ib.*
- Varemond II.* King of *Leon*, I. 46.
- Varemond III.* King of *Leon*, I. 46.
- Vernon* Admiral he takes *Perto Bello*, I. 208.
- Ugotin* is made Governor of *Genoa*, II. 20.
- Victor Amadeus I.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 8. He takes the Title of King of *Cyprus*, *ib.* He assists the Duke of *Parma*, *ib.*
- Victor Amadeus II.* Duke of *Savoy*, II. 9. He persecutes the *Paudefe*, 10. He enters into the *Grand Alliance*, *ib.* He acknowledges the Duke of *Anjou* but goes over afterwards to the Allies, *ib.* He becomes King of *Sicily*, 12. He exchanges *Sicily* for the Kingdom of *Sardinia*, *ib.* He reforms the Laws, *ib.* Prudent Conduct of his, 13. He abdicates the Crown, *ib.*
- Victor II.* Pope, II. 66.
- Villeroy* Marshal is made Prisoner, I. 90.
- Vifco* Duke of is stabb'd, I. 125.
- Vistur* King of *Sweden*, II. 198. He is burnt by his own Children, *ib.*
- Vitalo Candiano* Doge of *Venice*, II. 146. He turns Monk, *ib.*
- Vitalo Faliero* Doge of *Venice*, II. 147.
- Vitalo Michiele I.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 147. He improves the Naval Strength of the Republick, *ib.*
- Vitalo Michiel II.* Doge of *Venice*, II. 148. He makes the Patriarch of *Aquileia* Prisoner, *ib.* He is assassinated, *ib.*
- Ulad slaus I.* King of *Poland*, II. 291. He in Obedience to the Pope lays aside the Title of King, *ib.* His Reign is much disturbed, *ib.*
- Uladislaws II.* Prince of *Poland*, II. 292. He is driven from his Dominion, *ib.*
- Uladislaws III.* King of *Poland*, II. 293. He is deposed but renounces the Throne, *ib.* He attacks the *Teutonic Order*, *ib.*
- Uladislaws IV.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He annexes *Lithuania* to *Poland*, *ib.* He vanquishes the *Teutonic Order*, *ib.*
- Uladislaws V.* King of *Poland*, II. 294. He engages in a War with the *Turks*, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.*
- Uladislaws VI.* King of *Poland*, II. 300. He is raised to the Throne of *Russia*, 298. He is deposed by the *Russians*, 299. He is successful in a War with *Russia*, 301. He repulses the *Turks*, *ib.*
- Ulrica Eleonora* Queen of *Sweden*, II. 258. She concludes Peace with all the Northern Powers, *ib.* *Frederick* her Husband is raised to the Throne, 259.
- Fortigern* King of *Britain*, II. 143. He calls in the *Saxons*, *ib.*
- Uraca* her notorious Lewdness, I. 55.
- Ufcoques* Origin of them, II. 165. A Stop is put to their Piracies, 166.

W.

- Waldemar I.** King of *Denmark*, II. 179. He overcomes *Sweyn* his Rival, *ib.*
- Waldemar II.** King of *Denmark*, II. 180. He is confined in Prison, *ib.* Many Provinces revolt from him, *ib.*

I N D E X.

- Waldemar III.* King of Denmark, II. 181. He takes *Estonia*, *ib.*
 He conquers much from Sweden, *ib.*
- Waldemar* King of Sweden, II. 203. He is forced to resign the
 Crown, *ib.* He dies in Prison, *ib.*
- Walinski* is executed, II. 341.
- Wallia* King of the *Visigoths*, II. 22. He joins with the Romans
 against the *Suevi*, *ib.*
- Wallstein* General is disgraced, II. 241.
- Wamba* King of the *Visigoths*, I. 30. His Reign is much disturbed,
 31. Being poisoned he turns Monk, 32. He recovers and lives
 some Years tyred, *ib.* The Persons concerned in poisoning
 him are brought to Justice, *ib.*
- Warbeck Perkin* claims the *English* Crown, I. 169. The *Scotch*
 assist him, *ib.* He is proclaimed in *Cornwall*, *ib.* He is hanged, *ib.*
- Warwick* Earl of is routed, I. 269. He flies into France, *ib.* He
 is slain, *ib.*
- Waydewest* King of Prussia, II. 269. He offers himself a Sacrifice,
ib.
- Weimar* Duke of signalizes himself in Germany, II. 242.
- Wenceslaw* Emperor of Germany, I. 355. He is deposed, *ib.*
- Werner D'Orseln* Grand Master of the *Teutonic* Order, II. 273.
 He sides against the Pope, *ib.* He is stabbed, *ib.*
- West-Indies* the *Spaniards* not the first Discoverers thereof, I. 111.
 The Pope's Grant of them esteemed by the Natives ridiculous,
 112. Cruelty of the *Spaniards* in the *West-Indies*, *ib.* Their
 different Sorts of Inhabitants, *ib.* Their Riches are in a great
 Measure exhausted, 113. They have been of no real Benefit
 to Spain, 114. Commodities brought from thence, *ib.*
- William I.* King of England, I. 147. His Extraction, *ib.* He
 lands in England, *ib.* He overcomes Harold, *ib.* He is pro-
 claimed King, *ib.* He is disturbed by *Edgar Atheling*, 148.
 He conquers Wales, *ib.* He grows tyrannical, *ib.* He intro-
 duces the Use of the Cross-Bow, 149. His Son Robert rebels
 against him in Normandy, *ib.* He penetrates into France, *ib.*
- William II.* King of England, I. 149. Robert his Brother claims
 the Crown, *ib.* He is successful against the Scots, *ib.* His
 artful Way of raising Money, *ib.* He is shot in hunting, *ib.*
- William III.* King of Great-Britain, I. 193. He lands in Eng-
 land and is crowned, *ib.* He subdues Ireland, *ib.* He enters
 into the Grand Alliance, *ib.* A Conspiracy against him, 194.
 He acknowledges Philip V. *ib.* He dies by a Fall from his
 Horse, *ib.*
- William* Emperor of Germany, I. 352. He is slain in Battle, *ib.*
- William I.* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 126. He is excommuni-
 cated, 127. He forces the Pope to his Terms, *ib.* He is suc-
 cessful against the *Turks* and *Greeks*, *ib.* A Conspiracy against
 him, *ib.*
- William II.* King of the *Two Sicilies*, II. 127. He sides with
 the Pope, *ib.* He revenges the Death of *Alexis* Emperor of
 the East, *ib.* He assists in saving Tyre from the *Turks*, 128.

I N D E X.

- William I.* Prince of *Orange* encourages the Discontent in the *Netherlands*, I. 311. He raises an Army in *Germany*, 315. He is repulsed by the Duke *D'Ayboa*, *ib.* He is made Governor of *Holland*, *ib.* He concert's the Union of some Provinces, 318. He is stabbed, 319.
- William II.* Prince of *Orange*, 326. He attempts to surprize *Amsterdam*, 327.
- William III.* Prince of *Orange*, I. 329. He is unsuccessful against the *French*, *ib.* He is raised to the Throne of *Great-Britain*, 330.
- Witiza* King of the *Visgoths*, I. 32. He is cruel and tyrannical, *ib.*
- Woden* subdues all the Northern Kingdoms, II. 197.
- Woolsey* Cardinal is disgraced, I. 172.
- Wrangel* General commands in *Germany*, II. 245. He carries Fire and Sword into *Bavaria*, *ib.*

X.

- Xativa* is rased, I. 95. A remarkable Inscription where this Town stood, *ib.*

Y,

- York* Duke of stirs up Troubles in *England*, I. 165. He defeats the Duke of *Somerset*, *ib.* He is declared Protector, *ib.* He is slain, *ib.* His Son is proclaimed, *ib.*
- York* the House of and that of *Lancaster* are united, I. 169.

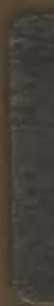
Z.

- Zachary* Pope, II. 53. He comes into the Views of *Pepin*, *ib.* He makes Peace with *Luitprand*, *ib.* He converts the King of *Lombardy*, *ib.*
- Ziemomilus* Prince of *Poland*, II. 290. His Son is miraculously cured of Blindness, *ib.*
- Ziemovitus* Prince of *Poland*, II. 290.
- Zuinglius* begins the Reformation in *Sawisserland*, I. 504. He is slain in Battle, 405. A strange Story told of him by his Followers, 406.

v

35





Digitized a







FEB 6 - 1935





Digitalized

